



TRUE MARTIAL WORLD

BOOK 08

Cocooned Cow

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

True Martial World

(真武世界)

by

Cocooned Cow

(蚕茧里的牛)

Synopsis

With the strongest experts from the 33 Skies the Human Emperor, Lin Ming, and his opponent, the Abyssal Demon King, were embroiled in a final battle. In the end, the Human Emperor destroyed the Abyssal World and killed the Abyssal Demon King. By then, a godly artifact, the mysterious purple card that had previously sealed the Abyssal Demon King, had long since disappeared into the spacetime vortex, tunneling through infinite spacetime together with one of Lin Ming's loved ones.

In the vast wilderness, where martial arts was still slowly growing in its infancy, several peerless masters tried to find their path in the world of martial arts. A young adult named Yi Yun from modern Earth unwittingly stumbles into such a world and begins his journey with a purple card of unknown origin. This is a magnificent yet unknown true martial world! This is the story of a normal young adult and his adventures!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by CKtalon @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 701: Refuge

Yi Yun very quickly finished searching through all the ruins with his perception. He did not find a dead Jiang Xiaorou, nor did he discover Jiang Xiaorou's mother.

Yi Yun knew Jiang Xiaorou too well. If Jiang Xiaorou was trapped in the ruins, Yi Yun would not even need to identify her by her looks. Just her aura was enough to quickly let him find Jiang Xiaorou.

It was inevitable that he previously could not help but imagine a scene of Jiang Xiaorou covered in blood with no signs of life. Just this thought made Yi Yun feel like choking.

But now... this terrible scene had thankfully not happened. Yi Yun felt as if a large stone was lifted off his chest a little.

"Sis Xiaorou might very well be alive!"

Yi Yun heaved a sigh of relief. As long as Jiang Xiaorou was not here, there was still hope!

"They managed to escape?"

Lin Xintong was also pleasantly surprised. She had also seen few corpses around the Lin family's residence. Matriarch Lin, whom she worried about the most, was most likely still alive.

Lin Xintong found it hard to imagine how the Lin family and the Desolate race managed to escape from the hands of the Black-armored Demon God. According to what she knew, the Desolate race and the Lin family had no means of withstanding him.

The Black-armored Demon God had used the teleportation array to directly appear in the heart of the Desolate race. What happened next was most likely a massacre.

Under such a situation, having a few people from the Desolate race and Lin family escape was pretty good. And from the looks of it, the Desolate race and Lin family managed to survive relatively well in this disaster. It was completely a miracle.

Of course, it was now not the time to consider this. They had to first find out where the Desolate race and the Lin family went.

"Xintong, let us search carefully. Something must have been left behind."

Yi Yun entered the collapse palace, while Lin Xintong flew into the Lin family's residence. They began to search for any clues left behind.

With disaster suddenly befalling them, the Lin family and the Desolate race should still leave some clues for Lin Xintong and Yi Yun even while fleeing.

No matter how chaotic the fleeing was or how tight time was, it

was not to the point of not being able to do this tiny gesture.

Very soon, Yi Yun found a map jade slip in the ruins. It was very easy to find because it was placed in Jiang Xiaorou's palatial bedroom. Although the bedroom had collapsed, some of its structure remained intact.

On the jade slip, there were remnants of Jiang Xiaorou's aura!

Yi Yun's heart tightened up as he stretched out his hands, splitting the collapsed roof above the bedroom open.

Boom!

Rocks and dust scattered everywhere as a jade slip shot out of the dust cloud, landing on Yi Yun's hand.

As he injected his consciousness into the jade slip, Yi Yun held his breath.

There was a very messy map inside the jade slip, and on the corner of the map, there was a mark.

Behind the map were the words—

"Yun'er be careful."

The words were nearly illegible, and it was probably left behind by Jiang Xiaorou in a hurry. Yi Yun's heart relaxed. With the arrival of the Demon God and in their fleeing, Jiang Xiaorou had no means of telling him anything else. Just a simple sentence contained all of Jiang Xiaorou's feelings.

Sis Xiaorou should be fine...

The hope in Yi Yun's heart grew. He knew that the map in the jade slip indicated where the Desolate race and the Lin family fled to.

The mark on the map was a teleportation array used by the Desolate race to a secret location. Previously, Jiang Xiaorou had informed Yi Yun of all the locations of the Desolate race's teleportation arrays, hence Yi Yun knew where it was.

If someone did not know where the teleportation arrays were located on a map, even if someone received the jade slip, they would not know where the Desolate race and the Lin family had escaped to. Jiang Xiaorou had done this to be safe.

"Xintong, I found it." Yi Yun transmitted his voice to Lin Xintong.

Lin Xintong left the Lin family ruins and flew to Yi Yun's side. The Lin family did not understand the Divine Wilderness much after all, so it was not easy to leave anything behind in their haste.

Lin Xintong did not understand a thing when she looked at the map. However, she did not ask what the map represented, but asked Yi Yun, "Are we leaving now?"

She was also anxious to confirm the safety of Matriarch Lin.

"Yes, let's go now. We must be careful of not being tracked."

"Being tracked? You are talking about the Black-armored Demon God? That can't be... " Lin Xintong was stunned. She found it impossible that the Black-armored Demon God would track them. According to the Black-armored Demon God's actions in the past, he would directly attack to kill the moment he discovered them.

Yi Yun nodded and said, "Just to be sure. I had always believed the Black-armored Demon God was just a killing machine, but maybe we do not fully understand him. I never expected that the Black-armored Demon God could use the Desolate race teleportation array to find the Desolate race's residence. For the Black-armored Demon God to abandon the resource-rich Tian Yuan world to the sparse Divine Wilderness puzzles me."

Yi Yun did not know what the Black-armored Demon God was plotting. Yi Yun had even believed that the Black-armored Demon God lacked any intelligence. From the moment the Black-armored Demon God appeared, he had only been engaged in wanton killing, killing everything alive that he saw.

He was completely like a killing puppet that did not have any intelligence.

Yi Yun knew that the Black-armored Demon God was injured by the Azure Yang Lord and he had been sealed for tens of millions of years. His soul had been inflicted with a great deal of trauma.

And before the Black-armored Demon God appeared, Blood Moon had seemingly conspired against the Black-armored Demon God. As for what actually happened, or if the Black-armored Demon God's soul was irreversibly damaged, Yi Yun did not know.

Now with the Black-armored Demon God in such a mental state, Yi Yun also did not know if he had intelligence or just killing instinct.

"Alright... " Lin Xintong nodded.

Being careful was never wrong. She did not know what means the Desolate race and the Lin family had used to escape the Black-armored Demon God's grasp. Even if they managed to escape once, it did not mean that they could escape a second time. She did not dare take the risk.

Due to the long-distance travel of them flying tens of millions of kilometers, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were also tired. So they rested in the ruins for an entire day.

Late at night on the second day, the sky above the Divine Wilderness was filled with stars and a crescent moon. Yi Yun and Lin Xintong flew away from the Divine Wilderness's palace ruins.

Yi Yun opened his energy vision in the air. After seeking enlightenment in the Pure Yang Sword Palace, Yi Yun's spiritual energy had improved once again. By using the Purple Crystal, he could easily see everything in a tens of kilometer radius.

Although the Black-armored Demon God was powerful, it definitely was no match for a worldly divine item like the Purple Crystal. He definitely could not escape the Purple Crystal's energy vision.

After confirming that there were no powerful life forces around them, Yi Yun led Lin Xintong and flew to a small teleportation array placed around the palace.

This teleportation array was not damaged. Using it, they traversed a distance of about 5000 kilometers. After that, Yi Yun destroyed the teleportation array. He then locked onto a particular direction and traveled at super speed ahead.

The two figures very quickly disappeared in the starry night sky...

The land that they escaped to, which Jiang Xiaorou had marked, was about a few million kilometers away from Yi Yun's present location. It was located in deep mountains and marshlands. The location was hidden and remote. Yi Yun knew that this place was originally the Desolate race's prison!

Chapter 702: Old Acquaintances

Divine Wilderness, in the remote mountains.

If one was to say that the Divine Wilderness was a place where very few humans resided, then the remote mountains deep in the Divine Wilderness was where even the Desolate race did not come often.

There were millions of mountains here, in a long winding range. There were lakes in between the mountains that resembled seas.

Other than that, the remote mountains also had vast swamps, deep valleys as well as miasma-filled lands where many powerful beasts lay dormant.

The remote mountains, that was filled with all sorts of mythical creatures, was considered a terrifying area of the Divine Wilderness. Without the Desolate race that could communicate with desolate beasts, even a human Empyreal King would have to be careful in a place like this. Once they chance upon a large scale beast horde, there was even the risk of death.

The remote mountains was a distant place for penal servitude in the Divine Wilderness. Members of the Desolate race, who had committed crimes, would be banished here.

Other than that, there were also other races detained here.

And of course that included humans.

Humans and the Desolate race were sworn enemies. After human warriors were captured by the Desolate race, they would naturally not be released back to the Human race. Most of them would be imprisoned in the remote mountains, never to leave again.

And it was such a remote and secret place that had become the temporary shelter of the Desolate race.

Due to a large number of Desolate race members settling in here, the prison cells that were there originally were removed. Many of those who had been held prisoner were also given temporary freedom.

Of course, they would not escape either. The remote mountains had arrays sealing them in. Furthermore, with desolate beasts lurking around, the chances of successfully escaping were very low.

At that moment, these prisoners, who had been "chased" out of their cells, were all gathered in front of a pasture.

This was a desolate beast farm established by the Desolate race. The pasture covered fifty thousand kilometers and they reared all sorts of desolate beasts. These desolate beasts had been domesticated by the Desolate race, and they were used by many of the Desolate race elites as mounts.

In ancient times, when the Desolate race and Human race battled, the Desolate race army would ride such beasts to lead their crusade against the Tian Yuan world. Most of the combat strength of the Desolate race army came from their desolate beast mounts. Furthermore, with some desolate beasts accompanying them in their charge, their battles had an indomitable momentum.

Many of the prisoners in the remote mountains needed to engage in labor. And one of those included caring for the desolate beasts.

At that moment, in the desolate beast farm, an azure-clothed scholarly man was nonchalantly sitting on a lone rock. He was looking at a dozen desolate beasts not far from him.

These desolate beasts were all primordial strains. They were irascible and when prisoners fed them, there was a chance of the prisoners being injured.

However, in front of the azure-clothed scholar, these primordial strains appeared rather tame. They did not growl and they only lowered their heads to eat meat obediently.

As they wolfed down large pieces of meat, the primordial strains' mouths were covered in blood.

The azure-clothed scholar only looked at all of this calmly. He had a learned bearing, and compared to these ferocious desolate beasts in front of him or the vast remote mountains around him, he appeared very out of place.

"The world is changing... "

The azure-clothed scholar sighed. Over the past few days, he had seen the Desolate race army withdraw into the remote mountains. Many of them were injured, while the most powerful members of the Desolate race all had solemn expressions on their faces. Clearly, the situation was worse than they originally expected.

A few days ago, the azure-clothed scholar had also listened in to the Desolate race members who had withdrawn to the remote mountains in which they explained the reason for their fleeing.

This was because the Tian Yuan world was currently undergoing a terrible catastrophe. A powerful Black-armored Demon God, who exceeded the strength of the Tian Yuan world and the Desolate race, was engaged in a massacre. With just him alone, he was causing a bloody storm in the Large World. Wherever the Black-armored Demon God went, life would be extinguished, with nothing spared.

Many people guessed that the Black-armored Demon God would likely grow in strength, and become so strong that he could destroy the Tian Yuan world and the Desolate race's martial civilization.

That was definitely an outcome of a calamity.

"I wonder how the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is... Have the citizens of the Divine Kingdom been slaughtered by the Black-armored Demon God... ?" The azure-clothed scholar muttered to himself and looked worried.

This azure-clothed scholar was the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord.

More than ten years ago, the Desolate race had opened a pathway from the Divine Wilderness into the Tian Yuan world. As such, the Tai Ah Divine City was destroyed by the Desolate race, and all the strongest figures in the Tai Ah Divine City, including the City Lord, were captured.

It was impossible for them to resist the Shepherd Boy. Furthermore, the Shepherd Boy had led a huge army of desolate beasts, and there was even a primordial true spirit that was no weaker than a human Empyrean King.

It was definite that the city would be overrun.

Not even the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord, even the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royalty, who were stationed along the Divine Kingdom's border had been captured in large numbers.

This included two kings and two princes, as well as a princess of the royal family who had the beauty to topple countries.

As the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royalty was captured by the Desolate race, the country was greatly eviscerated, causing the country's strength to decline greatly.

And those members of the royal family who were captured, as

well as the mighty figures of the Tai Ah Divine City, had all been imprisoned for more than a decade. They were isolated from the outside world and they did not know anything that had happened, nor know if the Desolate race had ever taken the fight to the Tian Yuan world.

Only today, when the Desolate race fled into the remote mountains did they get some information regarding the outside world.

So in the past decade or so, the outside world had undergone upheavals!

They knew that the Desolate race had a new Desolate Queen. She was young and she had obtained the recognition of the Sacred Spirit, inheriting the throne.

They also knew of a hidden organization, Blood Moon in the Tian Yuan world. They were known as the Martial Alliance on the surface, but they were actually an important chess piece that had instigated the ancient war tens of millions of years ago.

With the Blood Moon overthrown, many of the Elders from the Tian Yuan world's major factions formed a Tian Yuan Elder Consortium, so as to maintain a new order in the Tian Yuan world, as well as put up a fight against the Black-armored Demon God, but it was to no avail.

Now, the Black-armored Demon God had attacked the Divine Wilderness, but the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord did not derive

any pleasure from their misfortune. If possible, he wished that the Desolate race could destroy the Black-armored Demon God, while he carried on living out his life in the remote mountains. He did not wish for the Tian Yuan world, especially the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's inheritance, to be destroyed, or to see numerous citizens being slaughtered by the Black-armored Demon God, causing rivers of blood to flow...

Just as the azure-clothed scholar was worrying about the future of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, an old man walked up behind the azure-clothed scholar and said, "City Lord, the Desolate race has sent someone, asking us to go over."

Although they had been imprisoned for many years, those who came from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, were still accustomed to calling the azure-clothed scholar City Lord.

And the old man who called out to the City Lord was the one Elders of the Tai Ah Divine City, Cang Yan.

Back in the Tai Ah Divine City, Elder Cang Yan was a person who had an attitude of frivolous defiance. Despite his imprisonment of more than a decade, he was still living quite a leisurely and carefree life in the remote mountains. He had food and drink here, and this place had abundant primal Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. No one abused them either, so other than not being able to leave the remote mountains, it was actually nothing to Cang Yan.

"The Desolate race wants us there?" The azure-clothed scholar was surprised before he shook his head with a wry smile. He said, "For the Desolate race to flee to this area, they are probably at the

end of their ropes. They are probably thinking of combining all forces, not even leaving out us prisoners imprisoned in the remote mountains. Together, we have to fight against the Black-armored Demon God, and will probably promise our freedom. However, against the Black-armored Demon God, what role can we play?" The azure-clothed scholar said with a self-deprecating tone.

The Tian Yuan world's Elder Consortium was powerless against the Black-armored Demon God, so they had no means of even putting up a resistance.

Cang Yan still had an indifferent attitude as he laughed, saying, "City Lord, why do you keep sighing? Isn't it just a Black-armored Demon God? Even if I can't beat him, I'll also take a bite at him. Even if he is called a Demon God, he's just a single entity. Can he really destroy the entire world by himself? Now, we might not be his match, but there will be someone who will eventually be able to destroy him. I heard in recent years, a peerless genius appeared in the Tian Yuan world. At a young age, this kid was already on equal footing with many of the big figureheads in the Tian Yuan world. It sounds completely outrageous from the sound of it."

"According to what the Desolate race said, this kid not only played an important role in subverting Blood Moon, he is also the hope that to defeat the Black-armored Demon God. If I had a say, in a few hundred years, this kid might finish the Black-armored Demon God!"

The remote mountains were void of information. Cang Yan had recently heard of a terrifying youth appearing in the Tian Yuan world. He was initially very alarmed as the information sounded

unbelievable. It completely overturned everything he knew.

However, all the Desolate race who escaped to the remote mountains had said the same thing, so slowly, Cang Yan could only believe it with a pinch of salt.

"Hopefully... I wish this peerless genius was not fabricated by them..." The azure-clothed scholar said as he shook his head.

He had naturally heard of this news, but he refused to believe it.

When people faced times of hardship, they needed a hero. Even without a hero, people would create one, as heroes brought hope to people.

The azure-clothed scholar suspected that the sudden appearance of a genius was to make people have confidence. He would be what kept people going, that as long as they remained resilient, one day, this hero would defeat the Black-armored Demon God.

But was this true?

This person definitely existed to be portrayed as a hero, but to say that he had such fearsome power at such a young age, the azure-clothed scholar found it unbelievable. Many rumors were often exaggerated.

Chapter 703: Distinguished Elites Gathered

In the remote mountains, a magnificent Desolate race palace stood erect.

This palace was an enchanted companion treasure of the former Desolate Queen. She could keep and take it anywhere she wanted. As such, this palace was brought to the remote mountains. As for the other palaces that were not refined into enchanted treasures, they were left in ruins back in the original territory of the Desolate race.

At that moment, there were already large numbers of warriors gathered in the Desolate race's palace's meeting hall, numbering more than ten thousand.

Amongst these people, there were not only members of the Desolate race, but also people from the Human race.

When the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord and Cang Yan arrived at the meeting hall, they were startled when they saw the scene. They were previously held in prison deep in the remote mountains, so they had only heard some murmurs about what had happened in the external world. They only believed that the Desolate race had retreated into the remote mountains, and they did not really know that there were so many members of the Human race gathered here.

From the looks of these humans, they were most likely from major factions in the Tian Yuan world. Even the Human race had

withdrawn to the remote mountains?

"City Lord!"

"Uncle Yang!"

After the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord walked into the crowd, they were received by a few people. The two in front were dressed in biege long robes. The two of them were kings of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, and following right behind them was a girl in her twenties. She was a princess of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

As for the others, they were the Elders of the former Tai Ah Divine City, including Elder Jian Ge.

With the calamity before them, the prison rules were no longer upheld. These people were for all purposes, practically freed.

"The people involved in the meeting are all inside. Only people at the peak of the Dao Seed realm can enter."

A few of the Desolate race guards stopped a large number of warriors outside the meeting hall. As for the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord and company, their cultivation level was high enough. They were led into the grand hall by the Desolate race's guards.

As they walked through, there was a solemn atmosphere lingering in the air. The birth of the Black-armored Demon God gave all of them an apocalyptic feel.

"Former Backwater East's Tai Ah Kingdom's Yuan Opening realm warriors have arrived."

The Desolate race guard said a sentence to simply introduce the azure-clothed scholar and company's identity. Be they once a City Lord or a member of royalty, that did not matter. To be in this meeting hall, only their cultivation level and strength mattered.

The azure-clothed scholar also knew that no matter what status they held in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, that was actually negligible here.

The guards outside the meeting hall, pushed the door open with deadpan expressions.

As the azure-clothed scholar and company walked into the grand hall, they were met with a wide room. There was a round table in the middle with more than twenty people sitting around it. These people all had powerful auras and they gave off a strong repressive feeling.

Even at that moment, despite them already converging their auras, they still made anyone who glanced at them palpitate in their hearts.

Without a doubt, these people were the strongest figures of the Desolate race and the Human race. They were figures given the title of Empyreal Kings.

And what was most surprising was that amongst this group of strong warriors, there was a girl who looked like she was in her teens. She sat high above on a seat of honor and she held a bone staff that was engraved with runic patterns. She wore a red long dress and she had three cinnabar marks on the spot in the middle of her eyebrows. She really had the unsurpassed beauty of a generation.

The girl's aura was clearly weaker, but her bearing was no less weaker than any of the mighty Empyrean King figures present.

"She should be the new Desolate Queen... ?"

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom contingent secretly thought. They had recently heard news of the new Desolate Queen, that she was young in age, but she had a bloodline that was unparalleled. She had obtained the recognition of the Sacred Spirit, inheriting the position of Desolate Queen.

As for what past this girl had, they did not know.

"The new Desolate Queen sure is exceptional... "

The azure-clothed scholar exclaimed in whispers. For the girl in red to not lose out in her aura despite being amongst so many mighty figures, this alone was quite amazing.

Her strong bloodline meant that her life force was a level higher.

A powerful life meant that even if her cultivation level was not high enough, her aura would not be much weaker.

However, it was such a peerless beauty that led so many members of the Human race and Desolate race's Empyrean Kings, as well as so many of the primordial true spirits gathered in the remote mountains. Despite having so many powerful existences present, they could do nothing against the Black-armored Demon God who would come.

The atmosphere in the meeting hall was extremely heavy. People were not in a panic, but they were silent. These peerless figures were all waiting, waiting for the moment where the final judgment of their lives was determined.

After the azure-clothed scholar and company arrived, they were left standing on the outer perimeter of the meeting hall. Inside, only about twenty people sat down, all Empyrean Kings. As for the Yuan Opening realm warriors, they could only stand as there were too many people.

The azure-clothed scholar also knew that in this calamity, the role they could play was nearly negligible. The upper echelons of the Desolate race had probably mentioned in passing to release all the prisoners in the remote mountains' prisons, and they did not put it much at heart.

The hall was quickly filled with people and soon, they numbered in the hundreds. The people present were at least at the peak of the Dao Seed realm, but not every peak-Dao Seed realm warrior could enter. They had to be the peerless geniuses nurtured by large

factions.

"Everyone, today in this meeting hall, we have gathered the most elite force of both the Human and Desolate race. The purpose of gathering everyone here today needs no saying. It is to discuss the final moment, and how we are to deal with it."

The person who spoke was Jiang Xiaorou's mother, the former Desolate Queen, and also the true person who decided on matters in the Desolate race.

As she spoke, the former Desolate Queen glanced at a couple sitting beside her.

They were the highest-level decision makers in the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium, the Sanctuary Island couple. Back then, it was also them who had discovered the corpses of the upper echelons of Blood Moon who had fled.

There was another decision maker in the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium, the Sovereign of the Eventide. He was the only person in the Tian Yuan world who managed to reach the middle-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm, but he did not appear.

About half a year ago, there were droves of factions from the Tian Yuan world who escaped into the Divine Wilderness.

Like the Lin family, many large Tian Yuan world factions realized that the Divine Wilderness was much safer than the Tian

Yuan world.

To those factions seeking refuge, the Desolate race did not turn them away. The Desolate race knew that the entire world was on the brink of death. They had to put aside the differences regarding their species. They could not watch these large factions die without doing a thing, letting the Black-armored Demon God drain the Tian Yuan world of its strength.

At the same time, the Desolate race could not let these factions enter the Desolate race's headquarters. If that happened, the Desolate race headquarters would have too many experts gathered, which might lead to them being a target of attack of the Black-armored Demon God. That was equivalent to suicide.

Hence, many of the fleeing Human race factions could only hide in various enclaves in the Divine Wilderness.

Eventually, the Black-armored Demon God still came to the Divine Wilderness. The vast Divine Wilderness with its large swaths of forests and mountains was nothing in the eyes of the Black-armored Demon God. He could easily find any of the hiding spots of the refugees in the Divine Wilderness.

The massacre that continued made people feel hopeless.

Many refugee factions were either destroyed or escaped further into the depths of the Divine Wilderness...

Chapter 704: The Sacred Spirit's Protection

The Human race was not the Desolate race after all. By residing in the Divine Wilderness, they could not avoid coming into contact with all sorts of powerful Desolate beasts. The deeper they went into the Divine Wilderness, the more powerful the desolate beasts they encountered were.

Under such circumstances, even if they were not found by the Black-armored Demon God, they would still suffer heavy casualties. Hence, many human factions slowly gathered in the remote mountains, and this place was their final destination.

But now, even this final destination was facing a deadly threat.

They were faced with two choices.

Fight! Or flee!

When these choices were brought up in the hall, the mood turned into a depressing one.

Fighting meant a fight to the death. Many people lacked the courage, especially when there was no hope of victory.

As for fleeing, where else could they go?

They were already in the remote mountains of the Divine

Wilderness. Beyond the Desolate race's sphere of influence, the surroundings were filled with primordial desolate beasts. Escaping through it was not easy!

Furthermore, they were still facing the threat of being hunted by the Black-armored Demon God. The Black-armored Demon God seemed to have astral methods. Although he was one person alone, he seemed to be able to appear in any place instantly. It was almost impossible for people, who were hunted by him, to survive.

"Your Majesty. Previously in the battle between the Desolate race and the Black-armored Demon God, I was lucky to witness something. I wonder if the your race's gigantic Skyfox, which managed to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's attack using its own power by activating the Desolate race's divine bone altar, is still able to fight?"

When the Black-armored Demon God attacked the Desolate race's headquarters, no one from the entire Desolate race, Lin family, or the handful of experts from other factions in the Tian Yuan world, were any match for the Black-armored Demon God.

Against the Black-armored Demon God, they were not even comparable to eggs striking a rock.

Without a doubt, it would have been a massacre.

Without any morale to fight, they were only thinking of how to escape. And just at the moment many people were in despair, a gigantic Skyfox appeared.

Back then, when the human warriors saw the Skyfox, they were either distraught or alarmed.

The Skyfox had gigantic eyes that looked as clear as a lake, and it had a look of apathy in its eyes.

Its body seemed to cover the Heavens and Earth. It had six tails that resembled six flood dragons, and they were as red as fire. They waved in the sky like shiny divine flames that roared into the sky.

The human warriors had no idea what it was. And when the Desolate race warriors saw the Skyfox, despite the Black-armored Demon God attacking them and with their lives at stake, all of them knelt down, bowing to the Skyfox.

This Skyfox was the Sacred Spirit that protected the Desolate race.

Many years ago, not long after Jiang Xiaorou joined the Desolate race, she had obtained great power and awoken her bloodline, becoming the new Desolate Queen. It was largely attributed to Jiang Xiaorou completing the rites on the divine bone altar, receiving the recognition of the Desolate race Sacred Spirit.

Even the young team of geniuses, who were nurtured by the Desolate race and entered the Soul Tomb to battle Blood Moon, were also known as "Skyfox".

The Skyfox was a symbol and totem of the Desolate race.

However, the Skyfox usually slept in the Divine Wilderness. Ignoring human experts, even many of the former Desolate Queens had never managed to see the Skyfox in person.

For a Desolate Queen to see the Skyfox appear was her luck, or they were like Jiang Xiaorou who had obtained the Skyfox's recognition.

The Human race did not know of the Skyfox's existence. To many of the Desolate race, the Skyfox was nearly a legend.

The Skyfox was mysterious and powerful. Although it protected the Desolate race, it was not subservient to the Desolate race's orders. The Skyfox had never appeared in the multiple battles between the Desolate race and the Human race.

To the Desolate race, the Skyfox was their most primordial God.

But in fact, only the Desolate Queens knew that the Skyfox was a young fox brought to and left behind in the Tian Yuan world by the Azure Yang Lord tens of millions of years ago.

This Skyfox that protected the Desolate race came from a place in the 12 Empyrean Heavens known as Sinkhole. It had been injured in its youth and it was rescued by the Azure Yang Lord.

Later on, it had accompanied the Azure Yang Lord to this world.

In the war tens of millions of years ago, the Skyfox was still weak and it did not participate in the battle. Later on, with the Azure Yang Lord leaving, the Skyfox stayed behind in the Divine Wilderness.

Instead of saying it protected the Desolate race, it was actually protecting whatever the Azure Yang Lord left behind.

Over the tens of millions of years, it was loyal only to the Azure Yang Lord. However, the tragic thing about it was that it grew in a lower realm. It could not absorb the worldly essence of the 12 Empyrean Heavens, and it lacked the heritage of the Skyfox race. This meant that it could never reach its life's potential.

It was just like the Nine Neonate born in the lower realm which could not survive the nine Heavenly Tribulations. The Skyfox was facing a similar fate.

Over tens of millions of years, it was already very old.

Its life had been spent in the Divine Wilderness. The vast Divine Wilderness that was beyond a mortal's imagination was like a tiny pond to the Skyfox.

A koi that grew up in a pond would never transform into a divine dragon.

The Skyfox was a God Spirit of all the desolate beasts in the Divine Wilderness. It only silently watched over them. Only when

the Black-armored Demon God attacked the Desolate race did it enter the battle.

Even for members of the Desolate race, it was the first time that they witnessed the Skyfox fight.

Its power was shocking. It could use Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, and the moment it battled, it brought about tumultuous changes.

With the Skyfox's strength, not only did the Desolate race send the Black-armored Demon God retreating, they had even injured him!

This was the first time that the Black-armored Demon God was injured after its appearance!

After the Black-armored Demon God retreated, this allowed the Desolate race and the Lin family to be saved. A number of disciples were killed in the Black-armored Demon God's first wave of attack. As for the majority of their elites and experts in their clans, they had sufficient time to retreat to the remote mountains.

The reason they had retreated was because the Skyfox had received injuries...

It was too old.

In the lower realm, its powers and lifespan were restricted. Even in the past million years, it had been sleeping, and its life was

slowly coming to an end...

Even if it kept sleeping, it could not survive for long. And this appearance in the battle had greatly expended a lot of its vitality.

The Skyfox now was already extremely weak. And although the Black-armored Demon God had been repelled, the former Desolate Queen's intuition told her that he would slowly recover and return once again in a relatively short period of time.

"The death of my race's Sacred Spirit is approaching, so it probably will not be able to participate in any more battles."

The former Desolate Queen shook her head. Her words also immediately made the hearts of the human warriors, who had pinned their hopes on the Skyfox, sink.

"It can't participate in a battle just because it's dying? But at this point in time... " A human legendary figure said his sentence midway. He was implying how that with the survival of the Human and Desolate race on the brink of destruction, with numerous people sacrificing their lives in battle, he wished that the Desolate race would also sacrifice something if possible.

Upon hearing this legendary figure's words, the former Desolate Queen frowned slightly.

"My race's guardian Sacred Spirit is not a desolate beast tamed by my race. It is our race's God. In the past tens of millions of years, it

has watched over our race, and it has done enough. I have no right to let my race's God to sacrifice itself for my race. There is no need to mention this matter again!"

This legendary figure's words made the former Desolate Queen a little irritated.

Sacrifice was easier said than done. When one had to really sacrifice himself for a noble cause, very few people present could really do it.

"If that is the case, then we can only retreat... " A legendary figure said as he gave a wistful glance at Jiang Xiaorou. During the Black-armored Demon God's attack of the Desolate race's headquarters, a small detail had surprised him greatly that he had secretly kept his mind on.

Chapter 705: The Desolate Race's Decision

Are we still left with no choice but to withdraw?

A retreat was equally something that made many of the warriors present have a heavy feeling in their hearts. It was unknown how many people would survive in this act of withdrawal.

Even so, there was always hope. If they were to fight to the death and without the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit, there was probably a few who would survive.

A few Human race legendary figures exchanged looks and they came to a unanimous decision to flee. There was no other way.

They would attempt to escape into the deep depths of the Divine Wilderness as far as they could go.

An Empyreal King from the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium stood forward and said to the former Desolate Queen, "Your Majesty, my race has decided on evacuating this premises. To ensure all of our survival, we plan on splitting up to move in multiple directions. We wish the Desolate race would work with us by splitting up too. Every group would both have members of the Desolate race and the Human race. In this way, we can take care of each other on our fugitive paths."

The Empyreal King's mention of taking care of each other was actually just the Desolate race taking care of the Human race. This was because the chances of survival of the Human race escaping

through the Divine Wilderness was very low.

The desolate beasts did not care if the Human and Desolate race were on the brink of destruction. They would attack humans the moment they saw them, treating these human warriors like food.

They had to have powerful members of the Desolate race following them. They could not be too weak either, for they needed to be able to communicate with the primordial desolate beasts that filled the Divine Wilderness, so as to ensure their safety.

However, the former Desolate Queen rebuffed the human expert's suggestion. "Sorry, I am afraid that I cannot agree to your suggestion!"

The former Desolate Queen had an unquestionable tone, with no room for discussion.

When the legendary human figures heard this, they were momentarily stunned. The Desolate race did not plan on dividing their forces to go with them? Then how were they going to flee?

Even those Empyrean Kings, who could have a relatively easy time entering and exiting the Divine Wilderness, did not want to waste their strength fighting primordial true spirits. Furthermore, Yuan Opening realm warriors lacked the ability of self-preservation. There was no need for the Black-armored Demon God to kill them, for a large number of them would likely end up in the bellies of the primordial desolate beasts in the Divine

Wilderness!

"Your Majesty, what do you mean by this?" A legendary figure from the Human race frowned. "Don't you agree that we should split up while escaping, and instead we are to go as one? Wouldn't it be a clean sweep if the Black-armored Demon God catches up to us!?"

"You misunderstood what I meant." The former Desolate Queen shook her head. "I do not plan on my people to escape with you."

Oh!?

The former Desolate Queen's words made many of the legendary figures of the Human race have an ugly expression.

"Your Majesty, at this point in time, can't you let go of the differences of race? Are you bound on seeing us Humans die?"

"Is Your Majesty planning on abandoning the principles of righteousness so as to see all of us die in the Divine Wilderness?"

One legendary figure after another turned anxious. Some of the more grumpy ones were already furious. The Desolate race was abandoning them? Wasn't this adding insult to injury!?

The former Desolate Queen did not respond. At that moment, an elder from the Desolate race stood forward and said calmly, "You have all misunderstood us. Our race is not abandoning the Human

race, we have already come to a unanimous decision to fight the Black-armored Demon God. If you want to leave, you are free to leave!"

What!?

The elder's words stunned many of the human warriors.

Fight the Black-armored Demon God?

The Desolate race's Sacred Spirit was already injured, so what else did the Desolate race have to fight the Black-armored Demon God. Wasn't this equivalent to suicide?

Furthermore, the crux of the issue was that the death of the Desolate race would implicate them. How were they to flee in that case?

A young genius from the Human race stood up anxiously and said, "It's alright if you are determined to fight to the death. However, by doing so, aren't you pulling us to join you in death? This is a form of abduction. You are forcefully binding us to your war chariots, forcing us to fight for you. Your Desolate race may want to uphold the glory of your race, but we don't have the obligation to!"

As he was anxious, the genius spoke without mincing any of his words. He was still young and he did not want to die here.

The moment he said those words, it immediately made many of the warriors from the Desolate race find it jarring.

Who did this person think he was?

"Shut up!" At that moment, the Sanctuary Island's Island Lord spoke. This shout contained the will of an Empyrean King. The young junior, who spoke mindlessly, immediately turned pale from the shout. With a grunt, he took several steps back and immediately lacked the courage to speak.

He did not dare to rebut the Sanctuary Island Lord's reprimand.

"This lad is young and foolish and he has been rude to Your Majesty. Please forgive him!" The Sanctuary Island Lord said humbly and courteously. Even the Desolate race felt deep respect for the Sanctuary Island couple.

He was strong and modest. He was easily well-liked.

"The Desolate race's determination to fight is naturally your race's freedom. We do not have the right to interfere. Furthermore, your race has no obligation to protect my race. Escorting my race to escape is a kind act, and not escorting is simply to be expected. After all, our race's escape into the Divine Wilderness was our race's choice. It was not an invitation to your race."

"But... " When the Sanctuary Island Lord said this, he switched

gears and carried on, "I have something that I do not understand. What is the reason for the Desolate race to want to fight the Black-armored Demon God to the death?"

When the Sanctuary Island Lord asked this, the former Desolate Queen turned silent.

Sitting beside the former Desolate Queen, Jiang Xiaorou had a complicated look. She looked at her mother, wanting to speak but she decided against it.

In fact, she never knew about her mother's decision prior to this meeting. Only when her mother said that they were to fight to the death did she know. Her heart had skipped a beat and guessed something bad.

This guess made her feel repressed, nearly suffocating.

At that moment, she felt that she had to say something so as to make things clear.

However, just before Jiang Xiaorou opened her mouth, a legendary figure of the Human race spoke up first. He was the one who had previously witnessed the Black-armored Demon God's invasion of the Desolate race's headquarters.

At the moment he was shocked by the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit's power, he was puzzled about a particular detail in the battle. That was at the moment the Black-armored Demon God

appeared, breaking through the Desolate race palace's defensive array, he had reached out his hand, forming a gigantic black hand, grabbing at Jiang Xiaorou!

Jiang Xiaorou had no way to resist him and she was immediately lifted into the air!

If he wished, a simple squeeze would have killed Jiang Xiaorou. However, the Black-armored Demon God, who had always been bloodthirsty, did not do so. Instead, he seemed to want to take Jiang Xiaorou away.

And at that moment, the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit appeared and engaged the Black-armored Demon God in combat!

The Sacred Spirit's attack saved Jiang Xiaorou. During the battle between these two terrifying existences, the shockwaves from the battle were extremely terrifying. The legendary figure believed that this would spell certain death for Jiang Xiaorou who was in the middle of these two existence's battle. However, he never expected Jiang Xiaorou to miraculously survive.

For this to happen, it only meant that these two existences had deliberately avoided harming Jiang Xiaorou.

The Desolate race's Sacred Spirit was extremely powerful, and it was able to call on the worldly Power of Desolates, allowing it to send the Black-armored Demon God in retreat.

The Black-armored Demon God was injured. Just as he was about to flee, he reached out his hand once again, hoping to abduct Jiang Xiaorou before he escaped.

To be distracted during a battle and forcefully abduct Jiang Xiaorou was an extremely risky maneuver. It was even more so when facing the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit.

Hence, the Black-armored Demon God revealed a flaw in his movement, allowing the Skyfox Sacred Spirit to injure him once again. As such, he had no choice but to retreat in defeat.

However, this scene was imprinted into this legendary figure's mind.

The Black-armored Demon God was clearly seeking Jiang Xiaorou!

Hence, during this meeting between the Human and Desolate race that debated on the topic of whether they should flee or fight, this legendary figure stepped forward and asked, "Your Majesty, I have something that I want to know. The reason why the Desolate race is planning to fight to the death, has it got to do with the new Desolate Queen? If I didn't guess wrong, the Black-armored Demon God seemingly wanted to capture the new Desolate Queen? And it is likely because of this reason that the Desolate race cannot split up and escape, and have to fight the Black-armored Demon God to the death. If not, the moment you split up, your race's warriors would have no chance of withstanding the Black-armored Demon God!"

When the legendary human figure said this, it started many of the people present.

The Black-armored Demon God was planning on abducting Jiang Xiaorou? As such, the Desolate race had to fight to the death? Was this true?

Everyone's eyes suddenly landed on Jiang Xiaorou.

Jiang Xiaorou's body slightly turned stiff. She gently lowered her bone staff, with her face turning slightly pale...

Chapter 706: The Curse Of A Bloodline

Although others did not know, as the person in question, Jiang Xiaorou knew it very clearly. Just before the Black-armored Demon God arrived at the Desolate race headquarters, she had felt an invisible energy locking on to her.

This energy suddenly grew more intense the moment the Black-armored Demon God appeared.

It was an energy that was extremely difficult to describe. It was as if there was a superior but cold life staring at her from a different, invisible space-time dimension.

And following that, the Black-armored Demon God made his move against Jiang Xiaorou. With his irresistible powers, he had captured Jiang Xiaorou. At the moment she was caught by his energy, Jiang Xiaorou felt like her life was no longer hers. If it wasn't for the Sacred Spirit's appearance, she would never have been able to come back alive.

Hence, Jiang Xiaorou was sure that the Black-armored Demon God was targeting her.

This was also most likely the reason for the Black-armored Demon God to appear in the Divine Wilderness. After all, the Divine Wilderness was sparse in population. Even if there were quite a few refugees gathered here, in terms of overall warrior density, it was inferior to the Tian Yuan world. The Black-armored Demon God could achieve a higher efficiency in killing people in

the Tian Yuan world.

However, why did the Black-armored Demon God want to catch her? Jiang Xiaorou could not figure it out.

At that moment, Jiang Xiaorou was already the focus of the entire meeting hall.

Jiang Xiaorou was not afraid of death, but she did not wish to implicate her race or her mother because of herself.

Jiang Xiaorou exhaled before standing up.

Her originally pale face had returned to normal. She said, "Regarding the Black-armored Demon God and myself, I will give everyone an answer."

With Jiang Xiaorou saying that sentence, everyone else in the meeting hall looked at Jiang Xiaorou with odd expressions.

Jiang Xiaorou did not deny it, which was enough to prove that the likelihood of this matter was true.

They did not know why the Black-armored Demon God wanted Jiang Xiaorou, but without a doubt, it was due to Jiang Xiaorou's existence that they were unable to withdraw.

Were all these people going to perish together just because of this

one person?

They could ignore it if the entire Desolate race perished, but to let the Human race perish along with them?

Many people had such thoughts in mind, but they did not say it out aloud.

"Your Majesty, is this matter true?" A Human race elder asked.

The former Desolate Queen's gaze was cold. She did not answer the elder's question but instead retorted, "Why? If it's true, do you plan on letting me send my only child to the Black-armored Demon God?"

The former Desolate Queen's words were aggressive, making the elder displeased, but he momentarily choked up. He gritted his teeth for a moment, before saying with an ugly expression, "It seems that your esteemed race has made the decision. For your daughter-mother duo, for your survival, you plan on ignoring all principles and send this world's elite forces to their death? We can forget our Human race, as you have no obligations to care about us, but what about your Desolate race? As Desolate Queen, are you planning on letting your race perish along with your daughter?"

The elder's words were extremely venomous. When he said those words, the atmosphere in the meeting hall turned tense.

Many warriors of the Desolate race were already standing up. As

for the human warriors, they had subconsciously pressed down on their interspatial rings.

Actually what the human elder said was on many humans' minds.

Wasn't it ridiculous to sacrifice an entire race just for a girl!?

Shepherd Boy stood silently in front of Jiang Xiaorou. His gaze was locked onto the human elder who had just spoken. His eyes were filled with murderous intent.

"Uncle Qing!" Jiang Xiaorou held onto Shepherd Boy.

There were many Human race experts present. Although it was impossible for them to fight, by causing a racial rift, it would be extremely disadvantageous to the future resistance against the Black-armored Demon God. This was something Jiang Xiaorou did not wish to see.

"Sorry, I spoke without thinking it through, but good advice is usually jarring to the ears. What I said was true. If your Highness were to let your entire race perish because of a girl, I don't think that is justifiable!"

After all, this was the Desolate race's territory, so the human elder did not dare insist too firmly. However, despite him apologizing, he did not mean to take back his words.

The former Desolate Queen pressed her hand on the table. A slight chill was revealed from her beautiful face.

She had yet to make the necessary arrangements on this matter, but the matter had already been pointed out by a legendary figure from the Human race at the meeting. She was, without a doubt, placed in an extremely disadvantageous position.

Jiang Xiaorou remained silent. At that moment, what else could she say?

She could sense that every human present gave her a gaze that resembled a needle.

When their lives were at stake, people found it difficult to accept perishing en masse in order to save a young girl's life.

"You said that I'm ignoring the principles of caring for my race?" The former Desolate Queen sneered while standing up. "I might as well tell all of you that the Black-armored Demon God is indeed eyeing Xiaorou, and I have already guessed the reason."

When Jiang Xiaorou was locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God, Jiang Xiaorou's mother had already thought of the reason. The world was so large, filled with numerous geniuses. Why would the Black-armored Demon God eye Jiang Xiaorou?

The only possibility was that it had to do with Jiang Xiaorou's father.

Jiang Xiaorou's father, who came from the 12 Empyrean Heavens, was not an ordinary mortal. The child he left behind might have something that the Black-armored Demon God needed!

However, the former Desolate Queen would not explain these things. If Jiang Xiaorou's father was mentioned, then there would be even more people who would plot against Jiang Xiaorou.

"Have you not thought that capturing Xiaorou would necessarily be helpful for the Black-armored Demon God? Not long after, the Black-armored Demon God will return once again, and when that happens, the Black-armored Demon God would be even more powerful than now! Handing my daughter over to him will lead to disastrous consequences!"

The former Desolate Queen may love Jiang Xiaorou, but she was the Desolate Queen after all. She could not simply sacrifice her Desolate race just for Jiang Xiaorou. She had her own reasons.

"What your Highness says makes sense, but... forgive me if I'm being straight. Even if what your Highness suggests is true, we actually also have other means of avoiding this scenario... "

A legendary human figure said and looked with a strange gaze at Jiang Xiaorou.

This gaze came with a hint of malice and pity. He did not finish his sentence, but the meaning from his words was very clear.

His words implied destroying Jiang Xiaorou completely!

If the Black-armored Demon God would become stronger after obtaining Jiang Xiaorou, then wouldn't destroying Jiang Xiaorou prevent that possibility?

On the brink of life and death, to carry on surviving, killing a talented young girl to prevent a inferred possibility was not a difficult choice.

After all, the entire Tian Yuan world already had so many ruined family clans, with numerous people dead. What was one more?

Of course, the decision lay in the hands of the Desolate race.

Many of the Human race experts looked at Jiang Xiaorou indifferently. They were waiting for the former Desolate Queen's decision.

They knew that this was a difficult decision, but with the survival of their race in question, it would force the former Desolate Queen to make a decision.

Pressure!

Even though she had encountered all sorts of situations and she had been ruling over the Desolate race for many years, the former

Desolate Queen felt immense pressure at the moment.

She could ignore the Human race, but for the people of her Desolate race...

"Your Majesty, I, Qing Kui, am willing to follow your Highness to die in battle!"

The Shepherd Boy was the first to speak with a resolute voice. No one doubted that he would die for the Desolate race and Jiang Xiaorou without any hesitation.

However... Qing Kui was not everyone in the Desolate race.

Even if all of them did the same, the former Desolate Queen would not let the entirety of her people perish for Xiaorou.

They had the right to live on. They were not born for the royal family, nor were they meant to die for the royal family.

"Your Majesty, why don't we end it here today... "

At that moment, the Sanctuary Island couple stood up. "We cannot interfere in your esteemed race's internal matters. However, since your esteemed race's Sacred Spirit is unable to fight, then even if those remaining were to fight to the death, the chances of victory are slim. Hence, I wish your esteemed race will weigh the consequences. Of course, I wish that your esteemed race will have a better choice."

The Sanctuary couple looked at Jiang Xiaorou with complicated expressions. They stopped speaking and finally only shook their heads.

They felt very sorry for this beautiful, young girl.

Her bloodline had given her powerful life and strength, but it was a curse that brought her many disasters. As for Jiang Xiaorou being left in the Cloud Wilderness, and how she was nearly refined into a pill in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, they had all heard of these matters.

And now, she was eyed by the most terrifying Black-armored Demon God, who wanted to capture her. Her fate was one of death.

No matter how the Desolate race chose, the final outcome might be impossible to change.

If Jiang Xiaorou was destroyed, then it naturally meant her death. However, even if they were to fight it to the death, Jiang Xiaorou's outcome would probably be her being abducted by the Black-armored Demon God.

It was likely that shortly after, the Tian Yuan world would be faced with the destruction of their race, and the news of the young Desolate Queen dying.

"My race needs to think of what to do as well. We shall bid you

farewell first." The Sanctuary Island couple said.

They spoke tactfully, but from the human elder from before as well as the other human experts leaving with ashen expressions, it was clear that these people did not wish to fight alongside the Desolate race.

If the Desolate race insisted on fighting to the death, they would rather leave at the risk of dying in the bellies of desolate beasts.

Chapter 707: Warriors Gather

At dawn, just as the first ray of sunshine shot out from the east, the remote mountains were still shrouded in endless morning fog. The fog was thick and dense, and it covered the mountains, lakes and trees, blurring everything. The fog lingered without dispersing, causing the remote mountain's weather to become especially cold.

Shrouded in the morning fog, inside a modest-sized room in the Desolate race's palace.

Jiang Xiaorou was sitting in front of a bronze mirror. She was dressed in a thick red long robe, and she was slowly combing her hair.

The mirror reflected her beautiful face, and the bit of cinnabar in the middle of her eyebrows was beautiful, but it brought with it a tinge of sadness.

As Jiang Xiaorou looked at the mirror, her eyes were still the replaying scenes inside the meeting hall yesterday. The Human race's geniuses looked at her with hatred, while the Sanctuary Island couple gave her a look of pity...

Jiang Xiaorou did not mind too much about the Human race.

But for the Desolate race, she couldn't not mind.

To protect her, it required the entire Desolate race to fight the Black-armored Demon God to the death. In the words of the Human race, that was equivalent to severing heritage and the flames of life.

The Black-armored Demon God seemed to be able to extract the powers of the strong by killing them, and as a result, strengthen himself. If that was the case, the more experts killed by him, the more terrible the situation would become.

Jiang Xiaorou sat in the empty room with a deep sense of loneliness.

She was like a person cursed by the Heavens.

At that moment, the door was pushed open, as Jiang Xiaorou's mother walked in.

She did not say a word, and neither did Jiang Xiaorou turn back.

She quietly took the comb in Jiang Xiaorou's hand, and while holding a tiny lock of Jiang Xiaorou's hair, she began combing her hair bit by bit.

Her motions were very slow and the comb silently glided down her smooth, black hair. As the strands of hair split into tracks after tracks, they resembled stripes of black silk.

"Mother... I want to go to the divine bone altar." Jiang Xiaorou,

who had her back towards her mother, suddenly spoke. Her voice was soft, but it caused the former Desolate Queen's hands to tremble. She let go of the comb which glided down Jiang Xiaorou's smooth hair like flowing water till it dropped to the floor.

‘Pa’, the walnut wood comb dropped to the floor with a very soft sound, but it sounded very clear in this quiet room.

The Desolate race's divine bone altar was a place used by the Desolate race for worshiping and sacrifice.

For worshiping, Jiang Xiaorou had done it once, and from that time, she was recognized by the Sacred Spirit.

As for sacrifice... that was to let the sacrificed person give all their blood and life, as well as their soul for sacrifice. With that, the outcome could be imagined.

Jiang Xiaorou's wish to go to the divine bone altar was naturally not for worship.

She had been eyed by the Black-armored Demon God, and she had nowhere to go. Even if she committed suicide, her corpse might still be found by the Black-armored Demon God. She did not know if this might lead to terrible consequences.

Since she was dying, she might as well die more thoroughly. By sacrificing all her soul, blood and life, the Black-armored Demon God would receive nothing.

Mother, Shepherd Boy, the citizens of the Desolate race and Yun'er... She did not want to implicate them which could result in their deaths.

If the Desolate race chose to flee, they could still leave behind some flames of life. And if they chose to fight to the death and get wiped out, then she would be a sinner.

Behind Jiang Xiaorou, the beautiful former Desolate Queen, who was dressed in a long robe, pressed down on Jiang Xiaorou's hair. After a moment of silence, she articulated each word clearly, "Mother will not let you die."

She could not watch her daughter being made a blood sacrifice. She had already abandoned the original territory of the palace grounds. Did they have to once again abandon the remote mountains and escape deeper into the Divine Wilderness?

Getting every member of the Desolate race to hide throughout the deep mountains, leaving behind flames of life? However, could these 'flames of life' truly be reignited in the future?

"The Sacred Spirit can still battle one more time... "

What the former Desolate Queen said was what the Sacred Spirit had said the previous night itself. However, the former Desolate Queen knew that this battle would probably be the battle that would consume all of the Sacred Spirit's life force.

"However... " Jiang Xiaorou still wanted to say something, but the former Desolate Queen only pressed down on Jiang Xiaorou's shoulder.

"Xiaorou, even if you die, the outcome will not change. Indeed, it will result in some of those people dragging out an ignoble existence, but what we want is not to just merely live on!"

The former Desolate Queen said as she held on to Jiang Xiaorou's hands, and walked out the palace.

Today, there was a meeting in the meeting hall. The Human race was waiting for the Desolate race's decision.

The decision was to fight or to take flight.

However, when Jiang Xiaorou reached the meeting hall, she was stunned.

At that moment, on the square, there were large numbers of Desolate race warriors gathered on it.

These Desolate race warriors had experienced a great escape not long ago, and many of them were still injured.

However, they still came here, wearing battle armor with their weapons in hand. They surrounded the entire meeting hall.

They were all battle-hardened warriors after years of training in the Divine Wilderness. Even if many of them did not possess a high cultivation level, their bodies' embodied a killing aura. The glory of their race was already rooted deep in their bones, giving rise to a sure-win belief.

The group of Desolate race warriors numbered only in the thousands, but the stance of these people caused the surrounding morning fog that spanned tens of kilometers to disperse.

With the morning fog dispersed, Jiang Xiaorou could see that far in the deep mountains, there were shrouded black shadows. They were primordial true spirits lurking in the deep mountains.

They let out low growls which sounded like resounding thunder, causing one's blood to rush.

These primordial true spirit seemed to have sensed that a war was coming. They were gathered here, waiting to face the upcoming final battle.

"All of you... " Jiang Xiaorou could not calm her heart. She noticed that even the Skyfox team members were gathered on the square.

And leading them was Shepherd Boy.

Last night, Shepherd Boy had mobilized the Desolate race's army.

With his prestige amongst the Desolate race, he could easily rally multitudes with one call.

"Your Majesty, the Human emissaries are waiting in the hall for you." Shepherd Boy said lightly.

At that moment, he did not say words like fighting to the death, but instead, he used his actions to express everything.

Jiang Xiaorou was momentarily dazed. She looked deeply at all the warriors on the square, and she nodded her head forcefully.

...

At that moment in the meeting hall, the legendary figures of the Human race had ugly expressions.

Although the gathering of the Desolate race's army seemed like they were prepared to face the Black-armored Demon God, they had also surrounded the meeting hall.

Other than that, there were many primordial true spirits far in the distance, staring fiercely over.

Although they were not weak, with the Sanctuary Island couple being able to produce extremely terrifying combat power when they joined hands, this was the Desolate race's territory after all. Their hearts were still beating like drums. No one knew if the Desolate race would suddenly turn rash and do something without

considering the consequences.

"The Desolate race is here." The Sanctuary Island's Island Lord said lightly.

He was looking far into the distance through a window. No one knew what he was thinking.

What they had to face, eventually had to be faced.

...

At the moment the former Desolate Queen and Jiang Xiaorou stepped into the meeting room, the former Desolate Queen felt Jiang Xiaorou's body freeze up, with her face also turning extremely pale.

"Oh? Xiaorou?"

The former Desolate Queen's heart tightened.

Jiang Xiaorou took a deep breath and subconsciously held her chest. At just that instant, she had felt a powerful spiritual force lock on to her.

Is it the Black-armored Demon God... ?

Jiang Xiaorou turned her head and looked far into distance, up at the sky and murmured, "He saw me... "

Chapter 708: Meeting Old Acquaintances

The remote mountains was known to have millions of mountains. Not only were there many mountain peaks, they were all extremely tall. A mountain peak might span tens of kilometers in radius, and it would not be surprising for it to be more than a hundred thousand feet tall.

This caused the remote mountains to be deep and vast. Even with a map, trying to find a hidden location masked by arrays was not easy.

At that moment, on a snowcapped mountain, sunlight was illuminating an area of perpetual ice and snow, reflecting silvery beams of light.

The temperature here was so chilly that saying water droplets would immediately freeze was not enough. However, to a couple, who were wearing thin clothes, they were unfazed and they did not appear cold at all.

The male looked like he was a youth who was 16 or 17 years old. He was dressed in black and he was handsome, while the girl was dressed in clothes whiter than snow. Her clothes fluttered in the cold wind, making her look like a snow lotus in full bloom.

This couple were Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, who had flown for two full days before arriving in the remote mountains.

"It's here?"

Lin Xintong stood on a tall mountain overlooking the remote mountains. All she saw was endless mountains stretching past the horizon. In the foggy mist, everything far in the distance looked as small as pebbles.

"It's here, but it's also not easy to find their exact location."

Yi Yun had obtained a rough map from Jiang Xiaorou of this area previously. After all, Jiang Xiaorou would not have expected Yi Yun to have to search for them in the remote mountains on his return, so why would she have specially given Yi Yun a detailed map of the remote mountains?

Lin Xintong frowned slightly. "The Desolate race should also have set up a location-hiding array. It wouldn't be easy for us to find them!"

"It's alright. That location-hiding array is useless against me."

As Yi Yun said this, he flew up from the snow mountain. As he flew, he opened the Purple Crystal's energy vision.

With the Desolate race's ability to set up arrays, the location-hiding array they set up naturally could not hide from the Purple Crystal.

And in the Pure Yang Sword Palace, Yi Yun had received a breakthrough in his insights towards Heavenly Dao. His spiritual

energy had also improved, so with the Purple Crystal's energy vision, Yi Yun could search through vast regions in just a few seconds.

He had a general idea of where the Desolate race's camp was, so it was just a matter of time before he found it.

As such, Yi Yun searched for two hours, and suddenly he froze and let out a surprised "Eh" sound.

"Oh? What?" Lin Xintong had outstanding perception, but despite her trying her best to search, it was fruitless.

Yi Yun paused for a moment before murmuring, "It's true that... you can meet each other anywhere in the world. I never expected, I never expected..."

Yi Yun's reaction made Lin Xintong baffled. She asked, "Who did you see?"

Yi Yun remained silent for a while, but his facial expression turned from amazement to nostalgia. He then faintly said, "I saw a few old acquaintances. They were my beloved mentors more than a decade ago. That period of time sure was memorable..."

The time back in the Tai Ah Divine City was considered an extremely blissful period for Yi Yun.

In the city, he was improving by the day. He had competitive

rivals as well as beloved mentors, who were both master and friend. He also had friends and partners who fought alongside him.

Yi Yun of the past had simple thoughts. It consisted only of constantly becoming stronger. Once he became powerful enough, he could be made king or take on high positions. Not only would he be able to let his sister lead a good life, it would also ensure that his sister and himself would have a sufficient status in life.

Although Yi Yun had the ambition to rise to the peak of martial arts when he was fifteen or sixteen, it was mostly just because he wanted to control his destiny and lead a better life.

From the Cloud Wilderness, Yi Yun had endured being poor, difficulties and hunger. Seeing how his sister, Jiang Xiaorou skimped on her own food and clothing for him and experiencing intense humiliation, he had a strong desire to change his fate.

And the Tai Ah Divine City gave Yi Yun everything he wanted. That was really a period in which he received happiness after experiencing suffering.

All sufferings have their reward, it was the fortunes in life.

With his own strength, Yi Yun had obtained everything. He slowly became the shining star of the Tai Ah Divine City, but those high-spirited days did not last long. The sudden catastrophe caused Yi Yun to be embroiled in the swirling arms of a world's disaster.

From then on, Yi Yun separated from Jiang Xiaorou, and he also bade farewell to his simple and peaceful days.

He constantly battled and trained. The most primordial bliss that was originally conceived in his heart slowly disappeared. Replacing it was the wish to defy and conquer fate.

Such a change might not seem beautiful, but to Yi Yun, this was also an important step in his life.

It was only a tiny portion because he still had a long life left.

"Beloved mentors?" Lin Xintong was surprised.

"Let's go! We should seek them, and it's very likely that they know where the exact location of the Desolate race is!"

...

In the remote mountains, in an Ice River Valley.

This valley was surrounded by mountains hundreds of thousands of feet tall. The mountains' melted ice and snow gathered here, forming a large icy river, giving it its name.

At that moment, beside the icy river, there was an azure-clothed scholar dressed in battle armor, walking upstream along the river.

Beside him, there was an elder with a sword on his back and a comely maiden.

These two people were Elder Jian Ge and Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal princess, Yang Qingyun.

Last night, they, as people from the Tai Ah Divine City, were assigned to take on the task of being first-hand alerters.

They were summoned to the army, so they naturally had a mission to fulfill. With the Black-armored Demon God coming at any moment, guard patrol was indispensable.

They knew that once war broke out, they as precautionary warriors might die in the remote mountains.

Although they would die in battle in a different race's army, the enemy they faced was an enemy of the entire world, so it was also their Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's enemy.

Hence, they did not resist the duties or the upcoming war.

However, with their lives at risk, not everyone could be like the azure-clothed scholar, remaining calm and composed. For example, Yang Qingyun found it difficult to handle her emotions.

"I wonder how Father and Mother are... " Yang Qingyun sighed slightly, worried over her own country.

However, they were now hidden in the deepest depths of the Divine Wilderness and they had long lost contact with the Tian Yuan world. Even the upper echelons of the Desolate race did not know the situation with the Tian Yuan world, let alone the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom in the Backwater East.

"Haha, your Highness, you don't have to worry. Our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, when compared to the large family clans of the Tian Yuan world, does not have many experts. Unless we were really unlucky, the Black-armored Demon God would completely ignore the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom."

At that moment, a muffled voice said.

Yang Qingyun looked up and saw an old man in a beige-colored shirt. He was chewing on some roasted fish from an unknown source, and he walked over from upstream to meet up with them.

The roasted fish in his hands was all black, but he still ate merrily.

This elder in black was Elder Cang Yan. He too was assigned to the task of being an alerter.

However, to Yuan Opening realm warriors, for a task of being vigilant, they did not need to put too much effort to patrol around their guard posts.

Using Cang Yan's words, if the Black-armored Demon God really came, even if they were fully vigilant while ready to battle, or if they were shitting in the toilet, it would not change the result of them being killed. Of course, the pretext was that the Black-armored Demon God would be interested in killing them.

Hence, their so-called role of being "alerts" was actually just waiting to be killed. Once they were killed, the Desolate race would receive news of it, allowing them to start precautionary measures.

And since that was the case, they might as well be more relaxed. They should eat and drink as they wished. Sighing or lamenting would not change the fact that the Black-armored Demon God would arrive. The outcome would be the same being happy and worry-free, so since their days were numbered, why not be more merry?

Cang Yan was waving his hand at the azure-clothed scholar and Elder Jian Ge, when he suddenly felt something. He looked sideways and saw a black-dressed youth and white-dressed girl far in the sky. They were flying quickly...

In the beginning, Cang Yan only thought of them as two young elites from the Tian Yuan world, but when he was able to discern their looks, especially that young man's looks, he was completely stunned. His mouth opened wider and wider. Even the fish he was chewing halfway fell out, staining his clothes black, without him realizing it.

This kid... Could there be a mistake!?

Chapter 709: Unable To See Through

Cang Yan never expected to meet Yi Yun under such circumstances. In fact, Cang Yan's memory of Yi Yun was only up to the moment that Yi Yun left the Tai Ah Divine City.

After that, Tai Ah Divine City was overrun by Shepherd Boy in a day. Cang Yan and the rest of the Tai Ah Divine City Elders were captured. From then on, they lost their source of news. As for the feud Yi Yun had with Shentu Nantian, Cang Yan did not know a thing.

In the Tai Ah Divine City Elders' impressions, those geniuses who left the Tai Ah Divine City had a bleak future. The Desolate race swept through the Backwater East, and as geniuses of the Human race, they had yet to mature fully. They were like tiny seedlings that had to face a terrifying storm. The chance of them being destroyed was very high.

And now, deep in the Divine Wilderness, in the remote mountains, Yi Yun rode the winds as he approached them. He was dressed in tidy clothes and he had a beauty accompanying him. He appeared to be in pretty good shape.

"Kid, you are here as well!"

To meet again in a foreign land, and to see his most outstanding former student, Cang Yan was delighted. He strode forward to welcome him and just as Yi Yun landed, Cang Yan gave him a heavy pat on his shoulder.

"Hahaha! I knew that this kid wouldn't die that easily. How are you? From your looks, you went to the Tian Yuan world? You came to the remote mountains together with a Tian Yuan world faction?"

The remote mountains were too deep in the Divine Wilderness. In Cang Yan's impression, it was impossible even for Tai Ah Divine City's Elders to traverse the Divine Wilderness into the remote mountains, let alone the members of the younger generation.

Then, the most likely reason was Yi Yun had followed a particular large faction from the Tian Yuan world, and he was led here by the Desolate race.

More than ten years ago, at the moment the Desolate race invaded the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, with Yi Yun's cultivation level, it was an extremely difficult task for him to go from the Backwater East to the Tian Yuan world. Cang Yan never expected that Yi Yun managed to do it, and from how he looked, he should have been thought highly of by a large faction in the Tian Yuan world. He most likely led a pretty good life, or he would not be brought to the Divine Wilderness for refuge.

To be born in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and to cause a stir in the Tian Yuan world was definitely not easy. After all, the Tian Yuan world's family clans had very high standards.

Behind Cang Yan, Yang Qingyun also looked at Yi Yun.

She was also feeling quite surprised. As a princess of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, she had naturally heard of this peerless genius, Yi Yun.

"So he is Yi Yun. Back then, he was the number one person of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. He was even stronger than Third Brother."

Yang Qingyun's Third Brother was one of the cream of the crop amongst the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal family. However, compared to Yi Yun, he was much more inferior.

Yang Qingyun was curious as to what Yi Yun's strength was now. In her imagination, Yi Yun was already so powerful back in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Now, having gone to the Tian Yuan world, and going through training in the Tian Yuan world, his strength must have improved greatly. He might even be quite a famous genius amongst the Tian Yuan world's younger generation. If that was the case, Yi Yun would have won a lot of face for their Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

"It's been more than ten years. Yi Yun, your looks haven't changed a bit... "

Reuniting with Yi Yun, the azure-clothed scholar could only sigh. Their separation had been more than ten years, but Yi Yun had only grown a little taller. He still looked like when he was still a teenager. The scenes of their separation was still vivid in their eyes, but now, the situation was completely different.

The Tai Ah Divine City already ceased to exist. Furthermore, with the sudden appearance of the Black-armored Demon God, the entire Human race was facing a great disaster.

"Yi Yun greets City Lord, and greets Senior Jian Ge."

Yi Yun bowed to the azure-clothed scholar and Elder Jian Ge. Beside Yi Yun, Lin Xintong also followed suit and bowed a junior's greeting.

Actually, with Lin Xintong's status, she was completely on a different level to the people from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. There was no need for her to bow.

However, these people were Yi Yun's seniors, and as she was Yi Yun's Dao partner, and as husband and wife, she naturally needed to bow when Yi Yun bowed.

The azure-clothed scholar and Elder Jian Ge noticed Lin Xintong.

Lin Xintong's eyes were like autumn water, and her skin was ice-like jade. She had a face that was as beautiful as the moon, and she did not seem to belong to this world. Much stranger was that such a peerless woman did not seem to be contaminated by the world, yet she gave off a calm aura, as if she was one with nature.

Such a girl was truly amazing.

Behind the azure-clothed scholar, Yang Qingyun could not help

but take another glance at Lin Xintong. She roughly guessed that Lin Xintong was a proud daughter of Heaven that came from a particular large faction in the Tian Yuan world.

Such a peerless woman came from a honorable background, and he was worthy of admiration.

"This lady is... ?" The azure-clothed scholar smiled and asked Yi Yun.

He noticed the details of Lin Xintong's bow that accompanied Yi Yun's. Clearly, this white-dressed girl had a deep relationship with Yi Yun.

This excited Cang Yan. The little rascal back then that he thought highly of not only did well in the Tian Yuan world, he even got a large faction's daughter of Heaven as a wife?

The large factions of the Tian Yuan world had extremely large amount of resources and they had rich heritage. Marrying such a wife would allow him to fight on thousands of years in the future. This disciple of his really lived up to his expectations!

Actually, Lin Xintong might have gone to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, but she had only attended an old friends' gathering with Su Jie. At the banquet, she met a few princes, and she was pursued by them. As for Cang Yan and company, who were in the Tai Ah Divine City, they naturally had never seen Lin Xintong.

"Eh?" The azure-clothed scholar exclaimed suddenly.

Previously, due to the joy and reflection over reuniting with Yi Yun once again, he did not specially pay attention to Lin Xintong's cultivation level. Now, he realized that he could not see through Lin Xintong's cultivation level.

There was a nomological aura swirling around Lin Xintong's body. It gave people the feeling that there was a cloudy mist surrounding her, preventing others from seeing through it.

This woman...

The azure-clothed scholar was slightly taken aback. And at that moment, Cang Yan and Jian Ge also noticed that not only could they not see through Lin Xintong's cultivation level, even Yi Yun's cultivation level was specious.

Yi Yun's body did not have a persistent lingering nomological aura. Compared to Lin Xintong, Yi Yun was even more simple and easily approachable.

But even so, Cang Yan and Jian Ge still could not sense how strong Yi Yun's cultivation level was. Such a scene made Cang Yan find it extremely strange.

"Kid, which faction in the Tian Yuan world did you enter? Did you cultivate some cultivation technique that conceals your cultivation level?"

The first thing Cang Yan thought of was that Yi Yun was using some mystic technique to hide his cultivation level. With the Tian Yuan world's heritage, such mystic techniques were not rare.

As for it being their difference in cultivation level, resulting in him unable to see through Yi Yun's cultivation level, Cang Yan never thought of it. Cang Yan himself was at the Yuan Opening realm. Only if Yi Yun reached the Heaven Ascension realm would he not be able to sense it.

As for the Heaven Ascension realm, that was already the peak in the entire Tian Yuan world. The Tian Yuan world's Heaven Ascension realm warriors were all old freaks that had lived for tens of thousands of years. So with Yi Yun's age, it was of course impossible.

Yi Yun's cultivation level was indeed still at the Yuan Opening realm, but the laws Yi Yun comprehended and the cultivation techniques he cultivated far exceeded Cang Yan's comprehension. The difference in laws made them appear to be warriors on completely different dimensions. He was beyond their comprehension.

This made Cang Yan unable to see through Yi Yun's cultivation level.

Yi Yun chuckled and said, "This junior can be considered to be a member of the Tian Yuan world's Lin family. The girl beside me is Lin Xintong, she too is from the Lin family."

Chapter 710: A Long-Awaited Warmth

Tian Yuan world's Lin family? Lin Xintong?

"So you are Lin Xintong... I have heard of your name!" Yang Qingyun suddenly spoke out.

Although she had never seen Lin Xintong, she knew that more than ten years ago, Lin Xintong had visited the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Furthermore, she had caused quite a stir amongst the upper circles of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

She was extremely talented and she had outstanding bearing. She was a disciple of a Sage-ranked Desolate Heaven Master, so of course, she attracted the attention of people.

She had everything, talent, looks, bearing and standing. Such a perfect girl naturally caused many of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom princes to pursue her.

They were infatuated with Lin Xintong. Even the Divine Kingdom's Crown Prince wanted to marry Lin Xintong, so she could be Crown Princess.

However, at that time, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's princes only knew Lin Xintong's identity as a Sage's disciple. They did not know that Lin Xintong actually came from the Tian Yuan world's Lin family.

Cang Yan and Jian Ge had lived for long enough, so they had a general idea of the Tian Yuan world's factions. They had heard of the Lin family before. It was one of the top factions in the Tian Yuan world.

For Lin Xintong to come from the Lin family, and from her looks, she appeared to be one of the elites of the Lin family's younger generation. Then naturally, Lin Xintong was not someone that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's princes was worthy of. So their pursuits from back then became a joke.

But now, Lin Xintong was beside Yi Yun. And from the looks of their relationship, even if they had not become a Dao couple, it looked very promising!

Just thinking of this, Cang Yan and Jian Ge looked forward to it greatly. They did not dare to ask about their relationship, and they only wished that Yi Yun would soon be together with Lin Xintong.

In that way, Yi Yun would truly enter the Lin family. That would great fated luck. All the resources and heritage accumulated over the years by the Lin family would be extremely beneficial to Yi Yun's growth.

"So it's Miss Lin. Qingyun has long heard of Miss Lin's fame. Seeing you today, the descriptions I heard of Miss Lin were far from a tenth of what Miss Lin is."

To Yang Qingyun, Lin Xintong was too amazing. Of course, this was because in the past ten or so years, Lin Xintong was completely

reborn. Compared when she was touring the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, Lin Xintong was slowly joining back her naturally terminated meridians, and she had the charm of the ancient Great Empress.

Back then, so many princes chased after Lin Xintong, but they would never have imagined that it was a grassroots youth like Yi Yun, who came from the Cloud Wilderness, who managed to win her heart.

Lin Xintong was not good with words, so towards Yang Qingyun's praise, she only smiled and she did not say anything.

"This Lin Xintong really is... " Jian Ge and the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord exchanged looks. Although they could not see through Lin Xintong's cultivation level, just from the fluctuations of her nomological aura, it was already extremely terrifying. Such a peerless woman had strength and talent that were unfathomable. She was no doubt from a large family clan from the Tian Yuan world.

Now, they felt that the large factions of the Tian Yuan world were much more powerful than they originally imagined. Just a junior like Lin Xintong already caused them to feel apprehensive.

At that moment, Yi Yun said, "Senior Cang Yan, City Lord, this junior wants to go to the Desolate race's camp. I wonder if you seniors can help guide this junior?"

After reminiscing old times with Cang Yan and company, Yi Yun

was already a lot more assured. From the looks of it, the second attack from the Black-armored Demon God had not come. If not, the mood would not be that relaxed.

With Cang Yan leading the way, Yi Yun did not need to search by himself, and he could meet Jiang Xiaorou much sooner.

"Oh? You haven't been to the Desolate race's camp? Alright, I'll take you there."

Cang Yan thought that Yi Yun had followed the Lin family and lived in the outer perimeter of the remote mountains, which was not something odd.

On the way, as he had reunited with Yi Yun, Cang Yan was so happy that he appeared like he had drunk alcohol. He kept chatting with Yi Yun using his Yuan Qi transmission.

"Kid, you sure are capable to be able to enter the Lin family. This old man has heard of the Lin family when I was in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. That is a great martial art family."

"To be able to enter the Lin family is a rare opportunity. You must cultivate well and grab hold of this opportunity. In the future, you will soar and reach the Heaven Ascension realm. This is much better than when you were in the Tai Ah Divine City."

"And that beauty beside you, you must hold her right and marry her. Not only will you have a beauty in your arms, you can even

lessen your struggles by a few thousand years!"

Cang Yan's voice transmission did not stop at all. Yi Yun was at a loss whether to laugh or cry hearing him. However, as he heard old man Cang's exhortations, he felt a warmth that he had not felt in a long time.

The old man was still the same. Yi Yun felt like he had returned to a time more than ten years ago. Old man Cang would tell him many things to consider at the sword and saber tomb, as well as in the library when he was choosing his totem mystic technique.

That feeling was really a cherishable memory now that he thought of it.

Hence no matter how old man Cang rambled on, Yi Yun only quietly listened. He would at times nod and answer with a few words.

"Senior, you can be rest assured. I will naturally work hard in my cultivation. Besides, my current strength has already improved very quickly. If you were to see it, you should be quite surprised."

Hearing Yi Yun's words, Cang Yan laughed out loud. "Kid, when have you not given me a huge surprise. I know your strength increases fast, so what if it's fast? This old man is already mentally prepared, so don't you be complacent. Hahaha!"

Be it Yi Yun entering the sword and saber tomb for cultivation,

and how he came back after training outside in the Divine Wilderness, as well as the outcome of the battle with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, it had shocked Cang Yan at that moment. Hence, Cang Yan was already accustomed to Yi Yun's strength increasing by leaps and bounds. This time, he too was hoping to see Yi Yun's maturing.

It was unfortunate that the Black-armored Demon God was attacking. Yi Yun's environment for maturing was not too good, and even the Lin family's current situation was bad. If they could survive this calamity, the path for Yi Yun was limitless. He would definitely become a person who could cause waves in the Tian Yuan world.

As the few of them chatted along the way, they finally arrived at the Desolate race's camp.

From far, Yi Yun could see the primordial true spirits and Primordial Species lurking in the deep mountains. The massive desolate beasts stood between the Heavens and Earth. They would from time to time emit a deep growl that sounded like thunder that shocked people.

There were thousands of Desolate race elite warriors gathered in the square surrounding the meeting hall. With war coming, these elite warriors exuded an aura that formed an invisible force field that blew the clouds in the sky away.

Yi Yun's eyes lit up when he saw this. What a good bunch of soldiers.

The battle against the Black-armored Demon God was not something that Yi Yun and Lin Xintong themselves could handle. He had to rely on the strength of others.

Yi Yun looked at the meeting hall, and with the Purple Crystal's energy vision, he could tell who was inside at a glance.

Sis Xiaorou!

Although he had guessed that everything was fine, only when he saw Jiang Xiaorou sitting in the middle of the meeting hall, dressed in red, with her hand holding a bone staff and other than looking a bit pale, she seemed fine, Yi Yun was completely relieved.

Sis Xiaorou was safe. That was great.

Yi Yun rejoiced and he began walking towards the meeting hall.

Yi Yun's actions stunned the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord. "Yi Yun, you want to go to the meeting hall? The upper echelons of the Desolate race and the Human race emissaries are having a meeting. You might not be able to enter."

In the previous meeting, it was a discussion on the strategies to deal with the Black-armored Demon God, so other large family clan's geniuses and Yuan Opening realm warriors were invited. But for this second meeting, it was to decide whether to fight or take

flight. The requirements were a lot more stringent. Even the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord was not qualified to enter.

Yi Yun said, "It's fine."

As he spoke, Yi Yun was already in front of the meeting hall's square.

Chapter 711: Desolate Queen Token

Seeing how Yi Yun was walking towards the Desolate race warriors who were guarding the meeting hall, the azure-clothed scholar, Cang Yan and company were stunned.

Cang Yan and company were members of the Human race after all. In their impression, the Desolate race and the Human race did not have much courtesy between them. Once they were offended, they might be killed without any forgiveness.

Yi Yun did not seem to walk fast, but he actually only took a few steps to arrive on the square. The thousands of elite Desolate race warriors guarding this zone immediately stopped Yi Yun and Lin Xintong when they saw them.

They sized up Yi Yun and said, "Who are you? The Desolate Queen is discussing matters with the Human race now, entry is forbidden!"

These Desolate race warriors were not members of the Skyfox team, so they naturally did not recognize Yi Yun.

"Kid, what are you doing? If you are so rash and careless, be careful of being captured. If anything happens, the Lin family can't protect you."

Cang Yan hurriedly came forward. He had been imprisoned by the Desolate race in the remote mountains for more than a decade, and prison discipline had been inculcated in him. Who knew what

would happen if they ran afoul with the Desolate race.

The current situation was that even though more than ten large family clans from the Tian Yuan world were gathered together, they were considered relatively weaker than the Desolate race. Even the strongest people in the Tian Yuan world, the Sanctuary Island couple, were equally vulnerable in front of the Desolate race, let alone the Lin family. None of them would dare cross the Desolate race.

Cang Yan was just about to pull Yi Yun away when Yi Yun smiled and touched his interspatial ring.

With a flip of his hand, Yi Yun took out an ancient bronze token, and waved it in front of the Desolate race soldiers.

Yi Yun did not need to explain anything to those Desolate race warriors who blocked his path. He just needed to take the token given to him by Jiang Xiaorou out.

The simple token was engraved with three ancient Desolate race characters, and the back had a lifelike six-tailed Skyfox engraved on it.

Upon seeing this token, the few Desolate race warriors were shocked.

Desolate Queen Token!?

This was a token only the ruling Desolate Queen was qualified to give. Throughout the Desolate race, people who had the Desolate Queen Token were people on the level of the Shepherd Boy. And this male youth in front of them did not look like he was a member of the Desolate race from his clothing, and he looked more like a member of the Human race. He actually had a Desolate Queen Token?

The Desolate Queen Token was something that these Desolate race warriors never had the chance to see in person before. They had only seen pictures in books. With their status, it was not easy to come into contact with a Desolate Queen Token.

However, they knew that the Desolate Queen Token was not fake. Once the Desolate Queen Token was taken out, it would resonate with the bloodline of the Desolate race members. It was a reverence and awe that came from the difference in life's natural order when facing the Desolate Queen!

The few Desolate race warriors did not say another word and they bowed towards the Desolate Queen Token.

Seeing the Desolate Queen Token was like meeting the Desolate Queen in person. Other than Desolate race Empyrean Kings, all of them needed to bow.

"You are... "

After the bow, a person who looked like the team leader of the Desolate race warriors asked Yi Yun politely. He had a rough idea

already. For a human to have the Desolate Queen Token, he had to be the Desolate Queen's younger brother, Yi Yun.

As the Desolate Queen's brother, with Yi Yun also being extremely powerful, and him saving Jiang Xiaorou and the Skyfox team in the Soul Tomb, Yi Yun enjoyed great prestige amongst the Desolate race. He was equivalent to royalty in the Desolate race, no less inferior to Shepherd Boy.

Besides, Yi Yun was even younger. His future was limitless, hence Yi Yun had already become the idol of many Desolate race warriors, especially the younger warriors.

"Can I enter now?" Yi Yun asked.

"Of course! Of course!"

The few Desolate race warriors hurriedly made way and guided Yi Yun. They were extremely polite and from the looks of it, they wished that they could get a sedan chair to carry Yi Yun over.

This respect towards Yi Yun was from their heart, and not due to the deference derived from the Desolate Queen Token.

And behind Yi Yun, Cang Yan and Jian Ge were completely dumbfounded when they saw this situation.

Even the azure-clothed scholar, who always looked calm, seemed to have his words stuck in his throat, unable to speak a word.

"This... What's going on?" Yang Qingyun's mouth opened up like the size of a small quail egg. Her eyes were fixed on the token in Yi Yun's hand. That Token was so magical?

What sort of token was it, and how did Yi Yun have it? To be able to have and use such a token, what sort of status did Yi Yun have in the Desolate race?

She naturally knew that this token was not stolen or picked up, or Yi Yun would not have used it.

Yang Qingyun felt like her brain wasn't big enough to process all of this. She could not figure it out.

The Desolate race was the strongest superpower in this world. Although the Human race and the Desolate race seemed to be equals, that was only when they were considered in their entirety. In fact, the various large Human race factions were independent from one another and they continuously fought each other. As for the Desolate race, they were almost monolithic. Under such circumstances, not a single Human race's faction could compare to the Desolate race!

Amongst the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom people, Cang Yan was the most impatient person. At that moment he was surprised, curious and excited. He could not help but rush over to Yi Yun's side and whisper, "Yi Yun, quickly tell me. Where did you get that token from?"

Cang Yan was previously imprisoned for more than ten years. The Desolate race, who appeared impersonal and fierce, had suddenly turned respectful towards them. Although they were only being respectful to Yi Yun, Cang Yan decided to be the fox that assumed the majesty of the tiger, as it did not prevent Cang Yan from having a psychological climax.

For a lowly prisoner of more than ten years, wasn't it exciting to be able to suddenly walk with his head held high?

Besides, the way Yi Yun took out the token so calmly and casually waved it made the curiosity in Cang Yan's heart itch like a monkey's bottom.

Cang Yan knew that although the Lin family enjoyed an extraordinary status in the Tian Yuan world, they were also nothing much under the Desolate race. They would definitely not be able to receive such an important token.

Yi Yun smiled and said casually, "This token is because I have some relations with the Desolate race. I received it more than half a year ago, and I didn't know it was so good to use."

When Jiang Xiaorou gave him the token, it was to make things convenient for Yi Yun. After all, the number of Desolate race members who knew Yi Yun only added to about a hundred. This would prevent Yi Yun from encountering any problems when traveling amongst the Desolate race.

Yi Yun did not think too much about this token that made things

more convenient. Only today did he know that such a token was extremely rare in the Desolate race. If not, the guarding Desolate race warriors would not have guessed his identity just based on the token.

The casual explanation that Yi Yun gave nearly made the few Desolate race warriors in front of him stumble when they heard him.

He was the present Desolate Queen's brother, and the person that the Desolate Queen cared about the most. You call that some relations with the Desolate race?

The Desolate race warriors were quite speechless. However, they would not complain about what Yi Yun said. Was there any reason for soldiers to shoot their mouth when an emperor was speaking?

"You have relatives in the Desolate race?" When Cang Yan heard this, he was completely dumbfounded.

Jian Ge and Yang Qingyun were also stunned. How did Yi Yun, a human, have a relative in the Desolate race?

Besides, what sort of relative of Yi Yun was this? How could a typical relative have such an important token? And to have the right to give it to Yi Yun?

Yang Qingyun was also extremely curious. Just as she wanted to ask Yi Yun, they suddenly heard an explosive boom from the

meeting hall. A divine beam shot up into the sky, piercing through the meeting hall's dome. In the sky, it formed a gigantic ancient beast phantom image. It was an Aspect Totem!

Oh?

Yi Yun was surprised. What just happened in the meeting room?

Chapter 712: Laws Went In Hand With The Speech

The ancient beast Aspect Totem had two wings on its back, and it was in the form of a tiger. It ran amok high in the sky, and its eyes were like two divine beams of lightning that streaked through the void.

The Desolate race warriors present felt distraught when the tiger's gaze landed on them. The tiger totem had an extremely strong aura, and when it spread out its wings, it covered the entire sky above the meeting hall!

An Aspect Totem of a Heaven Ascension realm human expert?

Yi Yun recognized it immediately. Human warriors, who reached the Heaven Ascension realm, could merge their Aspect Totems into their bodies and also summon them as well.

An Aspect Totem when fully displayed, would push a human Empyrean King's aura to its maximum.

Such situations usually happened in battle.

And in the meeting hall in front of him, the Human and Desolate race were just negotiating. Although they had serious differences about whether to fight or take flight, Yi Yun did not believe the two races would fight regardless of the reason. They would suffer losses before the Black-armored Demon God came if that was the

case.

However, now with the Aspect Totem summoned, it clearly meant that the negotiations in the meeting hall were extremely intense!

"Roar! Roar! Roar!"

At that moment, in the long stretches of mountains in the distance, there were earth-shaking roars.

The primordial true spirits lurking there produced a stunning roar.

Seven gigantic shadows the size of mountains appeared. They stood up in a formidable fashion. There were a Giant Python, a Divine Turtle and a Musical Dragon amongst them!

A terrifying aura dispersed the haze. Compared to the Heaven Ascension realm human's Aspect Totem, that aura was exceedingly powerful!

A confrontation of this level was something that most warriors had never witnessed in their lives.

Even the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was struck by this scene.

"Yi Yun, are you sure you want to enter now?" The azure-clothed

scholar said in alarm as he looked at the tiger totem in the sky.

The powers of a Tian Yuan world Heaven Ascension realm expert was truly terrifying.

In the eyes of the azure-clothed scholar, the meeting room was probably on the cusp of a breakdown. The Desolate race and the upper echelons of the Human race were comparing their strengths and competing against each other. Under such a tense situation, it was inappropriate for the bunch of them to enter the meeting hall.

However, Yi Yun had already moved a foot and walked into the inner sanctums of the meeting hall without a word.

With the Desolate Queen Token in his hand, Yi Yun was met without resistance.

Behind Yi Yun, Jian Ge and Cang Yan were both shuddering with fear. Such a situation exceeded their original imaginations. Compared to the two powerful forces of the Human and Desolate race, as Yuan Opening realm warriors without any background, they were nothing.

Yi Yun carried on striding forward, without batting an eye. His body had an indescribable stance that made it seem like the scene in front of him did not matter.

Such a Yi Yun caused Cang Yan to hesitate for a moment. Just a moment ago, the feeling that Yi Yun gave him was still simple and

amiable. It was not much different to more than ten years ago. It was as if he was still his junior, that green youth who had first entered the Tai Ah Divine City.

But now, the Yi Yun who was striding into the meeting hall suddenly seemed to change.

Such stance and confidence left a shocking impact that was beyond description.

Behind Yi Yun, Yang Qingyun looked at his back, without knowing what to feel. She felt that this young man was full of mysteries. What sort of person was he?

The corridor of the meeting hall was not that long. The inner sanctum was approaching, while Cang Yan and Jian Ge felt a tremendous energy surging behind the door. If their cultivation levels were too weak, opening the door suddenly might cause the surging energy to pour out, injuring them.

And at that moment, Yi Yun had nonchalantly grabbed hold of the door's handle.

"Zhi——"

The door was loudly opened. Terrifying pressure surged out and Yi Yun's clothes and hair blew around due to the aura, yet he stood firm on the spot, not moving one bit.

Inside the hall, there were two distinct sides. There were the legendary figures of the Human race and the Sanctuary couple on one side, while the former Desolate Queen and Shepherd Boy formed the other side!

These people looked at Yi Yun together with gazes that contained the will and powerful spiritual energies of Empyreal Kings. Such Empyreal King's spiritual energy was sufficient enough to send primordial strains fleeing in fright.

As for Yi Yun, he faced such attention calmly.

But behind Yi Yun, Cang Yan and company turned pale. As Yuan Opening realm warriors, the pressure of being noticed by so many Empyreal Kings was obvious!

Before they could think too carefully, a few voices echoed out from the circular table in the middle of the hall.

"Yi Yun!"

"Yun-er!"

The legendary figures of the Human race were surprised about Yi Yun's sudden appearance.

As for the Desolate race camp, Jiang Xiaorou was pleasantly surprised and worried after seeing Yi Yun.

Their expressions were vividly seen by Cang Yan and company and they were momentarily dumbfounded. Yi Yun's appearance caused all these top members of the Human and Desolate race to have such great a reaction?

Yi Yun scanned every Human race expert present. The person who had conjured the Aspect Totem was an elder in black. Yi Yun had an impression of him. Back at Greatsword Mountain, when the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium invited Yi Yun, this elder was present as well.

At that moment, the black-dressed elder was hovering midair. The energy was emitting from his body as all his hair flared. If it wasn't for the meeting hall's protective array, the walls and the dome of the meeting hall would have been blown apart by the elder's energy!

Yi Yun looked at the black-dressed elder, as he looked back at Yi Yun.

Against Yi Yun, the black-dressed elder turned weak!

Previously at Greatsword Mountain, he had witnessed Yi Yun's terrifying combat strength. Even a figure as strong as Shentu Patriarch could not resist Yi Yun.

Even the Sovereign of the Eventide, the Tian Yuan world's strongest expert could not have a temper in front of Yi Yun. Even if the Sovereign of the Eventide was unhappy with Yi Yun, he could

only let him be.

Not even the Sovereign of the Eventide, even Shentu Patriarch was someone that the black-dressed elder felt much stronger than him!

He was absolutely no match for Yi Yun. Besides, there was Lin Xintong beside Yi Yun and she was not necessarily weaker than Yi Yun!

Looking at Yi Yun in the eyes, the black-dressed elder felt fear. For some reason, it felt like a suppression that came from a difference in life's natural order. Yi Yun's gaze seemed to be a deep black hole as if his soul was about to be sucked in.

This made him have a vague feeling that just in this period of half a year, Yi Yun had now reached a point beyond his understanding!

Such a monster really grew in strength rapidly. No one could bolster the courage to face him.

"What's the matter? Can't we sit down and discuss?" Yi Yun said these sentences lightly.

And these sentences were filled with mysterious laws. Laws went in hand with the speech.

A simple sentence that sounded like a morning bell resonated in the black-dressed elder's ear. With a tremble, all his aura was

dissolved just from a sentence from Yi Yun. His energy drained out in all directions, and it quickly dissipated.

And the ancient beast Aspect Totem that was baring its fangs also began to rapidly shrink like a deflated ball!

The Aspect Totem was spiritual. Against Yi Yun, the ancient beast had also lost its formidable stance. It very quickly entered the black-dressed elder's body and disappeared.

The black-dressed elder's expression was extremely ugly. The forceful stance he developed was destroyed by a simple sentence from Yi Yun!

As he looked at Yi Yun, about to say something, he lacked the confidence to say it.

This youth was too terrifying, so terrifying that he did not dare face him.

In what sorts of laws did he gain insight? Why did he have such unfathomable strength?

Yi Yun did not look at the black-dressed elder anymore but at the Sanctuary Island couple. He said with a smile, "What is the matter of discussion? Why is the scene so intense?"

He nonchalantly walked towards the negotiation table. There was a seat that was emptied when the black-dressed elder moved to

display a show of force by hovering in midway.

And now, Yi Yun had imposingly sat down near the table, taking up that seat.

The black-dressed elder was quite dumbfounded. He was an Empyrean King. Ever since he broke through to the Heaven Ascension realm, no matter what the occasion was, or when it was, there was no reason for him to stand, but now... his seat had been taken by Yi Yun, leaving him only to stand.

This was a great loss of face for him, but he was out of options. No matter how bold he was, he would not dare to chase Yi Yun away.

Towards Yi Yun's inquiry, the Sanctuary Island couple only smiled, while the Island Lord, surnamed Ying, said, "It's just a small dispute. It's nothing intense."

With his reply, the entire mood in the venue changed.

From Yi Yun's appearance, a few simple words of his caused the tense situation, which was at the point of them coming to blows, to reverse suddenly.

The imposing aura that came from an Empyrean King disappeared. The Yuan Qi flow that was surging violently to the point of breaking through the meeting hall had disappeared. The scene turned peaceful and natural. Be it the Human race or the

Desolate race, they all exercised great restraint.

And where Yi Yun sat at the round table seemed to become the center of the meeting hall.

Everyone, be they the Human race's leaders, the Sanctuary Island couple, or the former Desolate Queen, they were all looking at Yi Yun, waiting for him to speak.

And at that moment, Cang Yan, Jian Ge, the azure-clothed scholar as well as Yang Qingyun were still standing at the entrance of the meeting hall.

The four of them had expressions like they had seen a god in the middle of the day.

They were in complete shock. What... What had just happened?

The Yi Yun in front of their very eyes was not even thirty years of age. No matter which faction he was placed in, he was considered a member of the younger generation.

Coming out of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, if he was in a first-class power in the Tian Yuan world, and rose up amongst the younger generation, becoming the number one person amongst the younger generation, that in itself was a miracle.

But now, he actually... managed to disperse a human Empyrean King's aura with a sentence, and he was on equal footing with the

Sanctuary Island couple?

And there was even a hint of respect that the Sanctuary Island couple had for Yi Yun. This far exceeded the comprehension of Cang Yan and company.

Cang Yan had originally said that every time he did not see Yi Yun, his return would show him strength that pleasantly surprised him. With them not seeing each other for more than ten years, even if Yi Yun's strength had improved tremendously, Cang Yan would have been psychologically prepared, and he would not be too surprised.

But now... Yi Yun was on an equal footing of the most exalted figures in the Tian Yuan world, the Sanctuary Island couple. A simple sentence reversed the tense mood in the meeting hall. Cang Yan said he would not be surprised, but now, he was so surprised that he thought he was dreaming.

Yi Yun... What sort of person was he?

Chapter 713: Embarrassed

After Yi Yun took his seat, the black-dressed elder stood on the side like a wooden stake.

His expression was extremely ugly. Previously, Yi Yun had said to him, "What's the matter? Can't we sit down and discuss?"

However, after Yi Yun said that, the black-dressed elder didn't even have a place to sit.

With so many people in the room, other than the Empyreal Kings sitting in the middle, they were surrounded by peak-Yuan Opening realm warriors. Everyone was looking at the black-dressed elder, making him feel very embarrassed.

At that moment, the former Desolate Queen waved her hand, indicating to the Desolate race guards to bring a chair over and place it beside Yi Yun.

Seeing the chair being brought over, the black-dressed elder's face relaxed. With a cold grunt, he was about to take the seat. But to his surprise, Yi Yun gently pressed down on the chair's armrest and waved to Lin Xintong.

"Xintong, come over here and take a seat."

Oh?

The black-dressed elder was startled. His foot that had just moved forward suddenly froze.

He watched as Lin Xintong, in her white dress, slowly walk over. In the dark hall, she was like a fairy walking in the dark night.

At that moment, the black-dressed elder was much closer to the chair. He just needed to take two steps to reach the chair before Lin Xintong, but...

He did not have the guts!

It was not that the black-dressed elder was afraid that Yi Yun would do anything to him. Under the current circumstances, he could ignore the aura that was released by Yi Yun to suppress others, but there was no way that he could start a fight.

The real reason why the black-dressed elder lacked the courage was because of Lin Xintong, who was slowly walking over.

Every step of Lin Xintong formed nomological runic patterns under her feet. Her strength was long unfathomable.

She was usually low-key, and she followed behind Yi Yun most of the time. She seldom made moves, and she had never shown her prowess.

The black-dressed elder knew deeply that he was absolutely no match for Lin Xintong.

In a warrior's world, the strong were respected. Under such circumstances, the second chair was only right for Lin Xintong.

How would he have the guts to compete with Lin Xintong? Without strength, if he were to bite the bullet and fight Lin Xintong over the seat, even members of the Human race would think that he was not qualified.

Hence, he could only watch helplessly as Lin Xintong calmly sat beside Yi Yun.

The black-dressed elder's face had turned completely black.

At that moment, Cang Yan and company, who had witnessed all of this not far away, finally understood one thing thoroughly. It was a matter that seemed completely unimaginable and unbelievable.

That was that Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had extraordinary status. Even their strength, for some particular reason, had reached the peak of the standards of the Tian Yuan world!

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had not only been given Empyrean King titles already, and they were amongst the cream of the crop amongst Empyrean Kings. In front of the two of them, the black-dressed elder could not even bring himself to make a fuss.

Just as the black-dressed elder was feeling extremely

embarrassed, the former Desolate Queen gestured to a Desolate race soldier, who slowly brought a second chair over.

This chair was only placed at a corner by the meeting table.

"Mystic Tiger Immortal, you don't mind sitting over there, right?" The former Desolate Queen said nonchalantly.

There was a lazy and derisive smile hanging on her face. Mystic Tiger was the black-dressed elder's title. It was obtained from the form of his Aspect Totem.

The former Desolate Queen did not have a good impression of this black-dressed old man.

The black-dressed elder grunted. He was about to flick his sleeves to leave, but he knew that if he were to leave in a fit at that moment, it was even more shameful. Besides, the negotiations between the Human and Desolate race were not over.

He could only endure the grievance that he had and sit down. However, he no longer had the formidable stance to break out his Aspect Totem.

"Mystic Tiger. Don't mind it. We are now more vulnerable. So what if we let them be all high and mighty at this meeting. Besides, the Black-armored Demon God is about to arrive soon. Jiang Xiaorou has been locked on to by the Black-armored Demon God, and she basically has her name struck off from the Book of Life and

Death. So how long can the Desolate race remain haughty? Besides, would that Yi Yun ignore Jiang Xiaorou? If he doesn't, I want to see how he protects her!"

While the black-dressed elder was feeling aggrieved, a Yuan Qi transmission echoed in his ears.

The person who transmitted the voice was another Tian Yuan Elder Consortium member.

More than half a year ago, Yi Yun had been invited to Greatsword Mountain, and he had witnessed Yi Yun's strength. He naturally did not wish Yi Yun, who would easily be in control of his life, to mature.

Mystic Tiger snorted and transmitted his voice, saying, "You are right. I want to see how much longer they can remain haughty. That Desolate race witch girl won't be able to live past the next few days. If only the Desolate race and Yi Yun would perish together!"

As Mystic Tiger had such thoughts, he hatefully glanced at Yi Yun. If Yi Yun perished in an internecine struggle, Yi Yun, the Desolate race and the Black-armored Demon God would all be destroyed in one go. It would be a joyous occasion.

Of course, he was only thinking. He knew very well that the Black-armored Demon God's strength was tremendously strong. It would be nearly impossible for Yi Yun and the Desolate race to perish together with him.

Yi Yun could sense Mystic Tiger's animosity. After gaining Dao-enlightenment in the Pure Yang Sword Palace, Yi Yun felt that everything around him was in his control. He did not even need to look over with his eyes.

"Young Master Yi, ever since our separation at Greatsword Mountain, it has been less than ten months. Yet to meet Young Master Yi today again, your strength have improved once again. It's really unbelievable." The Sanctuary Island's Island Lord spoke to Yi Yun politely.

As Yi Yun conversed happily with the Sanctuary Island couple, he engaged in a voice transmission with Jiang Xiaorou.

He had to understand the background of the negotiations. In a few words, Jiang Xiaorou had told him everything that had happened.

When he heard that Jiang Xiaorou was being locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God, Yi Yun's heart tightened. "Sis Xiaorou, why is the Black-armored Demon God locking onto you?"

"I do not know either." Jiang Xiaorou sighed. She felt her own existence brought the Desolate race and Yi Yun a great deal of trouble.

For Yi Yun to arrive in the remote mountains now, Jiang Xiaorou inevitably felt happy, but she also felt even more worried.

Back when the Black-armored Demon God invaded the Desolate race's headquarters, they had only managed to escape with the Sacred Spirit's resistance.

Back then, Jiang Xiaorou had left a message to Yi Yun before evacuating, telling Yi Yun their direction of escape.

But following that, the situation had changed. The Black-armored Demon God followed closely behind and it had locked onto Jiang Xiaorou. This caused the Desolate race to begin their second escape. At that moment, Jiang Xiaorou did not wish for Yi Yun to be in the remote mountains.

Up to now, Jiang Xiaorou could faintly feel the Black-armored Demon God's vague spiritual lock onto her. Maybe in the next second, the Black-armored Demon God would suddenly arrive!

The Human race could also sense that the Black-armored Demon God's next attack would happen in the very near future. Hence, their negotiations with the Desolate race had turned so intense.

The Human race had no way to request the Desolate race to do anything for them, but it was not like the Human race did not have anything.

Chapter 714: Shepherd Boy's Compromise

The Human race gathered in the remote mountains were quite a force to be reckoned. If the Human race could aid the Desolate race, then there might be a slim chance for the Desolate race to resist against the Black-armored Demon God, and turn the tables.

For a group of weaklings to face a mighty force was analogous to a herd of sheep resisting a tiger. Under normal circumstances, no matter how many sheep went forward, they would all end up dead. The differences between the two was an insurmountable gap. It was not something that volume could make up for.

The Human and Desolate races were in a similar situation against the Black-armored Demon God.

In a direct clash between a herd of sheep with a tiger, they were bound to fail!

The only thing that could narrow the gap between the two was to gather the weaklings' powers together, and that was with an array formation!

With a top array formation technique, the sheep's energy could be gathered together, causing harm to the tiger.

In the field of formation arrays, the Human race had a greater attainment in it than the Desolate race.

The Desolate race was adept at controlling desolate beasts, while the Human race had greater attainment in alchemy and array formations. Besides, they had a Cosmic Infinite Array, whose level in array formation refinement far exceeded the the Tian Yuan world's Human race's standards.

The Cosmic Infinite Array came from Blood Moon, and it was an array formation passed down since ancient times.

In its most powerful form, it needed eight Empyrean Kings and 64 Sages to control it.

Once it was activated, it could stir the cosmos and cause disturbance in the Yin and Yang!

In the Divine Wilderness, the Human race had once used the Cosmic Infinite Array against the Black-armored Demon God by activating it with five top Human race powerhouses. Although it failed to injure the Black-armored Demon God, it had managed to trap the Black-armored Demon God for a period of time, saving the lives of the factions' elites.

The Desolate race craved this array formation greatly!

Without the array formation, a group of unfocused Desolate race experts entering a head on clash with the Black-armored Demon God would just be charging to their deaths.

However, how could the Human race agree to the Desolate race's

request?

This Cosmic Infinite Array contained very profound and intricate nomological Dao runes. To produce a replica? Difficult!

Especially with the Black-armored Demon God running amok, it became even more important.

This array was the crutch that the Human race was relying on to resist the Black-armored Demon God, so how would they be willing to hand it over to the Desolate race?

The Desolate race suggested that they were willing to send a Desolate race Empyrean King and a primordial true spirit to send the Human race out of the remote mountains, and ensure their safety. And this array formation was just to be borrowed.

But even so, the Human race scoffed at it. Borrow it? What if the array flags and array disks were destroyed by the Black-armored Demon God?

By leaving behind the Cosmic Infinite Array, that was equivalent to handing over the sharpest knife in their hands. Ignoring their future clashes with the Black-armored Demon God, this would cause the Human race to lack the ability to resist the Desolate race as well.

Hence, there was a conflict surrounding the terms and conditions.

Against the Black-armored Demon God's battle, regardless of the outcome, the Desolate race would make the greatest sacrifice. As for the Black-armored Demon God, it was not only the enemy of the Desolate race, but also the enemy of the Human race.

The former Desolate Queen could imagine how when they were fighting the Black-armored Demon God to the death, the Human race would be hiding by the side watching the fight in a joyous manner. They would look forward to such a battle, hoping that the Desolate race would destroy the Black-armored Demon God, while losing all the elites in their race.

The former Desolate Queen knew about the Human race's thoughts, so how could she just watch her own people die for the Human race?

They were Desolate race. For their mission, honor or Jiang Xiaorou, they could fight to the death, but why should the Desolate race sacrifice for the benefit of the Human race? There was even the possibility of them taking the opportunity to wipe out the Desolate race after a victorious battle.

The Tian Yuan world's Cosmic Infinite Array was the terms proposed by the former Desolate Queen.

The Human race could leave, and the Desolate race would send Empyrean Kings to escort them, so as to ensure the safety of the Human race, but the Cosmic Infinite Array had to be left behind.

The intense disagreement resulted in the legendary human figures springing back. They were at an impasse, because the legendary human figures proposed even more conditions for exchange.

And these conditions were things that the Desolate race could not accept.

What the Human race needed now most was combat strength, so as to ensure that they would survive.

They suggested that three Desolate race Empyrean Kings should control three primordial true spirits to fight for the Human race.

To bind these Desolate race Empyrean Kings, a soul contract was naturally needed. And this was not just any ordinary soul contract. It was the most overbearing kind that was as close to a slave contract, which could control one's thoughts.

Only with such a contract would the Human race feel assured, or the conditions would become empty clauses.

With three Desolate race Empyrean Kings and three primordial true spirits, it was equivalent to the joining of three Empyrean King level experts. It could barely make up their losses. Their array refinement masters were also studying the Cosmic Infinite Array. In the future, they might be able to make a replica. Although it would not be as powerful as the original one, they might be able to set up a few and use them.

And this condition had annoyed the Desolate race. Be it the Desolate race or the Human race, an Empyrean King was a mighty figure that stood up high, being able to rule over a race's destiny.

So to let an Empyrean King be a slave?

That was an insult!

Besides, by losing three Empyrean Kings and three primordial true spirits, it would result in it being a much more difficult battle against the Black-armored Demon God.

So how could the Desolate race agree to it?

What made the Desolate race and the former Desolate Queen unable to accept and be infuriated was that amongst the three Empyrean Kings that the Human race requested to be enslaved, Shepherd Boy's name was top on the list!

They actually had their sights on Shepherd Boy!

Shepherd Boy was a supernatural existence amongst the Desolate race, second to the Desolate Queen. He was extremely loyal and he had fought the Tian Yuan world for the Desolate race and retrieved Jiang Xiaorou. He had great achievements in battle with all sorts of honors bestowed to him.

Be it the members of the Desolate race, the former Desolate Queen or Jiang Xiaorou, they did not treat Shepherd Boy as an

ordinary member of the Desolate race.

Even externally, to the humans, Shepherd Boy's name was extremely famous.

By listing Shepherd Boy, the Human race clearly did not only covet Shepherd Boy's strength, they also had the intention to seek revenge!

By letting the extremely proud Shepherd Boy become their slave was more tormentous than killing him.

The former Desolate Queen flatly rejected this request.

However, the Human race's response was extremely adamant. By not agreeing to this request, there was no need for the discussion of the array disk.

At the beginning of the dispute, Shepherd Boy had remained silent, listening to the debates from both sides.

He had lived for a very long time. He had seen how numerous people had looked at him with gazes filled with hate or fear. There was once that he was the representation of the Desolate race amongst the Human race. He was terrifying, powerful and unsympathetic.

Such a Shepherd Boy, be it himself, or others, would never believe that he would be willing to be a slave.

But now, after the debate went on for an hour, to the point of a complete breakdown in negotiations, Shepherd Boy suddenly stood up.

He minced his words clearly and said, "Only I alone will sign the contract, and I will fight for you for a thousand years."

He did not say much, but the words that Shepherd Boy said were not something that simple.

Shepherd Boy had bowed down.

With the existence of a foreign enemy, the Desolate race could not destroy the Human race who had the Cosmic Infinite Array, so as to rob them of the array disks. Then... the only way was to compromise.

For a Desolate race Empyreal King like Shepherd Boy, who treated his honor like his life, he would rather die in a glorious battle than sign an enslaving contract, becoming a puppet of the Human race.

But now, for Jiang Xiaorou and for his race, this was the first time Shepherd Boy had lowered his proud head in more than tens of thousands of years. He had to endure such a great humiliation.

Jiang Xiaorou and the former Desolate Queen had mixed emotions to Shepherd Boy's yielding. This pain was indescribable.

However, the Human race did not appreciate the Shepherd Boy's sacrifice.

This was because just Shepherd Boy's combat power alone was not worthy enough for a Cosmic Infinite Array that could gather the Human race's Empyrean King's powers.

At that moment, the former Desolate Queen had reached her limits and she was on the brink of flaring up.

As for the Human race, they did not wish to be outdone. Mystic Tiger Immortal suddenly released his Aspect Totem, pitting himself against the Desolate race!

This Aspect Totem was just a show of force. Mystic Tiger was hinting that if all decorum was broken, they would not rule out the use of extreme tactics, and they might even use the Cosmic Infinite Array.

Such internal strife was something neither the Human race or the Desolate race could endure!

And at that moment, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had appeared. The mood also changed suddenly with their appearance.

Towards the Human race, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong absolutely had the terrifying power to destroy the balance of power.

The Human race did not expect Yi Yun and Lin Xintong to remain neutral at that moment, or even lean towards them. That was even worse than dreaming in the day.

If Yi Yun and Lin Xintong combined forces, it was difficult to tell how powerful they would be. Even if the Human race used the Cosmic Infinite Array, it would be useless against the two of them, as setting up the array required time!

And if Yi Yun and Lin Xintong joined forces with the Desolate race, they would definitely not be given the time!

Chapter 715: Warning

"So that's the reason... No wonder the disagreement turned so intense."

After hearing Jiang Xiaorou's narration of the dispute prior to his arrival, Yi Yun was not one bit surprised.

When it came to the brink of a race's survival, it was very common for two large factions to fight so they could survive.

And a formation array was indeed the best weapon that a weaker party could use to withstand a stronger party. If not, Yi Yun would not have raised the question of borrowing the God Confining Lock after choosing the "Thousand Snow Domain" and "Death Soulwood".

It was only because Yi Yun's nomological insights were too amazing that made the Sword Spirit and Chibai violate the rules set by the Pure Yang Sword Palace owner, resulting in the God Confining Lock being given to Yi Yun as a gift and loan combination.

Now, Yi Yun had the God Confining Lock in hand, so he had the confidence resisting the Black-armored Demon God. If not, the Black-armored Demon God basically could only be fought by Yi Yun and Lin Xintong. Others as strong as Shepherd Boy could hardly be effective.

"Yun'er, the situation was roughly like that." After updating him

with the most recent ongoing, she felt that her heart was heavy.

"Yun'er, I have previously discussed it with my mother. The Desolate race is determined to fight to the death. We do not want to flee again, and even if we all die fighting, we need to at least slice off a piece of meat from the Black-armored Demon God. Although we are determined to fight to the death, that is just a decision of the Desolate race's upper echelons. We cannot put our Desolate race's bloodline all to waste here. The Desolate race still needs to continue on... "

"However, after the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, even with the best outcome, the Desolate race will suffer heavy casualties. With the race's experts sacrificed, under such a situation, if the Human race finally destroyed the Black-armored Demon God that had been heavily injured by us, they might very well turn on the Desolate race. And if that happened, the Desolate race would not be able to put up any resistance."

"The mutual hatred between the Human and Desolate race runs too deep. They would not give up this chance, and only you and Miss Xintong have the ability to ensure that the Desolate race's lineage will carry on... Listen to Sis' advice, don't stay behind in the remote mountains. Now that you are back, if you get embroiled in this war and if there is any mishap, the consequences would be disastrous. My mother and I will give you all the heritage accumulated by the Desolate race for tens of millions of years. You and Miss Xintong are the future hope of this world. You are also the future guardian of the Desolate race. If our fight was to no avail, then only you and Miss Xintong have the chance of killing the Black-armored Demon God in the future. Sis really doesn't want you to lose the forest for the trees just because of your

emotions, dying in this world and ruining the Desolate race's future. If you were to die here, it is a loss we cannot afford... "

All of this was said earnestly by Jiang Xiaorou. She really did not wish for Yi Yun to stay behind.

But the moment she thought of separating with Yi Yun, Jiang Xiaorou felt a throbbing pain in her heart that made it hard for her to breathe. Unfortunately, she was now like a tiny bird being locked onto by a hawk. She was destined to not accompany Yi Yun, flying far away with him.

This was her destiny.

If possible, Jiang Xiaorou did not wish for so many Desolate race warriors to die for her.

However, be it her mother or the Desolate race warriors, they were already determined to fight to the death. Under such circumstances, if she were to say anything more, it would only weaken the soldiers' morale.

With the advent of a disaster, although it was not as bad as wiping out all life in this world, as this world's strongest group of people, there had to be some people who would pay the price so they could protect their race's heritage.

"Yun'er, are you listening to me?" Seeing how Yi Yun did not respond, Jiang Xiaorou was anxious.

Yi Yun smiled and said, "Sis Xiaorou, my strength has vastly improved with my present return. Besides, over all these years, I have accumulated large amounts of treasures. These treasures are extraordinary, and I just lack the opportunity to be used in the Tian Yuan world, as there are no opponents in the Tian Yuan world currently that are worthy for me to use these treasures."

Yi Yun spoke very confidently. There was no need to speak about the current him. Just a year ago, no one in the entire Tian Yuan world could threaten Yi Yun.

"Now, against the Black-armored Demon God, I can test out my ultimate combat strength. Sis Xiaorou, don't worry. Even if I can't beat him, I have the confidence of escaping."

Yi Yun's words did not seem to contain any tension that would come from the impending face-off with a monstrous enemy. Instead, it sounded very relax.

Yi Yun had already put in all his efforts preparing for nearly a year, all for this battle. Initially, Yi Yun was in no rush to face the Black-armored Demon God in a head-on battle. He could slowly cultivate and slowly grow. But now, Jiang Xiaorou was targeted by the Black-armored Demon God, so Yi Yun decided to take this opportunity and test out his ultimate combat power. Even if he was not the Black-armored Demon God's match, Yi Yun believed that he could safely escape.

With the God Advent Tower, as long as he sucked Jiang Xiaorou

into it and flew away with the God Advent Tower, then where could the Black-armored Demon God go in order to chase Jiang Xiaorou? It was even possible that his spiritual connection would be severed.

"Yun'er, I said so much to you, yet you aren't listening..."

Seeing how Yi Yun completely did not put her words at heart, Jiang Xiaorou was at a loss as to what to say. She knew Yi Yun very well. She also knew that it was impossible for Yi Yun to just watch her fight to the death.

Her proposed idea of Yi Yun protecting the Desolate race's lineage was reasonable and it was indeed necessary. But even so, she had failed to persuade Yi Yun.

And at that moment, the Human race had already been waiting for quite a while. As Yi Yun and Jiang Xiaorou were engaged in a transmitted conversation, the human warriors present were waiting, waiting for his leanings.

They knew that Lin Xintong listened to Yi Yun, so Yi Yun was the ultimate arbiter. For the negotiation, he was extremely important, and he had the decisive say. His right to decide was a result of his strength.

"Young Master Yi, you should roughly know about the situation. So, I wonder, what is your decision?" A legendary human figure could not bear it any longer and asked Yi Yun.

Yi Yun only smiled and he did not speak a single word. His smile made it very hard for the humans to fathom his thoughts. They didn't appear overbearing. Because against Yi Yun, they had nothing to put up a fight with him.

Upon seeing Yi Yun's reaction, Mystic Tiger's face sunk. He could tell that Yi Yun was deliberately acting mysterious.

Mystic Tiger said in a cold tone, "Yi Yun, I know that you are very strong, but don't think that you can use your strength to rule over everything. The Cosmic Infinite Array is not just a set of array flags and an array disk. It has a special operational method. It was previously recorded on a jade scroll, but now, it is stored in our heads. It is an array handed down since tens of millions of years ago, and the array logic is profound and abstruse. Without the operating methods, it would be useless even if you obtain the array disk!"

"Besides... the array disk has a self-destructing component!"

Mystic Tiger had already offended Yi Yun, so he was not afraid. Hence, he had to be the one who said those threatening words.

He was warning Yi Yun not to use his strength to forcefully rob the Cosmic Infinite Array off them, for Yi Yun would receive nothing if he did so.

Upon hearing Mystic Tiger's words, Yi Yun laughed. Having designs on your Cosmic Infinite Array? You sure think too highly of yourself.

Chapter 716: Might

"What are you laughing at?" When he saw Yi Yun laugh, Mystic Tiger felt discomfort all over. Yi Yun was not even thirty years of age, and when compared to human Empyrean Kings, who counted their ages in the tens of thousands of years, this young junior was not even enough to be described as a suckling child.

For a suckling kid to produced such a smile in front of him, how could Mystic Tiger feel comfortable?

"Young Master Yi, now that you have arrived at the remote mountains to save the Desolate race and Fairy Jiang, that courage is highly commendable. Furthermore, Young Master Yi is accomplished at such a young age, and you have extraordinary strength. You are truly a hero of the Human race. Then, I shall represent the Human race and compromise."

At that moment, another legendary human figure spoke up. He was afraid of Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's strength, and he had already come to a unanimous agreement with the other Tian Yuan Elder Consortium members through Yuan Qi voice transmissions.

"If Young Master Yi wants the Cosmic Infinite Array, then we have two conditions. The first is Shepherd Boy. On this point, Shepherd Boy has already agreed to it, so I will not make it any harder. As for the second condition, I wish for Young Master Yi and Fairy Lin to promise, using a soul contract, that after the Black-armored Demon God is vanquished, the both of you will never attack the factions that we belong to. As long as you assent to these two conditions, the Cosmic Infinite Array's array flag and its

usage methods can be taken by Young Master Yi."

Towards Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, the humans still had their reservations. Now, they had raised this condition once again. In their opinions, although this condition limited Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, the limitations weren't that great. It was something easily agreeable.

As for the first condition, Shepherd Boy had agreed to it himself, so it was not difficult.

However, the humans never expected that the conditions that had 'little room for resistance' made Yi Yun look at the speaking Elder like he was looking at a fool.

"It's just a few crappy flags left behind by Blood Moon. In my eyes, it's just trash. You are using that stuff to strike a deal with me? Have you all fried your brains while escaping into the Divine Wilderness?"

Yi Yun's sudden words not only stunned the human warriors, even the Desolate race warriors were momentarily dumbfounded.

No one knew who created the ancient array tens of millions of years ago was. Blood Moon was only the preserver of the ancient array, yet such a profound ancient array had been described as a few crappy flags by Yi Yun?

Jiang Xiaorou was momentarily at a loss as to what to say. As for

the former Desolate Queen, she too looked in alarm at Yi Yun. As time passed, she was more aware of what had happened to Yi Yun. She knew that he may be young, but he was not an insolent or arrogant person.

Be it in the God Advent Tower or the Soul Tomb, Yi Yun had managed to open a bloody path amidst his competitors and enemies, becoming the ultimate victor. All of these proved that point.

Such a person caused the former Desolate Queen to be inclined to believe in his words.

She did not speak and she allowed Yi Yun to represent the Desolate race. She did not know what Yi Yun was planning.

As for the legendary human figures, after being mocked by Yi Yun in such a manner, they did not dare to rise up. Yi Yun's strength made them lack the courage to retort with a taunt.

In their hearts, they believed that Yi Yun said those words to forcibly act awesome.

A human elder said coldly, "Young Master Yi, you are probably just trying to weaken our negotiating chips by deprecating the Cosmic Infinite Array so badly. This tiny trick of yours is completely meaningless. Since you can't accept our conditions, then don't covet the Cosmic Infinite Array. Alright then, we shall leave. I believe that there is already no need to carry on this negotiation."

As the human elder spoke, he stood up, preparing to leave.

As he got up, he observed Yi Yun's reaction.

This feeling was like a mortal buying merchandise from a vendor. He might be unhappy with the vendor's offer price, but he was also reluctant to part with the merchandise. Hence, he would pretend to walk off, but he was in fact waiting for the vendor to change his mind to keep him there.

This human elder was indeed hoping for Yi Yun to change his mind. To get him to really rebuff Yi Yun was not something he could stomach either.

After all, the human race was afraid of Yi Yun. If through the use of the Cosmic Infinite Array, they could get Yi Yun to sign a soul contract and ensure the peaceful coexistence between Yi Yun and themselves in the future, it was worth it.

However... the human elder was disappointed.

Yi Yun's hands were still nonchalantly placed on the meeting table. He was only looking coldly at the elder who pretended to leave. It was a look of "well go, I won't send you off".

"What about the rest of you? Are you planning on leaving together with him?"

Yi Yun looked at the other legendary human figures, and he was completely unworried about them leaving.

These legendary human figures were momentarily at a loss as to what to say. They could even make concessions towards their original conditions, such as not needing Shepherd Boy to sign a soul contract.

They never expected that Yi Yun did not even bother negotiating, and let them all leave.

"Alright! Alright! How true it is that newborn calves are not afraid of tigers." Mystic Tiger glared at Yi Yun as his moustache quivered. "I want to see how you can carry on acting tough in a few days time! Having not seen the Black-armored Demon God, you will never imagine how terrifying he is. Those newborn calves, who aren't afraid of a tiger, only end up dying in the tiger's belly. Yi Yun, when you face the Black-armored Demon God, you will know how arrogant and stupid you were today!"

As Mystic Tiger spoke, he flicked his sleeves and walked away.

And behind him, Yi Yun slurred, "You don't have to worry if I will die in the tiger's belly. But I have to admit that in a few days when I face the Black-armored Demon God, even if I'm no match for him, I have quite the confidence that I can escape. I have plenty of time. I can slowly drag it out. Once the danger of the Black-armored Demon God is over, I will personally go to your, Senior Mystic Tiger's doorstep. Oh... I forgot to ask. Senior Mystic Tiger, what faction do you belong to?"

As Yi Yun spoke, he scanned the Desolate race present. He only knew from the former Desolate Queen's words that the black-dressed elder's name was Mystic Tiger. As for what his identity was, Yi Yun did not know a thing.

"You... "

Yi Yun's words caused Mystic Tiger Immortal's footsteps to falter. His expression turned extremely ugly.

Just Yi Yun's present strength was enough for them to fear him, let alone a few years later.

As for visiting him personally? When Yi Yun became the number one person in the Tian Yuan world, he might even be comparable to the ancient Great Empress. Who would dare to let him make a 'personal visit'?

This was a unmarred threat. Mystic Tiger's faction was also a top level faction in the Tian Yuan world. He may run, but his territory and faction could not be hidden. Once Yi Yun had the absolute strength, it would be extremely simple for him to destroy Mystic Tiger's faction!

"Yi Yun... If you do anything to my faction, all the large factions in the Tian Yuan world will feel insecure. When that happens, it will be equivalent to you making a move on the entire Tian Yuan world's Human race. Do you really want to go against the world?"

Mystic Tiger knew that he could not overthrow Yi Yun based on strength, so he highlighted the entire Tian Yuan world, hinting to him that he would become the enemy of all.

"Are you threatening me?" Yi Yun laughed. "Do you think I'll be afraid just because you mention the world? Why don't you threaten the Black-armored Demon God? Why don't you ask him why he dares to make a move against the entire Tian Yuan world, and why does he dare to become the enemy of all?"

"What a joke. The Black-armored Demon God has been destroying heritage and slaughtering lives. All of you just flee on sight, and now, even before the Black-armored Demon God has arrived, you are already discussing on how to escape."

"As for me, I'm more merciful. As a result, you start staring at me, imposing all sorts of conditions on me!!"

"Why don't you raise conditions with the Black-armored Demon God? Why don't you gather the 'world's' forces to destroy this 'enemy of the all', the Black-armored Demon God?"

"To those merciful to you, you think that they are easily bullied. To those who are forceful, you feel scared. What sort of meaning do the lives of such people like you have?"

Yi Yun's words was right to the point and they were extremely biting. When the humans present heard this, their faces turned flushed. They did not know how to refute him.

Yi Yun compared himself to the Black-armored Demon God. He was too insolent!

Although the humans present all believed that Yi Yun was still greatly lacking compared to the Black-armored Demon God, but as long as Yi Yun survived this calamity, in the future, his strength could indeed reach that stage!

Yi Yun carried on. "All of you have not understood the gravity of the situation. Today, I'm not here to negotiate with you, nor do I need to negotiate. I'm only informing all of you. For the next invasion of the Black-armored Demon God, if you were to join forces with the Desolate race in battle, I will remember your contributions. If not, you are free to leave! The Desolate race will not send a single soldier or peon to escort you safely out of the Divine Wilderness. How many of you can survive will be up to your own destinies."

"And once the crisis of the Black-armored Demon God is over, the Tian Yuan world will be in ruins. There will be a need to restore order. As for how this order will be decided... " As Yi Yun said this, he dragged out his tone. "I don't dare to say that I'll rule over the new order of the Tian Yuan world, but I will at least be able to influence it at 80 or 90%. And that is something I admit I'm capable of."

"Rest assured, I will not kill the innocent. It's just that the gridlock in the Tian Yuan world has existed for too long. It is time to destroy it and rebuild it again. And when that happens, whether the top factions continue being prosperous or be dispersed and

replaced, I didn't think it is right for me to decide on it. But now, all of you have brought me to make a decision."

By saying these words, he sounded extremely domineering. It was a spirit of ruling the world. When the humans present heard this, their hearts twitched, unsure as to what to say.

As for the Desolate race, when they heard Yi Yun's words, they felt their spirits raised. This negotiation was doomed and difficult to negotiate. But now with Yi Yun here, he had dispersed Mystic Tiger's forceful stance with a simple sentence. He couldn't even be bothered to raise conditions, and he refused to accept any conditions of the Human race.

He had made the Human race leave the Cosmic Infinite Array behind unconditionally, and even wanted them to stay behind to fight alongside the Desolate race to the death.

What was might? This was might!

Chapter 717: Demon God Killing Order

The moment that Yi Yun mentioned ruling and deciding on the distribution of powers in the Tian Yuan world, the atmosphere in the meeting hall reached a stalemate.

When the Human race negotiated with the Desolate race, despite the Desolate race being stronger, they held a weaker position as they were looking for the Human race's help.

However, Yi Yun had completely flipped the tables.

With strong and mighty means that no one expected, he caused every single human to turn speechless.

As for the Desolate race, they did not speak a word ever since Yi Yun arrived. They only moved two chairs over.

As for Cang Yan, Jian Ge, the azure-clothed scholar and company standing by the periphery of the meeting hall, they were at a loss as to what to say. They had already sensed that Yi Yun held a high position and he was very powerful. However, they never expected that he was so powerful that he could threaten all the factions in the Tian Yuan world. This far exceeded their level of understanding.

"Why? Aren't all of you leaving? Is there anything left for you to say?" Yi Yun was aggressive. He knew that there was no way to move these old fools through persuasion. It was also meaningless to be submissive in the negotiations.

Leave?

All the legendary human figures were infuriated, but for them to turn and leave was something that they did not dare to do. They had already lived for tens of thousands of years. Although the natural end for them was not near, it was already impossible for them to break through to another realm and extend their lifespan.

If they could have eternal life, they would only care for themselves. However, with no hopes for eternal life and before they entered their graves, they would put their efforts into the future generation as well as heritage. They wanted their bloodline and heritage to continue thriving far into the future.

Every legendary human figure greatly minded the faction that was under their care.

"Yi Yun!" Mystic Tiger took a deep breath. He found it difficult to suppress the rage that he was feeling. "You want to rule over everything? Fine! Very fine! You are powerful and mighty! But all of this is established on absolute strength. You have not fully matured, yet you are so insolent. Aren't you being too full of yourself!? How old are you!? What sort of cultivation level are you at!? You don't even think anything of the Black-armored Demon God? Your tone is as if you are guaranteed to kill the Black-armored Demon God, and to enfeoff the world, rewarding people based on their contributions. Who do you think you are? If you can kill the Black-armored Demon God, you are a peerless Emperor! If you can't kill him, then you are just a joke!"

While Mystic Tiger spoke, he had a ferocious expression on his face. Yi Yun's threats made him nearly go crazy!

He had lived for very long, and he was accustomed to enjoying an elevated status. Usually, any junior would be respectful towards him, but now, he was threatened by a junior in such a way, yet, he had to endure the threat. How could he not be infuriated?

Mystic Tiger's words were actually what was on many of the human's minds.

Yi Yun was powerful, but could he truly escape from the Black-armored Demon God? He had disappeared for more than half a year ever since the Black-armored Demon God appeared.

Yi Yun had never had a direct clash with the Black-armored Demon God, so how could he know how terrifying the Black-armored Demon God was?

"Young man, don't be so insolent. Arrogant people tend to die due to their arrogance."

Another legendary human figure spoke. Against Yi Yun's threat, the humans began their retaliation.

Yi Yun could not even be bothered with them.

"Are you done? You can't beat me, so you root for the Black-armored Demon God, who slaughtered your immediate bloodline,

your grandchildren and chased you out of your territories, to kill me? So this is your martial path? Pathetic!"

Yi Yun's every word was biting and harsh to the ear, so much so that the legendary human figures present had no way to rebut.

Counting on their enemy to kill an enemy was indeed pathetic.

Many of the legendary human figures could no longer stand the humiliation, and they were about to leave the meeting hall, but at that moment...

Phew—

A dark and cold aura enshrouded them without warning.

Before the Human race and Desolate race warriors could react, they felt like they had crashed into a icy chasm.

The cold aura was biting to the bone, as if it was about to freeze the flowing Yuan Qi and blood in their meridians.

This is...

Everyone was alarmed. This meeting hall had a protective array. What sort of sudden aura was this?

Many looked at Yi Yun and Lin Xintong. Some of them suspected that such terrifying aura came from Yi Yun and Lin Xintong.

However, seeing how Yi Yun was frowning slightly, this had likely nothing to do with him.

Could it be... ?

Upon sensing the intense aura, many people shuddered.

Was it the Black-armored Demon God!?

The aura was extremely suppressing. It was so powerful that people felt like they were turning limp. Yang Qingyun, who had a weaker cultivation level, as well as the Desolate race maids in charge of services in the meeting could not withstand it at all. Their faces turned pale as they shivered all over.

Upon seeing this, Yi Yun split out a bit of his aura and injected it into Yang Qingyun and the Desolate race maids, allowing them to withstand the terrifying aura. If not, the Yuan Qi in their bodies could even freeze up, so much to the point of their dantian shattering from frost.

"Thank... Thank you... " Yang Qingyun said with a trembling voice. With her trembling lips, she felt as helpless as drifting in a storm.

"The Black-armored Demon God is coming!?"

In the meeting hall, be it the Human race warriors or the Desolate race warriors, they were all nervous and distraught. The moment the Black-armored Demon God arrived, it would be a bloody storm. Yet, they had not made preparations to go to war.

The Black-armored Demon God...

Yi Yun interfaced his spiritual energy with the Purple Crystal and he spread his perception in all directions. Everything around him turned transparent.

Immediately, far into the distance, Yi Yun saw a pair of red eyes. It appeared mounted in the dark space, staring right at him.

Upon feeling these eyes stare at him, Yi Yun felt his heart tighten! He felt like every inch of his skin was being pricked by a needle.

Yi Yun was already certain that the other party was no doubt the Black-armored Demon God!

Through this gaze, Yi Yun could sense the Black-armored Demon God's soul.

Cold, powerful, brutal and a hint of chaos.

His spiritual energy was extremely unstable. It was like there

were dozens of spiritual energy turbulences rampaging. And every strand of spiritual turbulence was sufficient enough to destroy a Human race Empyrean King's soul sea.

In this way, Yi Yun exchanged stares with the Black-armored Demon God through this unknown space-time.

And at that moment, the people in the meeting hall sensed that Yi Yun was facing the Black-armored Demon God directly. He was enduring most of the aura that the Black-armored Demon God enshrouded the meeting hall with!

"Yi Yun!"

"Yun-er!"

Lin Xintong and Jiang Xiaorou immediately turned tense. No one expected that the Black-armored Demon God would suddenly traverse across space-time at that moment, projecting his spiritual energy over.

"Yun'er, the Black-armored Demon God has locked onto you!" Jiang Xiaorou said anxiously. She had once been locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual energy. She knew very well what it felt like.

And in fact, back in the Desolate race headquarters, the aura that the Black-armored Demon God produced when locking onto Jiang Xiaorou, was not as powerful.

Jiang Xiaorou never expected that this meeting would have such an outcome. Yi Yun had been locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God. That was the worst news possible!

Chapter 718: Going Against the Flow

"I'm being locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God? To be able to lock his spiritual energy onto me through such a distance, what sort of magical power is that?"

Jiang Xiaorou's words made Yi Yun's heart wince. He could indeed feel the cold spiritual energy from the Black-armored Demon God forming a mysterious connection with his body at this very moment.

It was most likely an extremely powerful spiritual energy law.

Could it be that the Black-armored Demon God had been using the spiritual connection with Jiang Xiaorou to watch the situation in the meeting hall?

Just thinking of this tightened Yi Yun's heart. This Black-armored Demon God was indeed not trivial!

After the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual energy firmly locked onto Yi Yun, the pressure that enveloped the meeting hall slowly weakened, and shortly after, it disappeared like the receding tide.

Everyone felt their bodies lighten. Their bodies' Yuan Qi and blood flow were no longer repressed.

The Demon God had left.

After the pressure completely disappeared, people were sweating profusely. The pressure was too great, making them feel like the Black-armored Demon God would arrive at the very next moment and begin another massacre.

"What a close call! I thought that the Black-armored Demon God was coming."

"Fortunately, he left. He must not have recovered from his injuries. He extended his presence mainly because of Yi Yun." A human elder said as his eyes landed on Yi Yun.

Actually, even if Jiang Xiaorou did not mention it, the people in the hall had already realized that the spiritual energy pressure from the Black-armored Demon God was mainly concentrated on Yi Yun.

Yi Yun was the focus of the Black-armored Demon God's enveloping spiritual energy.

"Yi Yun has been spiritually locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God!"

The legendary human figures quickly realized this fact. This was similar to Jiang Xiaorou, and it was equivalent to appearing on the kill list of the Black-armored Demon God.

"It is most likely that the Black-armored Demon God has been

monitoring the meeting through means beyond our comprehension. Yi Yun's arrogant remarks must have incurred the Black-armored Demon God's wrath. Indeed, if I were the Black-armored Demon God, I would not let such an insolent genius, who might one day threaten myself, exist."

Yi Yun had been aggressive and insolent with his words. Other than threatening many factions amongst the Tian Yuan world, he did not even seem to show any fear towards the Black-armored Demon God.

"Haha!" Mystic Tiger laughed. There was an obvious sense of schadenfreude in his laughter.

"What did that kid just say? Something like when facing the Black-armored Demon God, even if he was no match for him, he would have quite the confidence at escaping. And something like him having plenty of time and he can slowly drag it out. Unfortunately, he has been targeted by the Black-armored Demon God, what time does he have left?"

"With the present situation, does he still have thoughts of ruling over the Tian Yuan world's new order? He even said that he could influence the new order by about 80 or 90% and that it was something that he admitted he was capable of. Now, with Death at his doorstep, what arrogance is there left for him? Hahaha!"

Mystic Tiger was soothed in his heart. Many of the legendary human figures had been completely repressed by Yi Yun's aura and arrogance a moment ago. They were infuriated with nowhere to vent their anger. They could not do anything to Yi Yun, but the

Black-armored Demon God could.

Anyone knew how to brag. Behind the Black-armored Demon God, you could say anything that disparaged the Black-armored Demon God. But now, with the Black-armored Demon God marking you with a kill order, how are you to carry on with your charades?

"Being overly-arrogant indeed doesn't let you live long. This Yi Yun basically caused his own death. Just a momentary slip of the tongue gave him a spiritual lock on by the Black-armored Demon God. He will definitely be pursued by the Black-armored Demon God till the ends of the world in the future. He's doomed!"

The legendary human figures privately discussed this matter through voice transmissions. They naturally did not dare say such things openly in front of Yi Yun.

Actually, they too were afraid that after Yi Yun was killed by the Black-armored Demon God, the Black-armored Demon God would slaughter the world.

The best outcome was that Yi Yun would heavily injure the Black-armored Demon God before being killed, then that would be perfect.

However, what made Mystic Tiger and company surprised was that they did not see any flustered or panicked expressions on Yi Yun's face.

Yi Yun was only silent and he had not spoken a single word.

He did not look at the humans, but instead, he quietly sat at his seat. He looked at his palm, like he was considering something.

"What is this kid up to?"

"Ignore him. We can just leave. Yi Yun and Jiang Xiaorou have been targeted. This battle is already inevitable for the Desolate race and Yi Yun."

As the legendary human figures left, it was surprising that the Sanctuary Island Couple remained.

The two of them looked at Yi Yun and they did not disturb his thoughts.

In fact, ever since Yi Yun appeared in the meeting hall, other than the couple exchanging a few pleasantries with Yi Yun, they barely spoke.

Towards the Human race's departure or their conditions, the two of them did not express any of their views.

Yi Yun looked up and glanced at the Sanctuary Island couple. For the two of them to stay behind, it was apparent that they had something to tell him. However, he did not engage in conversation with them. He had something important to do.

The Black-armored Demon God was locking onto him using a spiritual mark. It was a connection that reached across space-time. After the planting of the lock, the Black-armored Demon God could precisely locate him at any time.

This spiritual mark was after all just a form of spiritual soul energy.

As long as it was energy, Yi Yun was not afraid. He had the Purple Crystal Origins that controlled energy. A divine item like the Purple Crystal could absorb and manipulate energy, even if it came from the Azure Yang Lord, let alone the energy condensed by the Black-armored Demon God.

As such, as long as Yi Yun carefully examined it, he would have the ability to dispel the energy.

However, what Yi Yun was thinking wasn't about dissolving this energy.

He had the God Advent Tower and several hidden cards up his sleeve. He was already planning on fighting the Black-armored Demon God. Even if the Black-armored Demon God did not lock onto him, he would also not escape. There were no effects from being locked onto, so Yi Yun wasn't afraid at all.

What was on Yi Yun's mind at the moment was how the spiritual soul energy lurking in his body was constantly connected to the Black-armored Demon God. This allowed the Black-armored

Demon God to lock onto him, but then, could he use this faint link to travel upstream and lock onto the Black-armored Demon God's location instead?

With the Purple Crystal, Yi Yun felt that it was not something difficult!

If the legendary human figures knew about his thoughts, they would be absolutely stunned, rendering them speechless.

Typically, if someone was locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God, it was equivalent to a death sentence. It would be not bad if one could welcome death. Others, who were more resolute, would think of means to wipe away the mark planted by this god of death. But just think of the Black-armored Demon God's power, could his killing mark be so easily wiped off?

However, Yi Yun, who could use the Purple Crystal to wipe out this killing mark, not only did not do so, he even wanted to follow the vines to the melon, and find the Black-armored Demon God, taking action against the Black-armored Demon God.

Such a crazy idea was probably something that the Desolate race would not accept if they knew about it, let alone the Human race. Was he afraid of not dying earlier?

This thought of Yi Yun's was not made at a spur of a moment. Finding his enemy's location definitely had its benefits.

As for what to do after the Black-armored Demon God was found, it will depend on the situation of how injured the Black-armored Demon God was at the moment.

Be it the Human race or Desolate race warriors, they were all thinking of how the Black-armored Demon God would come with a forceful stance after he recovered from his wounds.

But Yi Yun's take on the matter was why not take the initiative to attack as compared to waiting for a prepared Black-armored Demon God, which would mean fighting him at his peak?

Chapter 719: Alliance

The thought of finding the Black-armored Demon God lingered in Yi Yun's mind. He meditated for a full fifteen minutes before he figured out where the energy mark was in his body. He was in no rush to go against the flow to locate the Black-armored Demon God.

He looked up at the Sanctuary Island couple.

"Is there something that the two of you want to discuss with me?"

The couple looked each other in the eye as the man smiled and said, "It's actually nothing important. The both of us were actually leaning towards retreating from the remote mountains with the Human race. It is not because we were afraid to die, but we felt that it was meaningless to make pointless sacrifices."

"However... with Young Master Yi and Fairy Lin returning this time, it seems that there will be an intense battle. Since Young Master Yi is so confident, I'm actually quite curious. After discussing it with my wife, the two of us have decided to stay behind as witnesses to Young Master Yi's grand battle with the Black-armored Demon God. This is probably the battle that has the highest chance of seriously injuring the Black-armored Demon God. The two of us do not wish to miss such a battle. And by staying behind, we might give some insignificant help."

The Island Lord, surnamed Ying, touched on the matter lightly, and he slightly surprised Yi Yun. The Sanctuary Island couple was

actually planning on staying to fight to the death.

He was confident that he could escape from the Black-armored Demon God, but the Sanctuary Island couple might not have the means. There was the danger of dying if they stayed behind!

As members of the Human race, to fight alongside the Desolate race at the risk of death, this had won a lot of goodwill with Yi Yun.

If one talked about fearing Yi Yun, the Sanctuary Island couple were the least afraid of Yi Yun. The couple were without kin and they were completely isolated. They lived in seclusion at Sanctuary Island and it was not a large faction. They were like as unworldly as the wild stock or floating clouds. Even if the factions of the Tian Yuan world were ruled and distributed by him, it would not affect them.

"Thank you for being so understanding of the correct principles." Yi Yun clasped his fists. He was a person who would settle scores with his enemies, but he too was a grateful person. He had noted the Sanctuary Island couple's goodwill.

"Since we have now forged an alliance, I wonder if Young Master Yi plans on informing us of your ideas? From Young Master Yi's expression, I feel like Young Master Yi already has an idea of how to handle the situation." The Sanctuary Island Lord asked.

He noticed how Yi Yun looked calm from the beginning. He did not have the panic that should have resulted from having a mark

planted on him. Although he did not think that Yi Yun could do anything to the Black-armored Demon God's mark, since Yi Yun wasn't afraid, then it meant that he had plans and preparation towards facing the Black-armored Demon God in a life-and-death battle.

If it wasn't for this, Yi Yun would also not have categorically rejected the humans' conditions, and shrugged off the Cosmic Infinite Array.

The Sanctuary Island couple had decided on staying behind to fight to the death, so it was reasonable to make such a request.

However, the matter of how the Purple Crystal could control the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual energy was not something that Yi Yun wanted to explain, he pondered for a moment before saying, "I originally had a plan, but after tonight, the situation might change. So, I plan on waiting for an outcome before making it clear to the two of you."

The Sanctuary Island couple was surprised. With regards to the Black-armored Demon God, even if it were a few nights, there shouldn't be any changes, what was one more night?

However, since it was said by Yi Yun, the Sanctuary Island couple looked each other in the eye before nodding. One of them said, "If that is the case, the both of us shall await the news."

"Alright then. The debate had gone on for a long while today. The both of you must be tired, so have an early rest and recharge

yourselves." Yi Yun said politely.

The Sanctuary Island couple could tell that Yi Yun had something to say to Jiang Xiaorou and company. So with a smile, they stood up and said, "Then we shall take our leave first."

The former Desolate Queen summoned two maids, who respectfully led the Sanctuary Island couple out of the hall.

As long as they fought alongside them, members of the Human race would receive the respect of the Desolate race.

After the Sanctuary Island couple left, Jiang Xiaorou came in front of Yi Yun. She was worried and feeling terrible. She planned on persuading Yi Yun to go far away. But now, Yi Yun had been locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God.

She believed in what Yi Yun said about being able to escape from the Black-armored Demon God, but now with the Black-armored Demon God locking onto him, it would be useless even if he could escape.

After escaping, no matter which ends of the planet he was on, he would be quickly found by the Black-armored Demon God. It was like a maggot in a tarsal bone that could not be removed.

Yi Yun was strong, but was he strong enough to escape from the Black-armored Demon God time and time again?

"Sis Xiaorou, there's no need to worry. Actually, I already have a plan. The Black-armored Demon God's lock onto me actually has little impact. Instead, it has given me a chance." Yi Yun said.

"What chance?" The former Desolate Queen and Jiang Xiaorou were surprised. This matter was something that anyone would try to avoid as hard as possible, yet, Yi Yun had said that it had given him a chance.

Even Lin Xintong's eyes flickered. She too did not know what Yi Yun was up to.

"Senior Qing Kui." Yi Yun suddenly looked at Shepherd Boy.

Although his present status and strength was above Shepherd Boy, Yi Yun still owed him his life from before. So up to now, he was still extremely respectful to Shepherd Boy.

Shepherd Boy nodded and said, "Young Master Yi, please speak."

"I wonder if Senior Shepherd Boy is willing to accept the transference of the mark planted by the Black-armored Demon God on me to you?" From Yi Yun's previous rumination, he had made a decision. He wanted to use the spiritual mark planted by the Black-armored Demon God and find him by following the vine to the melon. However, he could not bring the spiritual mark with him when approaching the Black-armored Demon God, or it would alert the enemy.

Hence, this spiritual mark needed to be born by someone. And this person had to stay behind when he went into action. A typical warrior could not bear the spiritual pressure of the Black-armored Demon God. The person most suitable here was Shepherd Boy. He was resolute and trustworthy.

Shepherd Boy was momentarily surprised before saying immediately, "You can transfer the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual mark?"

Be it the former Desolate Queen or Jiang Xiaorou, they were completely dumbfounded when they heard this. The Black-armored Demon God's spiritual mark was extremely powerful. Just removing it was almost impossible, and he wanted to transfer it to another person? Was it possible?

"I'll give it a try. I also do not know if it is possible. As long as Senior Qing Kui agrees, then I can begin now. After the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, I will naturally remove the spiritual mark from Senior's body."

Yi Yun did not say it with certainty. If it was removing a tracking mark, it was much easier compared to transferring the mark.

"I naturally am willing. Then, can you also transfer the mark on Her Majesty's body?" Shepherd Boy hurriedly asked.

He was loyal to the Desolate race and he would not hesitate to die for Jiang Xiaorou.

Yi Yun said, "Senior, rest assured. This tracking mark is not a problem at all. Not only can I transfer it, I can also wipe it away. However, if I were to do that now, it might alert the Black-armored Demon God."

Yi Yun never put the tracking mark at heart. As for Jiang Xiaorou's safety, he was also not worried. He had the God Advent Tower.

With a few words, Yi Yun lessened the tension of the situation. His confidence and calmness infected many of the people present. It caused the solemn atmosphere of every man fighting to the death to become not as daunting.

"Oh yes, Senior Qing Kui, Your Majesty. These... are my mentors and friends from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Back when Tai Ah Divine City was invaded, they were captured and they have been held in the remote mountains for more than ten years. Now, they have been conscripted into the Desolate race army... "

As Yi Yun spoke, he walked towards Cang Yan and company.

Cang Yan, Jian Ge and Yang Qingyun were already at a loss as to what to say. Whatever happened today went beyond their understanding.

Yi Yun not only possessed the status of being the leader of the Tian Yuan world, he had also become the backbone of the resistance against the Black-armored Demon God. What seemed like a hopeless situation seemed to be alleviated with his

appearance. There was a feeling of hope.

To be able to reverse the situation of the world while engaging in gaily chatter, Yi Yun had become such a figure in less than twenty years time. It was truly remarkable.

Chapter 720: Late Night Sneak Attack

Ever since Cang Yan, Jian Ge and company were locked up in the remote mountains, they had led secluded lives. They did not know what had happened all these years. As for the Desolate race, they had also forgotten about them.

Later on, when they were conscripted into the Desolate race army, their freedom was limited, and they were fated to die under the hands of the Black-armored Demon God.

And because of Yi Yun, a Cloud Wilderness youth who had entered the Tai Ah Divine City more than ten years ago, they had regained their freedom, and they had also receive unprecedented treatment from the Desolate race.

This made Cang Yan, Jian Ge and company feel as if they were in a dream.

They were sent to the Lin family's domain.

These days, the Lin family enjoyed an outstanding status in the remote mountains. They did not join the Human race's alliance, but the various factions of the Human race would visit the Lin family on a daily basis in continuous streams.

The Lin family had produced Lin Xintong, a proud daughter of Heaven that would one day become a peerless Great Empress as well as Yi Yun, a prospective son-in-law who was in no way weaker than Lin Xintong. Without any surprises, the Lin family would one

day become the number one faction in the Tian Yuan world. No faction would dare to offend such a family clan.

"Your Majesty."

After settling in Cang Yan and company, Yi Yun looked at the former Desolate Queen.

"Yi Yun, I really have to thank you this time." The former Desolate Queen looked lovingly at Yi Yun. Jiang Xiaorou's brother was indeed remarkable. At today's meeting, if it wasn't for Yi Yun, no one knew how it would have developed.

"Your Majesty, I have an array formation here that I'll be passing on to you."

As Yi Yun spoke, he took out the God Confining Lock array's array disk and array flags.

"Array formation?"

When the former Desolate Queen heard this, she was delighted. So Yi Yun also had an array formation, no wonder he could reject the Human race in such a manner.

There were 81 array flags in the God Confining Lock array. They were all sealed in the central array disk.

This array disk was about a square foot in size. When the former Desolate Queen received it, she did not find anything special about it.

However, she understood that for Yi Yun to produce this array formation, it had to be extraordinary. It might even greatly exceed the Cosmic Infinite Array.

"Xintong, you stay with the Desolate race to study this array. Senior Shepherd Boy, please follow me."

Yi Yun took a deep breath. As he spoke, for precautionary measures, he had used the Purple Crystal to isolate the surrounding energies. He did not know when the Black-armored Demon God would recover from his injuries, so he had to make haste.

"Alright!"

Shepherd Boy looked calm, while on the other side, Jiang Xiaorou and Lin Xintong were worried. From Yi Yun's words, they could tell that Yi Yun was planning something, and he was about to go into action.

"Yun'er, are you going to make a move on the Black-armored Demon God now?" Jiang Xiaorou asked.

"Yes, if there's no surprises, I'll be going tonight."

"In such a rush? Are you going in alone?" Lin Xintong's eyebrows pricked up slightly. She believed that she would accompany Yi Yun.

If the two of them joined forces, their combat strength would be even stronger.

Yi Yun said, "Xintong, the responsibility of the God Confining Lock array is yours. Me going alone is enough. I'll be even more flexible this way. It's better to do it sooner than later. If the Black-armored Demon God has recovered from his wounds, then there will be no meaning for me to go."

"Xintong, you organize the Desolate race's experts and practice the God Confining Lock array overnight. Be prepared for the Black-armored Demon God to attack at any time. The battle might happen not too far away."

In a few words, Yi Yun had readied the battle instructions.

No one questioned Yi Yun's ideas. They could only follow them at this point in time.

With that, Yi Yun went into a cultivation chamber with Shepherd Boy. Be it the conversation from before or the transference of the energy mark, Yi Yun isolated all possible forms of probing with the Purple Crystal.

After six hours, Shepherd Boy came out of the cultivation

chamber with a weary expression. The spiritual energy of the Black-armored Demon God had been transferred into his body.

And when the spiritual energy was transferred by Yi Yun, Yi Yun also used the faint spiritual connection to roughly locate the Black-armored Demon God.

Yi Yun had guessed that the Black-armored Demon God was sleeping. With the Purple Crystal's perception, the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual energy was maintaining a weak state most of the time.

Yi Yun did not know what would happen during his sneak attack on the Black-armored Demon God. But even if it did not achieve the desired effect, it was definitely better than facing the Black-armored Demon God at his peak condition.

Late into the night, Yi Yun shot up into the sky and flew far away from the remote mountains. After that, a miniature pagoda flew out of his body.

The miniature pagoda was spinning in front of Yi Yun, and following that, Yi Yun's body constantly shrunk till he was sucked into the miniature pagoda.

Yi Yun hid himself in the God Advent Tower, and then directed the God Advent Tower in the direction of the Black-armored Demon God's hiding location.

By doing this, it was a matter of precaution. Yi Yun did not know if the Black-armored Demon God was able to be aware of his presence while treating his wounds. With the God Advent Tower's array protecting him and the Purple Crystal's energy isolation, this double level of insurance made Yi Yun believe that there would be no problems.

With that, a miniature pagoda shuttled through the night sky.

After Yi Yun flew out of the remote mountains, he flew tens of thousands of kilometers until he came to a spot above a pine tree forest.

High in the sky, the light rays around the God Advent Tower distorted slightly as it was hidden with array techniques. It disappeared under the moonlight, with no one being able to detect the God Advent Tower's presence.

Yi Yun used his perception to bypass the God Advent Tower and he looked at the pine forest beneath him.

He could vaguely sense that the Black-armored Demon God was hidden here, but as for the actual location, Yi Yun had no way of confirming it.

Since the Black-armored Demon God was recuperating, he had to conceal himself. If not, in the Divine Wilderness where there were numerous primordial true spirits, if one primordial true spirit was attracted to him, it might affect his recuperation process even if it could not harm him.

The Black-armored Demon God's powers were unfathomable. With him having the intention to hide, no ordinary person would be able to find him. However, Yi Yun was different. He had the Purple Crystal's energy vision.

Under the energy vision, nothing could hide!

With Yi Yun's cultivation level and nomological insights improving, his energy vision could already encompass more than 50 kilometers. If he was patient enough, he would not take more than four hours to scan through the vast pine forest.

The moonlight flowed down like water as the pine forest remained silent. In the pine forest, there was a clear mountain stream flowing. It meandered around with all forms of bends, with a source high in the sky. It looked like a haven of peace.

Without any murderous intent or gathering of Yin energy, there was only the occasional breeze that rustled the forest. A thin layer of moonlight seemed to transform into a silver mist that slowly flowed through the forest.

Just from this scene, it was hard to believe that this was the hiding spot of the Black-armored Demon God.

However, Yi Yun did not have any doubts as he searched area by area.

Soon, he discovered a strange spot in the pine forest. There were almost no desolate beasts in this pine forest. Other than the sound of the clear spring water flowing, it was as silent as a cemetery, giving people a shuddering feeling.

Chapter 721: Yin Spring

Yi Yun looked down from high in the sky and he discovered that there were nine rivers in the pine forest. These nine rivers winded around and they eventually converged in the center of the pine forest.

Here, there was a lake that wasn't very large. It looked like a beast's eye from high in the sky.

The nine rivers constantly provided it with spring water, but this lake was less than a kilometer in radius. There was no outlet, so it was unknown where the water flowed to.

After watching it for a while, Yi Yun suddenly had a feeling that the nine rivers were like nine flood dragons that revolved around a dragon pearl.

This is...

With a sudden thought, Yi Yun probed his perception underground!

Previously, Yi Yun's energy vision was radiated in all directions so as to search the pine forest quickly. But now, Yi Yun reduced the scope of his energy vision. Most of his spiritual energy was used to probe underground.

With his energy vision constantly going deeper, Yi Yun's heart

jumped when he saw the scene underground. What looked like a tranquil pine forest actually had underground network of Yin roots. Every Yin root corresponded to a river. The rivers meandered and they eventually came together.

And that lake was where all the underground Yin roots eventually converged. The lake was extremely deep. Instead of calling it a lake, it was better of describing it as a well!

This well-like lake extended deep underground, becoming the gathering point of the Yin energy. This made Yi Yun shudder because he felt like this lake was a passage to the underworld.

"So that is the reason. This strange land gathers all the Yin killing energy of the ground together. The Divine Wilderness is so vast, so it's no surprise that such a place exists. And for the Black-armored Demon God to actually find such a place, he used it as a place for his recuperation.

The Black-armored Demon God's energy leaned towards Yin killing energy. It was not limited to the Black-armored Demon God, even Blood Moon was the same. Back then, the reason they chose the Soul Tomb as the Blood Moon's core was all for this reason.

By recuperating under this Yin Spring, the Black-armored Demon God could achieve double the results with half the effort.

Yi Yun closed his eyes, and he carefully extended his energy vision into the deepest depths of the lake. And indeed, he sensed

distorted spatial dimensional laws.

The Black-armored Demon God was hiding in a warped space in the deep lake.

But even such a warped space could not block Yi Yun's probe. He finally 'saw' the Black-armored Demon God.

The Black-armored Demon God had a majestic build. He was completely naked and his black hair sprawled down, covering his back.

He was dark-skinned and it was like divine metal that had been tempered thousands of times. Muscles with trenchant looking lines entwined around him like a dragon.

The Black-armored Demon God's muscles looked like they would burst at anytime, but surprisingly, they did not look jarring. In fact, his body's proportions were perfect. From top to bottom, his body was filled with the beauty of strength.

In front of the Black-armored Demon God, he had taken off his black armor and he had arranged it in a human form.

The empty helmet was facing the Black-armored Demon God, like the armor had a life of its own.

The Demon God had taken off his armor!

When generals were leading battle campaigns, they would never take off their armor while leading the troops, resting or sleeping. They would remove their armor only when they were injured.

As Yi Yun looked at the Black-armored Demon God, he seemed to see the scenes of the Black-armored Demon God wearing his armor, ruling the world in battle.

However, the Black-armored Demon God was not a general in charge of the world, he was a demon that slaughtered all sentient beings. He was filled with the stench of blood and death!

As Yi Yun observed the Black-armored Demon God, he had converged all his aura. But even so, Yi Yun noticed that the Black-armored Demon God had suddenly opened his eyes at one point in time.

They were a pair of black eyes with a touch of crimson seemed like a ghostly fire in the darkness, emanating coldness in all directions.

The Black-armored Demon God definitely could not sense the Purple Crystal's presence, but the battle instincts of the Black-armored Demon God woke him up.

However... when he probed his surroundings with his spiritual energy, he did not discover a thing. With the Purple Crystal and the God Advent Tower's double protection, there was no way that he could discover Yi Yun.

Under these circumstances, even with the Black-armored Demon God's battle instincts, he eventually quietened down.

There was no way for him to stop his recuperating process just because of a feeling that suddenly appeared and that disappeared just as quickly.

He still had many things left to do.

And at that moment, Yi Yun was like a patient hunter, waiting high above the lake.

Through his energy vision, Yi Yun could see the Black-armored Demon God's energy flow clearly.

The Black-armored Demon God was indeed injured. The wounds left behind by the Sacred Spirit had not only injured his physical body, but it had also wounded his soul sea.

In the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea, Yi Yun could sense extremely chaotic spiritual energy, like his condition was extremely unstable.

Yi Yun was waiting... waiting for the critical moment in the Black-armored Demon God's recuperation.

Be it seclusion for breakthroughs or circulating their cultivation

techniques for healing, warriors needed an absolutely safe place. At times, they would even need people to protect them. This was because they could not be disturbed at a critical moment. If not, they would suffer the backlash of their energies. If it was any more serious, they might even suffer a Qi deviation.

Yi Yun was waiting precisely for that opportunity, allowing him to severely injure the Black-armored Demon God!

Time slowly passed as the bright moon set in the west. The eastern horizon suffused a glowing layer as the stars in the night sky dimmed. It was nearly dawn...

The Black-armored Demon God had already completely ignored that unknown sense of foreboding. He was completely immersed in his recuperation, and now, he was undergoing a critical step in his healing process. He was fixing the wounds in his soul sea, wiping out the chaotic energy flows from his soul sea bit by bit.

A human's soul sea was the weakest. Even the Black-armored Demon God was no different.

In the energy vision, Yi Yun spotted his chance as his eyes lit up!

Now was the time!

After waiting for hours, Yi Yun had constantly kept himself in peak condition. All his energy was poised to strike, all for this very moment.

His 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' circulated as his Yuan Qi exploded. His two powerful Aspect Totems, the Golden Crow and the Nine Neonate appeared in the sky.

For the strike after converging his strength for so long, Yi Yun did not use his sword, but instead, he used... the God Advent Tower!

Even if his strength improved greatly, Yi Yun was still unable to fully control the God Advent Tower. In a true face off, Yi Yun could not use the God Advent Tower at all. He would be like a three year old child waving a sledgehammer. It would be slow and it would be unable to strike anyone. It would also be extremely draining.

But now, to strike a fixed target, the God Advent Tower was most appropriate. The force of the entire God Advent Tower slamming down was much more powerful than the pure Yang broken sword.

Boom!

The God Advent Tower mercilessly came slamming down, collapsing the void.

There was a tumultuous explosion on the surface of the Yin lake, as endless amount of lake water flew up into the sky. The God Advent Tower kept falling straight down, slamming the Black-armored Demon God right at the bottom!

Yi Yun had used all his strength for this strike without holding back. He knew that he only had one chance to strike with the God Advent Tower! And if he fought with the pure Yang broken sword, it would be difficult for him to produce power of this scale again!

Chapter 722: Injuring The Demon God

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The pressure that came crashing down with the God Advent Tower fracturing the Yin lake. The lake's water brought with it unquantifiable amounts of mud and stone, surging in all directions. It formed a gigantic mud wave that had the power of the torrential tide.

It was a mystical land formation created naturally by the laws of Creation. The land itself was protected by Yin energy, but even so, soil was still soil. How could it withstand the God Advent Tower's strike?

Before the God Advent Tower reached the Black-armored Demon God, he felt a terrifying pressure surging at him!

The Black-armored Demon God was at a critical stage of his reclusive recuperation. With his existence greatly threatened, the Black-armored Demon God had to forcefully wake up despite being immersed in an ethereal state!

Oh!?

To be interrupted from his ethereal state, Black-armored Demon God was enraged but alarmed.

He abruptly opened his eyes, with his face having an unnatural

paleness to it. Instantly, he felt his energy backlash against him. But at this point in time, the tremendous danger he sensed forced him to ignore the chaotic spiritual energy in his soul sea.

He looked up and he saw the black bottom of the God Advent Tower crashing downwards. The wanton aura seemed to be a strike straight at his soul!

He was alarmed. This feeling...

It was a familiar feeling. An impact that he had once felt and feared deeply was embedded deep in his memories. Having been sealed for tens of millions of years had caused his mind to be a blur. Many things were nearly forgotten.

But now, that sudden sensation made him remember something.

That man and that woman!

And that pagoda! That sword!

Tens of millions of years ago, he had been suppressed by the divine pagoda, and pierced through by a sword. Now, that scene was repeating itself.

Although this feeling was much weaker compared to tens of millions of years ago, it still made the heavily injured Black-armored Demon God suffer from his chaotic soul sea!

The God Advent Tower strike at a hidden pain in his heart.

Roar! Roar! Roar!

The Black-armored Demon God let out a blood-curling scream, as he used all his energy to forcefully repress the injuries that his soul and body were suffering. As the entire lake exploded, he grabbed the black lance beside him!

Boom!

The lance pierced through the void. There was no energy fluctuation, but a surging 'force' came with this simple stab.

It was like the Heaven Earth Yin energy gathered by the nine Yin flood dragons was condensed together by the Black-armored Demon God's lance.

The lance and the divine pagoda clashed together without any gaudy display. The entire lake collapsed!

The God Advent Tower was forcefully stopped, and it was even sent backward!

Yi Yun's soul was directly connected to the God Advent Tower. The divine strength that the Black-armored Demon God had exerted was enough to cause his body to shudder. Yi Yun's organs

writhed, making him suffer internal injuries.

Terrifying!

Yi Yun turned stern. The Black-armored Demon God was too powerful. Despite striking him while he was recuperating, he was still able to withstand his God Advent Tower's attack!

"Who!?"

A horrifying voice erupted from the bottom of the lake. The already turbulent flow of water burst upwards once again with this roar.

Ever since the Black-armored Demon God appeared, he had only engaged in massacre after massacre. He did not speak a word, like he was a demonic lord who did not have any intelligence or emotions. But today, he spoke.

The ancient tones he used was very different to the language the present Tian Yuan world used.

It was a result of Yi Yun and the God Advent Tower's appearance that had awoken the memories buried deep in the recesses of his mind. It made him extremely agitated.

This ear-splitting voice resounded throughout the heavens and earth.

At that moment, Yi Yun could not care about his injuries. With a wave of his hand, he retrieved the God Advent Tower.

And almost at the same time...

"Boom!"

An explosion occurred at the Yin lake's opening, completely destroying it, as the barebacked Black-armored Demon God charged up. With a black lance in hand, his eyes were like an ancient desolate beast. Just looking into his eyes made one feel like one's soul would be injured.

"It's you!?"

The Black-armored Demon God spoke with a loud but succinct voice, which Yi Yun found difficult to comprehend.

He could sense that the Black-armored Demon God's voice was filled with alarm and disbelief.

The Black-armored Demon God knew Yi Yun, and that he was on his kill list. He had locked onto Yi Yun's position, but he had never expected Yi Yun to suddenly appear above the Yin lake, precisely locating the spot where he was recuperating.

And what was even more unexpected to him was that Yi Yun

actually had the God Advent Tower. That divine pagoda that was once held in the hands of that man in ancient times was now in Yi Yun's hands.

He was that man's successor!?

The Black-armored Demon God's eyes flashed with killing intent.
"Die!"

As he brandished his lance, he stabbed it straight at Yi Yun!

This attack didn't have any fanciful moves, but it caused space to lock up, preventing anyone from dodging!

However, Yi Yun was already prepared. He did not move, nor did he try to escape the sealed space. The God Advent Tower spun above his head before landing over him, enclosing Yi Yun within it.

"Boom!"

The God Advent Tower suddenly quaked as the Black-armored Demon God's lance stabbed it. The thunderous impact could crush mountains, but it did not leave a single mark on the God Advent Tower, leaving it flawless.

Although the God Advent Tower was unharmed, Yi Yun, whose consciousness was connected to it, still experienced a tremendous amount of force.

Even with the God Advent Tower protecting him, Yi Yun still felt his soul being injured. The intense force sent the God Advent Tower flying backward.

This suited Yi Yun's intentions, as he used the momentum in his favor as he controlled the God Advent Tower to fly far into the distance!

After his sneak attack, he immediately retreated.

Naturally, he did not plan to have a head on clash with the Black-armored Demon God. Every attack of the Black-armored Demon God was extremely terrifying. If they were to land on him, it would immediately tear him apart.

"Trying to escape?"

Seeing Yi Yun about to retreat, the Black-armored Demon God was enraged. With the lance in hand, he chased after Yi Yun.

However, at that moment, his body convulsed as his expression turned ugly.

As his body trembled, bloody cracks appeared on the muscles of his upper body. His body was about to crack!

However, as his body was cracking, his muscles were also

recovering as fast as the eyes could see.

He was injured.

He was originally in recuperation, and he had been sneak attacked by Yi Yun. He forcefully struck back, but his two attacks were fruitless. This greatly exacerbated his condition.

If he were to carry on chasing Yi Yun, his injuries would worsen.

And the crux of the matter was that Yi Yun had the God Advent Tower!

By hiding in the God Advent Tower, it was the best protection for Yi Yun.

However, the God Advent Tower was not invincible. Once the God Advent Tower's energy was drained of its energy, its protective arrays would turn ineffective. This would allow the Black-armored Demon God to enter the God Advent Tower and kill the hiding Yi Yun.

However, how could the current him drain the God Advent Tower's protective array of its energy?

The Black-armored Demon God's face turn ashen as he watched the God Advent Tower fly far away.

He split out a piece of his spiritual energy so he could tag the God Advent Tower.

The God Advent Tower was a treasure that the Azure Yang Lord brought from the 12 Empyrean Heavens. The moment it used its concealment array, the Black-armored Demon God would not be able to detect the God Advent Tower's presence.

He needed to confirm the location of the God Advent Tower.

However... just as his spiritual energy landed on the God Advent Tower, he felt a tiny prick in his soul sea.

Oh!?

He was astonished to realize that the connection between his spiritual energy and his main body had been severed.

That human had a way to deal with his spiritual energy?

Chapter 723: Seamless Body

After the spiritual energy was devoured by Yi Yun's use of the Purple Crystal, the God Advent Tower quickly disappeared from the Demon God's vision. And immediately after that, the God Advent Tower's concealment array was activated, and with that, Yi Yun and the God Advent Tower disappeared in thin air!

The Black-armored Demon God watched as the God Advent Tower disappeared. He could not detect the God Advent Tower despite extending his perception, making his face turn ashen.

His lips twitched gently. His muscles were still cracking and healing. As blood flowed out of the cracks on his flesh, and on the surface of his naked muscles, it did not coagulate. Instead, it was absorbed by his skin. It was like his flesh was like a sponge, never wasting a single ounce of blood or energy.

This sort of body was termed a Seamless Body. The 360 acupuncture points were cultivated perfectly, allowing him to freely absorb Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. Yet, not a single acupuncture point would let energy leak out. His body itself had no weakness, be it in terms of recovery and endurance, they were absolutely phenomenal!

In the Tian Yuan world, a Seamless Body of such quality had never been recorded in the historical books, as it was something that could not be trained. Even in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, such a body was the envy of numerous warriors.

"The God Advent Tower has appeared. It's that man's successor..."
The Black-armored Demon God said with a deep, low whisper while the muscles on his face were twitching violently.

Yi Yun's appearance made him feel that there was a crisis on his hands!

Such a crisis awakened some of his consciousness. It made a portion of his memories resurface from the depths of his mind once again.

"Ah!" The Black-armored Demon God suddenly held his head. The excruciating headache and the turmoil of his soul sea made the Black-armored Demon God experience even more pain than what his originally damaged soul sea was experiencing.

The Black-armored Demon God suddenly lifted his eyelids and he looked into the void with eyes turning crimson from the blood vessels exploding behind his retinas. It was like he was looking at the God Advent Tower despite being separated by space-time. His eyes were filled with killing intent.

It was that person from just now that brought him this pain!

"Kill!" The Black-armored Demon God repeated those words with his ancient tone.

Despite Yi Yun's disappearance, the Black-armored Demon God was unsure if Yi Yun would return or not.

And at that moment, he was seriously wounded. His soul sea was in chaos, and he needed immediate healing. If not, his condition would only become worse.

Although his Seamless Body did not allow him to lose blood or energy, for a Seamless Body to constantly repair his flesh and meridians, it required energy,

"Sou!"

The Black-armored Demon God's body sank downwards suddenly as he rushed back into the Yin lake.

"Splash!"

Water from the Yin lake flew upwards. What was previously less than a kilometer in radius had now been expanded to over five kilometer in radius due to the battle from before. And the water level of the lake had been greatly reduced.

Even so, the Yin lake was still connected to the land's Yin roots. Yin killing energy was gathered here and this was still considered to be a healing shrine for the Black-armored Demon God.

"He is injured too."

The Black-armored Demon God postulated that Yi Yun could no

longer power the God Advent Tower again, and he would not appear again.

Besides, Yi Yun did not have a Seamless Body, and he would need at least a day or two to recover. And in this amount of time, although insufficient for him to heal completely, it was enough for him to recover to 60-70%. That was enough.

With 60-70% of his strength, the Black-armored Demon God was confident that he could prevent Yi Yun from escaping.

Even if Yi Yun entered the God Advent Tower, he could also lock the God Advent Tower down.

Although the defenses of the God Advent Tower were a force to be reckoned with, once it was locked down, he could slowly drain the God Advent Tower's protective array, and when that happened, it was impossible for Yi Yun to escape.

The Black-armored Demon God was not fully awoken. His brain was filled with chaotic memories and thoughts, but the killing intent for Yi Yun was extremely clear.

The Black-armored Demon God released his 360 acupuncture points, connecting them to the land's nine Yin roots, and he began his recuperation.

And at that moment, thousands of kilometers away.

"Boom!"

The God Advent Tower smashed deep into a mountain's belly!

The God Advent Tower's concealment array automatically activated and completely concealed the hole that had been smashed open.

After that, Yi Yun sat in the cultivation chamber on the 5th level of the God Advent Tower. With his spiritual energy interfaced with the Purple Crystal, he made a perfect connection with Heaven Earth energy.

Phew—Phew—

Heaven Earth Yuan Qi flooded from all directions, and it swirled right into the Purple Crystal, forming a gigantic Yuan Qi vortex.

The God Advent Tower itself had an array that gathered Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, but no matter how powerful that array was, it was far inferior to the Purple Crystal Origins.

And a warrior in it was also limited in his ability to absorbing the energy gathered by the God Advent Tower.

However, with the Purple Crystal inside Yi Yun's heart, it could be said to be one with him. With the Purple Crystal, Yi Yun's body was even more perfect than a Seamless Body.

He could control every ounce of energy in his body. With sufficient energy provided to him, the injuries to his meridians healed rapidly.

Yi Yun entered an ethereal state as he felt every inch of his vessels and meridians. Every flow of energy harmoniously followed the Purple Crystal's laws. It was the truth of the Heavenly Dao.

Under such circumstances, in about six hours, Yi Yun had recovered about 80-90% of his strength.

It was enough!

The meditating Yi Yun suddenly opened his eyes.

He did not need to fully recover. The combat power he currently possessed was sufficient enough to power the God Advent Tower.

Again!

"Boom!"

The God Advent Tower broke through the mountain and formed a stream of light as it flew into the horizon.

Yi Yun used the same strategy and activated the God Advent

Tower's concealment arrays and the Purple Crystal. With the double layer of protection, not a single shred of his energy or aura leaked out. With that, he successfully arrived above the Yin lake.

Six hours was enough for the Yin lake to return to normal. To prevent himself from alerting the enemy, Yi Yun did not even use his energy vision to look at the Black-armored Demon God.

The Black-armored Demon God was extremely sensitive. The moment he was being peeped at, even if through the energy vision, it was something he could sense. He might have thought that it was an illusion the first time, but he would definitely not shrug it off this time.

Hence, Yi Yun only shut his eyes to concentrate. He slowly sensed the flowing killing Yin energy in the lands.

He instantly determined that the nine killing Ying energies were gathered in the central point beneath the Yin lake. Without needing to probe, Yi Yun knew that the Black-armored Demon God was located at the core.

For a powerful being like the Black-armored Demon God, he could only treat his wounds here.

Yi Yun flew out of the God Advent Tower, and like the last strike, he could use the God Advent Tower for his first attack and it was his only chance.

Buzz—

The God Advent Tower began spinning as Yi Yun's "Great Empress Heart Sutra" circulated to its limits.

Xiao—

Roar—

The roar of two distant ancient beasts echoed as the Golden Crow and the Nine Neonate charged out of Yi Yun's body, conjuring pure Yang Heavenly Fire and pure Yang Heavenly Thunder to fall from the sky!

One of the two divine beast totem was engulfed in heavenly fire, while the other was baptized in heavenly thunder!

Boom!

The God Advent Tower crashed down like the stars, creating a suppressive force!

With a powerful energy wave surging downwards, deep in the Yin lake, the Black-armored Demon God, who had recovered only about 30-40%, abruptly opened his eyes.

What!?

That familiar killing aura, that familiar Heaven Earth energy.

It's him again!?

The Black-armored Demon God was shocked. It had only been six hours. Yi Yun had also suffered from an energy backlash. But now, he could recover in such a short period of time, and attack once again. Yi Yun's recovery speed exceeded his Seamless Body!?

Chapter 724: The Demon God's Wrath

"Boom!"

Before the Black-armored Demon God could give it any thought, the God Advent Tower had broken through the lake's surface, stirring a tremendous explosion.

As immense hydraulic pressure repressed downwards, the bottom of the black pagoda was already thirty feet above the Black-armored Demon God's head.

"Roar!"

The Black-armored Demon God let out a deafening roar as the meditating him grabbed the black long lance beside him, and his joints issuing cracking sounds. He stabbed upwards with his lance!

"Dang!"

The sound of a horrifying collision echoed as the God Advent Tower was sent flying upwards by the Black-armored Demon God's single blow!

But at the same time, the Black-armored Demon God, who was in the midst of recuperation, was now suffering from his muscles being on the brink of collapse. Blood was spurting out as the huge impact caused him to sink deep to the bottom of the lake!

It appeared as if this Yin lake was bombarded by meteorites. Large amounts of mud, rocks and water evaporated due to the wanton energy. The Black-armored Demon God was pushed tens of meters deeper into the ground.

"Peng!"

The bottom of the lake exploded as the Black-armored Demon God charged out with disheveled hair and his lance in hand.

Having his recovery interrupted meant that the past few hours of meditation had been for naught!

The Black-armored Demon God appeared above the Yin lake, his eyes as red as blood while he was in a frenzied state!

He was extremely infuriated, but when he searched for traces of Yi Yun, all he saw was a tiny pagoda along the horizon. And in a split second, the tiny pagoda disappeared from his vision.

This time, Yi Yun had fled even faster. Yi Yun knew that he was no match even for a severely injured Black-armored Demon God. Hence, after his strike, Yi Yun immediately escaped. He would not even stay behind to see the results of his attack.

"Human!"

The Black-armored Demon God's long hair stood up like an enraged beast.

He was obviously much stronger than Yi Yun, yet, Yi Yun had chosen to strike him with his most powerful blow at the moment that he was healing his wounds. And he would immediately flee, ignoring the outcome of his efforts. All Yi Yun wished was to interrupt his recovery, letting him experience the backlash of energy. However, he could do nothing to Yi Yun despite him employing such a battle strategy.

This made him incensed.

However, Yi Yun was already long gone. Although the Black-armored Demon God was furious, he was in a dilemma as to whether to chase Yi Yun.

To him, Yi Yun was just a lowly being, even if he had inherited the Azure Yang Lord's heritage.

In comparison, the Azure Yang Lord... he was a great Empyrean Heaven's Divine Lord.

In the entire Yang God Empyrean Heaven, there were 72 Divine Lords, and the Azure Yang Lord was one of them!

Tens of millions of years ago, the Black-armored Demon God had been sealed by the Azure Yang Lord. For that, he had nothing to say. As the difference in strength was too great, being sealed was just an expected outcome.

However, Yi Yun was a human of a lower realm. He had, through some form of dumb luck, obtained the Azure Yang Lord's inheritance.

And despite obtaining a Yang God Empyrean Heaven Divine Lord's inheritance, this Yi Yun only used the God Advent Tower to launch sneak attacks. He did it time and time again, escaping after each strike, never to face him directly in battle. Such a combat strategy was disgusting and shameless.

If he were to chase Yi Yun, the Black-armored Demon God would have to pay a great price. He had not recovered from his wounds and he would expend his life force's essence. He had been sealed for tens of millions of years, and his life force essence had been greatly consumed. Although he had been engaging in mass slaughter in the Tian Yuan world, plundering the life force of those he killed... it was still insufficient!

Those lowly lives had equally weak life force and they were even impure. After refining away the impurities, there was not much left to replenish his draining life force essence.

"Boom!"

The Black-armored Demon God retreated back into the Yin lake. And at that moment, Yi Yun had returned to the mountain belly thousands of kilometers away.

He had suffered some injuries in this round of sneak attacks, but they were lighter than the last.

Controlling the God Advent Tower was still quite a considerable and difficult task for Yi Yun. It was like a child swinging a sledgehammer. The recoil from just slamming the hammer on an anvil would cause the child to feel numb in the arms and his blood surging.

Yi Yun grasped all the time he had and he used the Purple Crystal to recover his Yuan Qi.

The Black-armored Demon God remained vigilant. As he recuperated, he split a bit of his consciousness, causing his healing to slow down.

He was constantly probing the Yin lake's surroundings, and he did not fully focus on healing. But when he was distracted probing, Yi Yun would not come. And just as the Black-armored Demon God reduced his probing, and began the critical stage of healing his soul sea's injuries, Yi Yun appeared once again.

He seemed to have a special ability at perceiving things, by striking decisively at the instant that the Black-armored Demon God could not be disturbed!

It was the God Advent Tower again. It was another sneak attack!

Boom!

The Yin lake exploded, rocking the mountains.

This time, Yi Yun fled even faster. He did not even take a look and he fled far away.

Three consecutive sneak attacks allowed Yi Yun's control of the God Advent Tower and his familiarity with the Black-armored Demon God to increase.

This was also what allowed him to successfully finish his sneak attacks.

And such changes were apparently noticed by the Black-armored Demon God.

He felt that although this human was weak, he was like a little worm that was constantly harassing him, and from that, find a method to give him the most painful bite.

And it turned out, he was staying still at the same spot to cooperate with him!

These Yin roots collected the Divine Wilderness's Yin energy, and the Black-armored Demon God had not found a second place better than this land of recuperation. If he were to leave, the Black-armored Demon God would find it harder to restore his life force essence.

His sea soul was already in chaos, and he had been injured by the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit. Now, his essence was unstable, and it

was on the brink of collapse!

He had killed so many warriors in the Tian Yuan world, but the energy he had plundered was impure. All of that had little real effect!

If he could not stabilize his life force essence in one sitting, in the coming days, he will slowly be drained of his essential force. There will come a day when his life force essence was too weak, so weak that it could not support his powerful body, which will eventually result in his body cracking and falling apart!

A Seamless Body was powerful, but it needed a powerful life force essence to support it.

The Black-armored Demon God did not wish to leave, and he could not leave this spot because of a puny human. That would be an insult to his proud life.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The Black-armored Demon God roared with his ancient tone. The next time, he would make sure that the human was to come, but never leave.

He did not split his consciousness this time. But instead, he locked onto his surroundings with a thousand kilometer radius. He may not be able to detect the concealed God Advent Tower, but before it struck, it had to pool the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, and at

the same time, its concealment array would turn ineffective.

He had been at the critical moment of his healing the past few times, so not only was he slow to react, he had to risk the danger of an energy backlash. So it was very difficult to kill Yi Yun at the instant that Yi Yun conjured the God Advent Tower.

But now, the Black-armored Demon God decided to forgo his healing temporarily and concentrate on killing Yi Yun. This time it was different.

With his strength and his comprehension of the laws, he could tunnel through the void to arrive in front of Yi Yun at the moment he made his move. He could then deal Yi Yun a killing blow!

Chapter 725: Withering

The struggle between the Black-armored Demon God and Yi Yun had ensued as time passed. The Yin lake was the stage for the gamble, and the vast Divine Wilderness didn't have a single soul in thousands of kilometers. The battle between an ancient Demon God, and a new-age son of Heaven was staged in such a lonesome manner.

The Black-armored Demon God was originally Yi Yun's target for a sneak attack. But now, he had become the hunter. He was patiently waiting, waiting for his prey to appear.

However, his wait was far longer than what the Black-armored Demon God expected.

Dusk, going late into the night with stars filling the sky, till the moon set in the west, and the sun rose. A day and a night had passed.

Yet, Yi Yun had never appeared.

The Black-armored Demon God was still waiting. At times, he would feel pain from his chaotic soul sea. He had not recovered from his injuries, and his life force essence was gradually weakening. However, Yi Yun, who used to appear every few hours, seemed to have disappeared.

Even so, the Black-armored Demon God was very patient. He had managed to wait for tens of millions of years, so what was this tiny

wait?

He was like a black rock at the bottom of the lake, completely still and silent. In the dark bottom of the lake, only his eyes remained could be seen, emitting with a ghostly red glow.

And at that moment, above and away from the Yin lake, Yi Yun had already silently arrived at a spot less than five kilometers away from the Yin lake.

He was in the God Advent Tower, and the God Advent Tower was hidden in the void, not even leaving the slightest trace.

Yi Yun was similarly waiting.

He knew about the horrors of the Black-armored Demon God. In front of the ancient Demon God, he had nearly no capability to face him directly.

The Black-armored Demon God could suffer from his attacks time and time again, but for Yi Yun himself, the consequences would be disastrous if he were to be struck once by the Black-armored Demon God.

He could do things right a hundred times, but he could not make a single mistake. He had to be extremely cautious.

The three sneak attacks from before had always been chosen at the critical moment of the Black-armored Demon God's healing

process.

And to determine that instant, Yi Yun had used his energy vision. He had used the Purple Crystal's ability to sense Heaven Earth Yuan Qi.

Whenever Yi Yun noticed how the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi would surge towards the Black-armored Demon God's body, that was the best opportunity for him to attack.

And now, the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi flow had already slowed down. The Black-armored Demon God was not recuperating.

As such, there were only two possibilities. Either the Black-armored Demon God had stopped his recuperation and had laid an ambush for him, or the Black-armored Demon God was gone.

Would the proud ancient Demon God leave his healing shrine just because of an ant harassing him?

Yi Yun found it unlikely. Then, the most likely possibility was that the Black-armored Demon God was lurking at the bottom of the lake!

With the Black-armored Demon God prepared, the odds were against Yi Yun.

Yi Yun silently retreated from the Yin lake.

He chose one of the nine Yin roots and tunneled straight into it!

Boom!

The ground shattered as Yi Yun tunneled a few kilometers downwards. There was a gigantic underground Yin river that had biting cold water.

With these Yin roots gathered together, it formed an extreme Yin wonderland like the Yin lake.

The God Advent Tower soaked in the Yin river, and the arrays in the pagoda radiated a forcefield. As such, if the Black-armored Demon God came to attack Yi Yun would sense it and have enough time to react.

Yi Yun flew out of the God Advent Tower. As he strolled in thin air, he looked at the rolling Yin river with a smile suffused on his lip.

A wonderland deep in the Divine Wilderness was truly extraordinary.

The Black-armored Demon God was already prepared for a slaughter and he was waiting for Yi Yun to walk into his trap. And since Yi Yun that knew he was no match for the Black-armored Demon God, he began to machinate against the nine Yin roots.

Since ancient times, there were peerless mighty figures who could refine divine rivers into enchanted treasures. Yi Yun had seen similar records in the Azure Yang Lord's codex.

"Path to the Netherworld"! "Ghost maps"!

By refining the path to the Netherworld, and refining the ghostly rivers, they could become one's ultimate treasures.

Yi Yun did not possess the ability to deprive the world of its power. But to refine these nine Yin roots, it was something that he believed he could do.

The nine Yin roots were part of the pure Yin laws. Although Yi Yun focused on pure Yang laws, the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' was itself a mystic codex that combined Yin and Yang as one.

Yi Yun cultivated the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' together with Lin Xintong, so he already had sufficient understanding of pure Yin laws.

"Black-armored Demon God, since you are recuperating in this Divine Wilderness wonderland, I'll refine these nine Yin roots of yours. I'll adopt full measures against you and see how you are going to recuperate then."

With Yi Yun stretching out his hand, a stream of frost Yin energy gathered in his hand, eventually condensing into a strange piece of dead wood.

This block of dead wood did not have any luster, and it looked like it would fall apart from decay at any moment.

This was the Death Soulwood that Yi Yun obtained from the Pure Yang Sword Palace.

This block of Death Soulwood was originally an ancient enchanted tree that had lived for so long that no one knew how old it was. Due to a Demon God dying on the tree, the demonic blood that flowed out of the Demon God splattered on the enchanted tree, corroding it, finally reducing it to this piece of dead wood.

Back when the Pure Yang Sword Palace obtained this piece of deadwood, he had given it to an Artisan God, hoping to create an enchanted treasure out of it. But he was met with a rejection with the reason being "decayed wood cannot be carved".

Although it was said that "decayed wood cannot be carved", it did not mean that it was useless, and because the special laws and concepts contained in the enchanted piece of wood were too valuable. Any carving or refinement would destroy the concepts within.

The Death Soulwood's value far exceeded the Thousand Snow Domain that Yi Yun obtained and it was simply invaluable.

It would be difficult for Yi Yun to use this treasure against enemies, but it had many spectacular uses.

Such as now...

The moment the Death Soulwood appeared, Yi Yun's aura changed.

Half a year ago, Yi Yun stayed in the Pure Yang Sword Palace to seek Dao enlightenment. He had transformed into a Dao Tree's Dao leaf himself, personally experiencing the Dao leaf's life, from its germination to growth to withering.

When Yi Yun withered from the branch stem, he had gained insights into his own Dao.

And as a gift from the Dao Tree, Yi Yun had sensed that Dao leaf, which withered alongside Yi Yun's withering.

Now, with the Death Soulwood in hand, Yi Yun slowly displayed the deepest concept that he had gained from the Pure Yang Sword Palace — Withering Concept!

Yi Yun chose the Death Soulwood not because of its great value, but because its concepts matched him the best.

Withering, ruin, decay... the flourishing and faltering of plants, the separation of people through death. Every being had the moment it would wither, nearly impossible to escape from samsara and destruction.

Yi Yun had been practicing martial arts for more than a decade. He had learned the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', gained insights in the Sword and Saber Tombs, cultivated in the 'Myriad Beast Totem', entered the Pure Yang Sword Palace and obtained the inheritance of the God Advent Tower.

The nomological insights and cultivation techniques throughout his martial path far exceeded the standards of the Tian Yuan world. To this world's warriors, just gaining a tiny bit of insight to the cultivation techniques that Yi Yun cultivated in was enough to set them for life.

But for Yi Yun, what he cultivated was insufficient.

This was because... despite these cultivation techniques, canonical manuals, laws being absolutely amazing, they had something in common. That was... that they were all created by someone else.

If he walked down the path of others, no matter how well he did, he would at best reach the height that others had previously attained. It would be hard for him to breakthrough, and conquer himself.

Only by walking down a path that he created himself, and understanding a new Dao for himself would he be able to reach that abstruse, true peak of martial arts.

Chapter 726: The Land Withers

As Yi Yun was suspended above the Yin river, he gently touched the textured surface of the Death Soulwood.

The aura of Withering and Death twirled between Yi Yun's fingers. It was like he saw the lush, verdant appearance of this enchanted tree back when it stood between the Heaven and Earth.

It went through numerous days, with other plants flourishing and faltering. Yet, in just a single night, it withered and died as a result of being covered in demonic blood. It was like it had seen through the luxuriousness of the world, seeing through the years of vicissitudes, and then finally, extricating itself from all of that.

A life of flourishing ended with withering overnight. This was the Dao that the block of wood eventually formed.

The Death Soulwood flew out from Yi Yun's hands and it slowly sank into the Yin lake.

It happened without a sound, nor was there a single ripple.

The concept of withering emanated, allowing itself to be carried by the river flow.

The withering of a tree was like the death of humans, and the drying up of rivers.

The Death Soulwood began to absorb the Heaven Earth Yin energy that flowed through the Yin river.

However, despite absorbing so much Yin energy, the Death Soulwood remained dead and silent.

In contrast, the Yin root was drying up at a speed that the naked eye could notice.

As the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi decreased, it was slowly truncated.

Comparatively, for a divine item at the level of the Death Soulwood, severing a Yin root in the Divine Wilderness was just too simple.

One source of the Yin lake's energy had now disappeared. What was once nine Yin roots was now eight.

With the use of the Death Soulwood and the concept of Withering, Yi Yun had forcefully caused this Yin root to wither and dry up.

The withered Yin root transformed into a black wisp of air that tossed and turned in the air, like a small flood dragon.

With a wave of his hand, Yi Yun put the black flood dragon in the Death Soulwood.

This black flood dragon may be an embodiment of the Yin root, but it did not contain much Heaven Earth Yin energy. It was more a concept and law.

If Yi Yun extracted all the Heaven Earth Yin energy at once, the Black-armored Demon God would quickly discover it. However, if the concept and law was extracted, then on the surface, the Yin root might not have any changes as the Heaven Earth Yin energy in the Yin lake was still as dense as before.

However, what Yi Yun had done was equivalent to removing the naturally formed array runes of the Yin lake's array formation. Without its essence, the drying up of the Yin roots was just a matter of time.

After Yi Yun kept the Yin root, he entered the God Advent Tower and he flew to the next Yin root without any delay.

He planned to draw in all the nine Yin roots, and refining them into the Death Soulwood.

Maybe, these nine Yin roots could form an array formation in the Death Soulwood.

Array runes and array concepts were part of a law itself. As long as one comprehended the law, one could control the world as an array.

And at that moment, deep at the bottom of the Yin lake, there

was no change despite the disappearance of the Yin root.

This Yin lake was formed from the world's power of creation. It was the product of tens of millions of years of accumulation. The nine Yin roots were like the nine pillars of support of the Yin lake. Severing one root would not have disastrous consequences, unless all of them were severed, only then would the Yin lake collapse.

And at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God had long severed his connection with the Yin lake so he could concentrate on the incoming sneak attack by Yi Yun, stopping his recuperation.

The Black-armored Demon God was not familiar with the concept of Withering. The gaps between laws were like hundreds of thousands of mountains separating them. Furthermore, with his perception with the Yin lake severed, the Black-armored Demon God had no way of sensing what Yi Yun was doing, nor would he know that the nine Yin roots around him were withering and drying up

Yi Yun's non appearance became a competition of patience for the Black-armored Demon God. He breathed slowly and evenly. His body would constantly produce tiny cracks that slowly healed. He was like a timeless stone structure that was completely silent.

For the Black-armored Demon God, who was used to spending tens of millions of years, a few days of wait was just like a blink of an eye. He had the sufficient patience.

The Yin lake remained calm, while Yi Yun had silently arrived at

the second Yin root.

Taking the Death Soulwood out once again, he slowly extracted the second Yin root's law and concept.

These nine Yin roots were independent, but at the same time, they were interlinked. The combination of the nine Yin roots formed a large array formation that gathered the Heaven Earth Yin energy.

Yi Yun extracted one root after another, but he did not incur any changes in the Heaven Earth Yin energy.

And the Black-armored Demon God was still waiting in the heart of the Yin lake. It was like he had become one with the Yin lake, preventing one from telling them apart.

As Yi Yun took root after root away, the Heaven Earth laws were gradually changing, but it did not present any qualitative changes.

If Yi Yun were to stop at this point, the Yin roots he had extracted would still not recover. And in hundreds of years, this large array would gradually dry up and eventually disappear.

Finally, Yi Yun arrived at the final Yin root.

This Yin root was like a blood vessel of the land, and it was also the last blood vessel left in this vast piece of land.

"Death Soulwood, go!" Yi Yun conjured the Death Soulwood.

After absorbing so much Yin energy, this enchanted piece of wood had a tiny change in appearance.

The moment it was conjured, the Yin root seemed to freeze. The smell of death lingered, slowly devouring the Yin root.

With the final Yin root being extracted, it was equivalent to the complete collapse of the Yin lake's nine pillars!

The Heaven Earth array formed naturally by the law of Creation crumbled!

"Oh?" The Black-armored Demon God suddenly opened his eyes as a red beam of light flashed past his eyes.

He sensed the ground rumbling

What had happened?

Suddenly, the mountains and rivers quaked. The entire Yin lake began to dry up quickly to the naked eye. Even the surrounding plants were withering along with it!

The Heaven Earth Yin energy was dissipating rapidly.

The Withering concept emanated as it radiated in all directions!

The nine Yin roots' withering caused the vast piece of land to also wither with them!

If humans or desolate beasts were to die, their blood would become dry and their flesh would decay. Even their bones would eventually return back to the earth.

But for the death of a piece of land, the river flow and spiritual veins would dry up. The life of this piece of land would be exhausted, and any plant that was rooted in this piece of land would wither.

"Oh!?" The Black-armored Demon God suddenly stood up. The Yin lake had already dried up beneath his feet. The ground was rapidly drying up and splintering, with cracks appearing at the bottom of lake.

What happened!?

The Black-armored Demon God was alarmed as he rushed out of the withered Yin lake. He emanated his perception around him, connecting himself to the nine Yin roots.

Suddenly, he was dismayed to see that the nine Yin roots had been completely severed.

The Yin roots had withered from within. This excellent healing shrine was finished.

It was that human!? What did he do!?

How could the Black-armored Demon God expect Yi Yun to have an enchanted piece of wood like the Death Soulwood? He was also unable to understand the mysterious concept of Withering that Yi Yun had.

A Withering concept was sufficient enough to make the nine Yin roots to wither, and cause the land to wither together with them.

The concept of Withering was extremely rare. This was a Dao that Yi Yun managed to figure out completely by himself. It was a Dao that the Black-armored Demon God had no idea about!

Hence, the Black-armored Demon God had no way of sensing it when Yi Yun had made all of this happen!

Chapter 727: Patience

This was the first time that the Black-armored Demon God was in such a rage ever since he had woken up after tens of millions of years. When he slaughtered thousands of lives in the Tian Yuan world, he always did so in a deadpan manner. This was because those lowly life forms were not worthy of stirring his emotions at all.

But now, because of Yi Yun, the Black-armored Demon God had suffered setbacks and had become frustrated.

While consecutively attacking three times, Yi Yun had grasped the perfect opportunity and chose the points at which he was weakest, at the moments where he could not be disturbed, preventing him from using any of his strength!

As for the fourth face-off, the Black-armored Demon God had even given up treatment, and he had dedicated himself to hunting Yi Yun, but he was only met with such a bizarre outcome.

All the nine Yin roots had been extracted by Yi Yun, and the Black-armored Demon God only had a rude awakening of this fact in the final moment.

A proud life form like him had been hoodwinked by such a lowly human!

The Black-armored Demon God's chaotic soul sea was churning as his eyes emanated a cold killing aura!

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The Black-armored Demon God let out an angry roar as the land trembled, causing landslides and killing beasts and birds! These lives could not withstand the concepts that the Black-armored Demon God's angry roar contained. The moment they were struck by the Black-armored Demon God's killing aura, their bodies disintegrated into a mess of flesh and blood!

The Black-armored Demon God hovered midair, as his disheveled hair fluttered. He had his lance in his hand, while numerous bitter-looking faces appeared on his armor. It was like they were about to tunnel out of the armor. These suffering souls were the warriors that the Black-armored Demon God had killed and sealed. Only those warriors with sufficient strength were qualified to be sealed in the Black-armored Demon God's armor. Amongst them was Shentu Patriarch.

As the blood aura emanated and killing aura diffused, the Demon God's wrath caused the sky to change color!

Yi Yun, who was in the God Advent Tower, immediately felt a strong surge of pressure!

At that moment, Yi Yun was a huge distance away, more than five thousand kilometers. But, he could still sense the remnants of the Black-armored Demon God's might.

At the instant that Yi Yun extracted the last Yin root, he

immediately entered the God Advent Tower and retreated far away.

He knew deeply that by destroying the Black-armored Demon God's healing shrine, it was equivalent to forcing the Black-armored Demon God out. This way, the Black-armored Demon God would definitely want him dead.

As Yi Yun controlled the God Advent Tower, he converged all energy fluctuations and activated the God Advent Tower's concealment array. He quietly hid in the void.

As for Yi Yun himself, he held the Death Soulwood in his hand and shut his eyes.

There were nine tiny, black flood dragons twirling around the Death Soulwood. These were the Yin energy laws that Yi Yun had extracted.

Sensing these nine Yin energy hovering around the Death Soulwood, Yi Yun suddenly had a feeling that this Death Soulwood would also mature alongside him, becoming a powerful treasure of his.

Unfortunately, the Death Soulwood was still too mystical for him at the moment. Although he had relied on the Death Soulwood and used the concept of Withering, he still could not gain the true intent of the Heavenly Dao contained in the Death Soulwood.

And now, after absorbing the Yin energy laws, the Death Soulwood's aura became even more profound. It was like taking a few more looks at it would cause one's consciousness to sink right in it. Once someone was immersed in the Death Soulwood, their life would be gradually drained, and by the time they realized that they would already be mostly on the brink of death.

The Death Soulwood was a strange wonder. It was now slowly harmonizing with Yi Yun, and other than Yi Yun himself, no one could hold the Death Soulwood in hand. That would only cause their life to rapidly drain.

Yi Yun concentrated on comprehending the Death Soulwood and refining the nine Yin roots. He was in no hurry to engage in a showdown with the Black-armored Demon God.

The outcome he wanted was to harass the Black-armored Demon God time and time again, attacking when he least expected it, causing the Black-armored Demon God to become more and more irritated and crazy so that he would not have time to recuperate.

When his soul was extremely chaotic beyond measure, while he slowly matured and gained strength during the battles, he would be able to face the Black-armored Demon God eventually.

However... The proud Demon God would not allow Yi Yun to repeatedly provoke him...

In the eyes of the Black-armored Demon God, Yi Yun was just a lowly life form. Not only had he hoodwinked him, he even dared to

hide in the vicinity, enjoying his reactions.

"Die!"

The Black-armored Demon God brandished his lance forcefully. Instantly, the sky changed color once again, as mountains exploded, splitting the land apart and rocks tumbled! The Land spanning thousands of kilometers immediately flipped! The Demon God's enraged strike was enough to destroy the lands and shock everyone!

In the God Advent Tower, Yi Yun turned stern when he sensed the Demon God's wrath.

Despite being thousands of kilometers away in the God Advent Tower, he could still sense the surging aura. The energy fluctuations were still tremendous despite the distance. However, Yi Yun only quietly endured the surging energy and he did not activate the God Advent Tower's arrays to withstand the blow of the energy wave.

If the surging energy was to be reflected by the God Advent Tower's defensive arrays, just a tiny amount would allow the Black-armored Demon God to sense it.

For an existence at the level of the Black-armored Demon God, every ounce of energy he radiated was tied to himself. This attack he sent out was a probe to find Yi Yun.

This secretly alarmed Yi Yun. He knew that the Black-armored Demon God was very strong, but Yi Yun did not expect that despite him being injured, his attack could still destroy large swaths of land spanning thousands of kilometers. The Black-armored Demon God was trying to locate his position from the reflection of his radiating energy.

This technique gave him quite a shock.

After the Black-armored Demon God struck, the muscles on his body began to split, causing blood to flow out of them. This not only made the Black-armored Demon God look extremely pathetic, it also made him look more terrifying!

As he looked at the void around him, the Black-armored Demon God's eyes turned cold and furious.

His large scale attack failed to find the God Advent Tower, let alone Yi Yun.

He knew that the human was definitely hiding. Even if he continued attacking despite his injuries, the human would ignore it. He could even deactivate the God Advent Tower's arrays, and let the surging energy pass through the God Advent Tower. Even if he was slightly injured, he would not appear either.

So crafty, yet timid like a mouse!

The Black-armored Demon God gripped his lance tightly. That

weak human was maddening. He had never encountered such an opponent that dealt his cards in an erratic fashion. He was also extremely careful and he did not reveal any flaws. He was extremely shameless in his martial arts and character!

Why did the wild and intractable, yet proud Azure Yang Lord, choose such a wretched person as his successor!?

The Demon God scanned his surroundings coldly. Suddenly, he locked his gaze in a particular direction.

That direction... the Black-armored Demon God remembered that he had locked onto a Desolate race girl who had the bloodline of someone from the 12 Empyrean Heavens, and he had also locked onto Yi Yun.

Yi Yun and that Desolate race girl were in once place, and appeared to have a close relationship.

The Black-armored Demon God was extremely prideful. He did not want to have a confrontation with a lowly life form here, and be continuously teased by that lowly life form.

His wrath naturally would be born by someone.

The Black-armored Demon God looked in that direction as a sinister smile suffused on his lips.

Let me see if you can continue hiding in silence after I kill that

Desolate race girl and everyone in the Desolate race!

Chapter 728: Blood Aura Covers The Sky

The Black-armored Demon God's killing intent melted into a blood mist that locked onto the Divine Wilderness as it emanated throughout the world.

When the Black-armored Demon God used all his strength, just passing above those weaker desolate beasts was enough to cause their bodies to explode, turning into mangled bloody messes. Powerful primordial strains lay prostrate on the ground as they trembled.

This was the huge difference that came from the difference in life's natural order. In front of a life form of the Black-armored Demon God's level, they did not even dare look up.

Boom!

This was the sonic boom the Black-armored Demon God emitted when he was flying. It was tumultuous like thunder, and with a sudden boom, he would disappear into the distance.

And in the God Advent Tower, Yi Yun, who was prepared to receive the Black-armored Demon God's second attack's aftermath, frowned.

Heaven Earth Yuan Qi... The surrounding Heaven Earth Yuan Qi had been suddenly drained. It had formed an air current and it was directed in a particular direction in the distance.

It was the Black-armored Demon God!

"Has he given up on me?" Yi Yun sensed that the Black-armored Demon God had left. The extremely fast speed that he was traveling at and his powerful aura were enough to sweep away all the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, causing this region to nearly become a vacuum.

Yi Yun felt that something was amiss. The Black-armored Demon God would not give up so easily.

Such a proud life form would smash any puny life form that had angered him.

However, the Black-armored Demon God had indeed left. He did not conceal his departure. The mighty Demon God did not need to be bothered to use such means to trick Yi Yun out.

However, for the Black-armored Demon God to leave at that moment, could it be...?

Yi Yun's breathing stalled as he felt an ominous feeling.

Oh no!

Yi Yun immediately controlled the God Advent Tower and flew back above the Yin lake. The land, that was formerly a land of

death, was now in ruins.

From the cracks that dived deep underground, a red mist surged out. It was the Demon God's killing aura. This place was not only a land of death, it would soon become a land that no living creature would approach in the future.

Yi Yun had no time to sigh as he looked at his surroundings.

The land had been ravaged. A scorch mark on the land extended into the distance.

And in the sky over where the trail led, there was a bloody line. It was piercing to the eyes and it looked like a tidal wave that was rolling far away.

Killing aura!

That was the manifestation of the Black-armored Demon God's killing aura. In the Tian Yuan world, wherever the blood cloud arrived, it was the arrival of a massacre. Whenever people mentioned the blood cloud, their expressions would drastically change as they would tremble without fail.

The blood cloud represented the Black-armored Demon God in the Tian Yuan world. It was an indication that he was about to begin his massacre.

And that direction...

Yi Yun's pupils constricted as he felt his a heavy blow on his heart!

That was the direction of the area where the Desolate race was hiding. It was where Jiang Xiaorou and Lin Xintong were!

The Black-armored Demon God had not given up. He had only turned his spearhead and diverted his killing intent to Jiang Xiaorou!

The Black-armored Demon God had already locked onto Jiang Xiaorou. He had made her a target, and now, as retaliation against Yi Yun and to make him appear obediently, he decided attack Jiang Xiaorou immediately!

The blood cloud seemed to cover the sky, extending hundreds of thousands of kilometers. And wherever the Black-armored Demon God passed, the land beneath it would be ravaged, a wipeout of all life. Under such circumstances, it no longer mattered if there was a spiritual lock or not.

The Black-armored Demon God's pressure seemed to envelop the entire Divine Wilderness. As he proceeded forward without any resistance, no matter how the Desolate race hid, they would not be able to escape from the Black-armored Demon God.

"Black-armored Demon God!" Yi Yun immediately activated the God Advent Tower as he stared at the red line along the horizon. He followed it at an extremely fast speed!

The God Advent Tower's speed was pushed to the extreme by Yi Yun. It issued a screeching sonic boom midair. The powerful airflow tore apart trees and sent soil splashing.

The God Advent Tower pierced through the chaotic aura and continued flying forward!

Hurry! Faster!

Compared to the Black-armored Demon God's full speed, Yi Yun was still slower!

And at that moment, in the Desolate race's territory.

Panshi was an elite warrior of the Desolate race. He happened to be on duty today.

The Divine Capital had 18 elite squads patrolling at every moment in time. He led one of those squads.

And today, there was nothing different.

Panshi and his Desolate race warriors were riding desolate beasts and they arrived at the top of a hill.

He first looked far into the distance. The Divine Wilderness was filled with endless mountains and was silent.

Then, Panshi looked at the ground and quickly scanned through it.

Suddenly, a disdainful smile appeared along the corners of his mouth.

It was those humans...

Upon Yi Yun's return, he had rejected the Human race's request in their negotiations. These members of the Human race were beginning to leave.

Now, Panshi was seeing the first human group leave.

They had chosen a direction and they were slowly entering the Divine Wilderness.

After the negotiations failed, the Human race did not obtain anything from the Desolate race. The expressions of their legendary figures had turned purple from Yi Yun's sarcasm.

However, not every member of the Human race planned on leaving.

Amongst the Human race, there had their differences. A group of humans was led by the Sanctuary Island couple, who had decided to fight alongside the Desolate race.

Most humans feared the future reprisal of Yi Yun and they also feared the desolate beasts in the Divine Wilderness. Although they were inclined to leave, they found it hard to make up their minds.

A final small group of people, which was those who were determined to leave, believed that staying behind to resist the Black-armored Demon God was just sending themselves to their deaths.

Instead of dying now, they might as well risk the danger and leave. At least, there would be a chance.

In front of Panshi was the humans who were eager to leave the Desolate race.

From their point of view, due to Yi Yun's willful act, the Desolate race was doomed. They naturally did not wish to stay here any longer, sacrificing their lives along with the Desolate race.

As for Yi Yun... These people were now wishing that Yi Yun could deal a severe blow to the Black-armored Demon God before he died.

These people probably accounted for a fifth of the total number of humans. The others were still hesitating or planning. Be it evacuating or fighting to the death, there was a need for a plan.

These people who were in a hurry to leave were led by Mystic

Tiger Immortal. With him leading these elites, traversing the Divine Wilderness was not too big a problem.

Amongst all the humans, Mystic Tiger Immortal was the one who hated Yi Yun the most. He had lost face and suffered humiliation, so he naturally wanted to leave early.

Panshi saw these people look back at the Desolate race's campgrounds. Their eyes were filled with a look of schadenfreude like they were looking at a bunch of people that were about to die.

"Those people are really infuriating!" A Desolate race warrior said angrily.

Panshi said nonchalantly. "It doesn't matter. Let them leave. Our life and death battle does not need those people anyway."

"Indeed." The other Desolate race warriors nodded.

They watched as the humans left.

"If we leave in this direction, we can put a distance between us and the Desolate race campground and Yi Yun. When the Black-armored Demon God attacks, we will be hiding in the Untraversable Sea," said Mystic Tiger Immortal.

Yi Yun had threatened to demolish his family clan's power and kill all his descendants. Hence, by bringing away all the elites, Mystic Tiger Immortal wanted to see what Yi Yun, who had to

fend for his life, could do.

As they entered the Divine Wilderness, the Desolate race campground was left far behind them.

At that moment, a young disciple of a large faction looked up into the sky and suddenly narrowed his eyes slightly.

He seemed to see a red line that had appeared on the horizon.

Chapter 729: Mystic Tiger Immortal's Death

"What's that?"

The young disciples were momentarily dumbfounded. At that moment, many others had discovered the red blood line on the horizon, including Mystic Tiger Immortal.

And that red line was expanding at an alarming speed.

"What is it!?"

Everyone was alarmed. Their eyes widened in a split second, that red line had become a red cloud that enveloped them. And in the rolling red clouds, a pair of cold, red eyes was casting its gaze down at them!

"Black-armored Demon God!"

Mystic Tiger Immortal was overwhelmed by terror!

Why... why was he so fast!?

Mystic Tiger Immortal was completely dumbfounded. From the moment the negotiations failed to their decision to leave, only two to three days had passed.

They had to plan their evacuation route and made preparations

needed for evacuating, afterwhich they gathered their people. It was already considered quite fast.

Yet in such a short period of time, the Black-armored Demon God was here!

Wasn't he still recuperating?

For an existence the level of the Black-armored Demon God, he had a powerful life force, but as such, he would require a relatively large amount of energy to heal.

In just two or three days, he had finished recuperating and come to kill?

Where was Yi Yun? Where did Yi Yun go?

Mystic Tiger Immortal was about to go crazy. He was almost about to leave the remote mountains. He was just a few steps short. However, just these few steps had become a natural cliff that was impossible to cross!

The Black-armored Demon God was too fast. Although Mystic Tiger Immortal was a few realms higher than his family's disciples, he had failed to discover the Black-armored Demon God any earlier than them.

The difference was too great! In front of absolute strength, Mystic Tiger Immortal and his family clan's disciples were no

different to powerless mortals.

They were all easily overcome, too weak to withstand a single blow!

Why did this happen!?

Mystic Tiger Immortal felt his body turn cold. Escape? It was too late!

A deep feeling of despair flashed in his heart. The geniuses around him had pale faces and their bodies were frozen stiff! With the blood cloud above them, the pressure was immense. This was not just fear of death, but the result of an instinctual fear of the Demon God who was a life form several levels higher than them.

As the blood cloud towered above them, their bones began to emit cracking sounds as they failed to withstand the pressure. The ones with weaker cultivation levels were already bleeding from all of their orifices!

The Black-armored Demon God's cold gaze swept over them.

He did not even stop. All of them were like ants that did not matter to him.

The Desolate race's camp was just in front, and Jiang Xiaorou was in there.

He first wanted to kill Jiang Xiaorou and then slaughter the Desolate race.

As for these ants, there was no need for him to do a thing. As long as he flew past them, the immense pressure that resulted from the blood cloud would be enough to slaughter a large number of them!

As for those who were lucky to survive, the Black-armored Demon God could not be bothered to care about them. He did not mind letting them rejoice over their survival.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the blood cloud rolled over, this group of humans died tragic deaths due to the blood cloud's pressure!

As long as they were below the Yuan Opening realm, no matter if they were a peerless genius or at the peak Dao Seed realm, they all perished!

These so called elites and proud children of heavens of large family clans had been attended to by numerous people during times of peace. Now, they had all exploded into mangled messes of flesh and blood under the indomitable pressure!

It took an instant to go from an elite to a mangled mess!

Although the young geniuses died tragically, Mystic Tiger Immortal had survived. He was a human Empyrean King and although he was greatly inferior to the Black-armored Demon God, he would not be reduced to a mangled mess from just the pressure.

Other than Mystic Tiger Immortal, there were a few Elders of the Mystic Tiger family clan who had survived as well.

The pressure had just swept past them. Although a large number of people had died tragically, they had managed to survive and they felt disbelief.

And at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God had already flown past their heads, and he did not seem to have any intention of stopping.

The Black-armored Demon God was sparing them?

They were pleasantly surprised. They had managed to avoid death!

However, at that moment...

Oh!?

The Black-armored Demon God suddenly stopped and his eyes swept past Mystic Tiger Immortal.

With a large number of humans dead, Mystic Tiger Immortal and the remaining survivors naturally stood out. And even though the Black-armored Demon God did not plan on paying attention to this bunch of ants, he now noticed them.

He looked at Mystic Tiger Immortal, causing his heart beat to turn stagnant. He did not even dare to move.

This human...

As the Black-armored Demon God had failed to recuperate, his soul was still in chaos. However, he had an impression of this human. Back when he locked onto Yi Yun, this person was beside him.

The Black-armored Demon God did not know the details of the negotiations between Yi Yun and Mystic Tiger Immortal, nor did he even care about it. However, he knew that this person had been in the same room with Yi Yun, then it must mean that he was closely related to Yi Yun. And even if they were not closely related, they had to at least know each other.

And for the Black-armored Demon God, he hated Yi Yun so much that anyone related to Yi Yun had to die.

The Black-armored Demon God's eyes locked onto Mystic Tiger Immortal and he stabbed his lance at him!

Seeing the lance expand in his pupils, the tremendous pressure

and horror caused Mystic Tiger Immortal's Yuan Qi to seemingly freeze.

Mystic Tiger Immortal widened his eyes in despair. He had just sensed that the Black-armored Demon God seemed to ignore them. If that was the case, they would have temporarily escaped this disaster.

But he never expected the Black-armored Demon God to turn his sight on him the very next moment. And his eyes were filled with rage!

The Black-armored Demon God always killed people with a cold expression. What did he do to incur the Black-armored Demon God's wrath?

Mystic Tiger Immortal had no time to think. In front of the Black-armored Demon God's true strength, he could only bellow and attack with all he had... Pu Chi! The lance stabbed through Mystic Tiger Immortal's body like he was made of paper! As for Mystic Tiger Immortal's attack, it had failed to cause any obstruction to the Black-armored Demon God.

Around Mystic Tiger Immortal, those Elders who had luckily survived screamed in unison. Just the aftermath of the blow caused them to explode into a mist of blood, not even leaving them with a complete corpse.

Boom!

A horrific burst of energy exploded. Not a single member of this first batch of escaping humans had survived under the Black-armored Demon God's lance!

Only a few people, including Mystic Tiger Immortal, retained remnants of their consciousness.

And these soul remnants and consciousnesses were grabbed by the Black-armored Demon God with a single grab.

Mystic Tiger Immortal's soul condensed into a spiritual soul halo, and Mystic Tiger Immortal's face emerged from it. He had a twisted expression, looking extremely painful.

The Black-armored Demon God waved his hand with a deadpan expression and directly absorbed the souls of Mystic Tiger Immortal and the other Elders of the Mystic Tiger family clan into his armor.

Inside the armor, Mystic Tiger Immortal's face emerged. He was in pain and he had a ferocious expression, with a look of disbelief.

And this scene was witnessed by Panshi and company at the top of the hill!

It was not accurate to say witnessing, for all of that had happened in the blink of an eye.

The previous moment, the blood cloud that filled the sky rolled

over, and in the next moment, the Black-armored Demon God's lance had pierced through Mystic Tiger Immortal!

Panshi and company stared with their eyes widened. Their bodies turned cold like they were icicles.

Before they could react, the Black-armored Demon God was already looking at them!

Chapter 730: The War Bugle

The stern and horrific eyes seemed to be able to kill people with just a look!

Facing the Black-armored Demon God, Panshi only felt two boiling streams of liquid flowing down the sides of his face. It was blood. His eyes had already been burnt by the surge of the Black-armored Demon God's killing aura.

The Demon God's power was not something that anyone could lay their eyes on!

Sou!

The Black-armored Demon God moved, and flew over Panshi and company. As the billowing blood cloud descended, the mountains collapsed!

The desolate beast under Panshi let out a wail before it burst, its body disintegrating!

The blood that was flowing slowly looked blurry to Panshi as he stood in the pool of blood. He raised the spear in his hands high up while trembling.

He knew that there was no way for him to escape. There was no need for the Black-armored Demon God to do a thing against them, as they would be killed by the pressure of the blood cloud. Many

humans much stronger than them had died in such a manner.

Since he knew he was going to die, Panshi did not want to meaninglessly end up like a pile of rotten meat. He only wished he could strike out once, burning his soul as a warrior in the process, so he could die gloriously in battle!

Panshi could barely make out the Black-armored Demon God passing overhead.

Boom!

Like a resounding thunder, it rang in his ears.

In that the instant the Black-armored Demon God passed by, the world collapsed. Everything as far as Panshi could see and hear collapsed.

Panshi's body was completely frozen.

His spear was lifted up, but he had failed to stab it.

Panshi's life force had completely disappeared. His flesh was crumbling, leaving his armor and skeleton standing there. His eye sockets were now empty, and his soul had dispersed. A white bony hand could be seen grabbing a spear tightly. The spear tip was pointed in a particular direction, with a cold sparkle on it, seemingly frozen for eternity.

Up to his death, Panshi's mouth only managed to open slightly. However, he failed to make a sound, almost shouting that sentence he wanted to shout so badly—

The Demon God is here!

Behind Panshi, those Desolate race warriors had also exploded!

However, their deaths were not meaningless.

Although Panshi wanted to attack, even before they began their patrols, they already knew that in front of the Black-armored Demon God, it was impossible for them to have any chance of struggling.

Their patrol was not meant to discover the Black-armored Demon God in advance and send warning signals. Instead, it was meant for them to use their flesh and blood to ignite a burning flame... at the cost of their lives.

More than ten flames lit up.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha!

In the Desolate race's campgrounds, a row of Life Slips amongst the thousands of life slips suddenly shattered at the same time!

The former Desolate Queen suddenly opened her eyes.

These Life Slips were spiritually connected to her mind. As such, she was immediately notified about the shattering of the Life Slips.

The former Desolate Queen's heart tightened.

Wu—!

A simple but bleak bugle could be heard echoing throughout the Desolate race campground.

This bugle would only be blown for one reason. There was only one thing that it represented.

The Black-armored Demon God is coming!

The war bugle!?

Throughout the remote mountains, all the Desolate race members, regardless whether they were resting or patrolling were alarmed when they heard the sound. They all rushed towards the Desolate race Palace.

In the days before, the Desolate race had gone through countless drills.

This time, although they were alarmed and nervous, they did not panic.

"He's here... That was fast. I wonder how Young Master Yi is." The Sanctuary Island couple couple, who were meditating, opened their eyes. The woman sighed. This battle was most likely one that would be a life and death separation for them, or even one that might kill them both.

However, since the couple had made their decision, they would not regret it.

"Dong'er, let's go."

"Alright."

The couple held each other's hands and flew towards the Desolate race Palace. Alongside them, there were large numbers of human warriors. To die in battle in a barren place like the remote mountains was equivalent to dying outside their homelands, but they had no choice at this point in time. It was all for the continuation of their families.

The former Desolate Queen arrived at a hall. At that moment, the hall was empty except for Jiang Xiaorou, who was sitting quietly under a Skyfox sculpture. And not far away from her, Shepherd Boy was also sitting on the ground, watching over her.

Inside the Skyfox sculpture was the sleeping Sacred Spirit of the

Desolate race.

When the former Desolate Queen entered the hall, Jiang Xiaorou had already opened her eyes. "Mother."

"The bugle has sounded... "

The former Desolate Queen looked at Jiang Xiaorou's calm but determined face, and felt her heart ache.

"Yes." Jiang Xiaorou nodded gently. The Sacred Spirit was still sleeping after being wounded. When the Black-armored Demon God approached with all his strength, it had sensed the tremendous danger and had forcefully woken itself up from its slumber.

The Black-armored Demon God's pressure locked onto the Divine Wilderness, and the Sacred Spirit itself was a single entity with the Divine Wilderness lands. This was the final showdown between two ancient existences.

Thinking back to her worship at the divine bone altar many years ago, with the Sacred Spirit acknowledging her, it was like that had happened yesterday. Jiang Xiaorou sighed. The sacrifice that was destined was a reluctant choice for her.

"Yun'er... Nothing bad must happen to you... " Jiang Xiaorou whispered before standing up. Her brightly colored dress opened up like a blooming rose.

Yi Yun had taken the initiative to strike at the Black-armored Demon God and he had gone searching for him. But now, the Black-armored Demon God was approaching with immense murderous momentum.

Jiang Xiaorou's heart was cold. She felt trepidation, but at that moment, as the Desolate race's Queen, she could not think about those things. This was a battle with the life and death of the Desolate race on the line.

When Jiang Xiaorou walked out of the hall, her emotions had returned to normal.

Jiang Xiaorou's behavior made the former Desolate Queen relieved.

Having no fear and being totally calm was indeed characteristics that proved that she was her daughter. Only then could she be supported by the Desolate race, and obtain the acknowledgment of the Sacred Spirit as Queen.

"Yun'er will be fine." Jiang Xiaorou muttered to herself once again. She said it with a firm tone, like she was exhorting herself.

Yi Yun had promised her, and he always fulfilled whatever he promised her.

Just at the moment Jiang Xiaorou said that sentence, her eyes

looked past the palace. Across the palace's square, all the way to the horizon, there was an endless killing intent emanating there...

"He is here." Jiang Xiaorou said.

The patrol team that sacrificed themselves was only a few thousand kilometers away from the Desolate race's campground. This distance was one that the Black-armored Demon God could cross in an instant.

Jiang Xiaorou's long hair flowed backward. She looked exquisite and alluring. But now, outside the hall, the sky was filled with blood clouds.

The blood clouds had arrived in an instant, enveloping the entire Desolate race campground!

After hearing the bugle, people had just managed to rush over to the palace from their residences.

Yet by the time they arrived, they saw that the blue sky above their heads had gone.

The blood cloud was as thick as blood plasma, like it would drip down at any moment.

Those legendary figures and Desolate race Empyrean Kings began forming Yuan Qi shields, protecting the weaker geniuses in it.

But even so, the geniuses felt their blood and Qi turn chaotic the moment that the blood cloud descended. Many of them were shivering. Against a Demon God that could destroy everything, the young them were just too insignificant.

Chapter 731: Demon God Successor

Weng!

Outside the Desolate race palace, a translucent hallowed membrane spread out rapidly like a gust of wind, blowing everything away.

Even the red cloud that covered the sky was torn apart by the hallowed membrane and it was weakened.

It was the Desolate race's protective array. With this array, the desolate race could withstand the Black-armored Demon God's pressure.

As the array was activated, the blood cloud began to surge. The true battle had yet to begin, but the sky had already changed colors.

The Black-armored Demon God was inside the cloud!

Everyone saw a stocky man in heavy armor and a lance in his hand. He stood on the top of the blood cloud, like a god that ruled the world.

He was indomitable and invincible. Under his pressure, people felt their backs turn cold. His cold eyes seemed to be staring at every single one of them.

"That was too fast. We haven't even made any plans on what to do yet... "

A group of humans, who were inclined to escape the remote mountains, but had not made the decision, were currently feeling lost. They thought that they still had the time to consider, but they never expected the Black-armored Demon God to suddenly appear.

Now, the entire Desolate race campground was locked onto by the Black-armored Demon God. Regardless of where they escaped to, it would be a dead end. They could only bite the bullet and prepare for battle.

Facing the Demon God's dominance, against the repression from the difference in life's natural order, people had their Yuan Qi suppressed, like any movement would result in them being instantly killed!

Even in the Desolate race's array, this feeling was unavoidable!

At that moment, the sound of intricate and gentle footsteps could be heard from the palace. The heavy palatial doors opened automatically as Jiang Xiaorou approached it. Following that the red-dressed Jiang Xiaorou appeared with her black hair from inside the ancient hall. A desolate and ancient aura seemed to linger around her.

Jiang Xiaorou held a bone staff in one hand, while her back was straight. Every step she took was slow, but she still walked out of the hall with determination.

"You... "

The Black-armored Demon God's gaze locked onto Jiang Xiaorou!

An intense pressure surged over, engulfing Jiang Xiaorou!

It was well-known how terrifying the Black-armored Demon God's pressure was. Typical young elites would burst into a mangled mess of flesh and blood the moment they came close to his pressure.

As for Jiang Xiaorou, she managed to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's gaze.

Jiang Xiaorou was strong, but compared to a freak like Yi Yun, or human Empyrean Kings, she was much weaker. Logically speaking, she would not have been able to look so calm under the Black-armored Demon God's gaze.

However, she was exceptionally calm. She wore a red dress with wide sleeves, a black tasseled belt, and had no makeup, except for two dark red highlights that flared towards the ends of her eyes. Every blink of her eyes seemed to open a window to a star-filled universe, but she also seemed like a glamorous yet cold Skyfox.

When typical warriors felt repressed by the Black-armored Demon God, it was a result of their bloodlines and the difference in life's natural order. But for Jiang Xiaorou, the blood that flowed in

her body was a powerful bloodline that came from the 12 Empyrean Heavens. With the support of her bloodline, it allowed her to remain calm in front of the Black-armored Demon God.

"Good!"

The Black-armored Demon God grinned and spoke with an ancient tone. Only very few Desolate race Empyrean Kings, who knew of the ancient language that aged tens of millions of years, could understand.

"For me to lock onto you, it was because of your bloodline. I originally wanted you to be my successor."

"With such a bloodline, you were born to fight. Unfortunately, you were born in this barren land. It is alright even if you are currently so weak. The potential of your bloodline is immense. Wasting two or three decades do not matter. As long as you sever ties with this weak race, you will become the strongest war spirit under me, killing for me and conquer the 12 Empyrean Heavens!"

The Black-armored Demon God's words resounded throughout the world. The Desolate race Empyrean Kings, who understood this ancient language, were all dumbfounded with shock!

Become the Black-armored Demon God's successor!?

So the reason why the Black-armored Demon God had originally locked onto Jiang Xiaorou was not to kill her, but because he eyed

her bloodline. She wanted Jiang Xiaorou to become his successor!

This... was too shocking!

Many people looked at Jiang Xiaorou. Be it the Desolate race or the Human race, they were weak lowlives like ants to the Black-armored Demon God. However, the Black-armored Demon God had placed such great importance on Jiang Xiaorou.

"Make your choice. Follow me, and I will provide you great power, but... to express your sincerity, you have to slaughter these two lowly races. Agree, and you will become the strongest war spirit. Disagree, and I will destroy you!"

The Black-armored Demon God's tone was ferocious. As he had been angered by Yi Yun, when he first came to the remote mountains, he had planned on annihilating Jiang Xiaorou.

But now, after seeing Jiang Xiaorou withstand his pressure directly, her powerful bloodline made his chaotic and mad soul sea calm down. He felt it was too much a pity to destroy Jiang Xiaorou.

Jiang Xiaorou did not understand the Black-armored Demon God's ancient words, but the Sacred Spirit had conveyed the meaning behind his words.

Her eyes scanned the crowd and suddenly, she raised her head towards the sky. With that, she also raised the bone staff in her hand.

Wu—!

A wind rose up!

A sudden gust of wind blew around the area. Although the pressure that everyone was feeling did not reduce, they felt the ground beneath their feet thicken. Although the pressure was intense, they were still able to stand firmly.

This is...

Everyone looked at Jiang Xiaorou and they noticed that behind her, a gigantic Skyfox phantom image had appeared!

This Skyfox cast its eyes on the world. Every strand of fur that it had was the size of a small tree. It had six tails and it seemed like a divine fire that reached out into the skies, dancing and burning.

Sacred Spirit!

It was the Sacred Spirit!

The moment that the Desolate race warriors saw the Skyfox appear, they felt their fighting spirit boil. The fear they had, and how they lacked confidence when facing the Black-armored Demon God was immediately reduced greatly.

The Sacred Spirit was with them. The gust of wind was because the Sacred Spirit had made its move!

The Desolate race's Sacred Spirit was already seriously wounded. It could not even appear with its actual body. It could only reside in Jiang Xiaorou's body, using her body as a vessel for its combat strength!

Only Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline would allow the Sacred Spirit to leverage its strength to the maximum.

With the bone staff in hand, Jiang Xiaorou pointed it at the Black-armored Demon God. The tip of the bone staff flickered wantonly with a cold beam.

And at that moment, Jiang Xiaorou was augmented with the Sacred Spirit's powers. Her strength and aura was enhanced without any limits. She was like a towering mountain whose peak could not be seen. Although she couldn't be compared to the Black-armored Demon God, she was able to withstand the blood cloud. For the young geniuses of the Desolate race and Human race, she held up the sky!

This strength...

As everyone looked at Jiang Xiaorou, they were startled, even if they knew this was the power of the Sacred Spirit.

However, other than Jiang Xiaorou, none of them could

withstand the Sacred Spirit's augmentation.

This was a terrifying girl. If she managed to survive this disaster, her future was limitless.

"Hahahaha!" The Black-armored Demon God suddenly laughed hysterically. He suddenly brandished his lance as the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi five thousand kilometers around him began to flow crazily because of his motions.

"It seems that that is your answer. You have rejected me. Fine! Do you think that you can use a tiny spirit fox from the Sinkhole to resist me? A tiny fox, that grew up in this abandoned world, and only experienced two Heavenly Tribulations, is not even worthy to be my mount!"

Boom!

At that moment, the blood cloud in the sky tumbled and billowed.

The Black-armored Demon God looked at Jiang Xiaorou and grinned with a sinister smile!

"I'll kill you now. Although it's a pity, but drinking your blood will heal most of my injuries!"

Chapter 732: Snow Lotus

Not many could understand the conversation between the Black-armored Demon God and Jiang Xiaorou, but from the transmissions between the legendary figures of the Desolate race, they got to learn the contents of their conversation.

The content was alarming to them.

The Black-armored Demon God was currently the Tian Yuan world's strongest warrior and he was unrivaled. He killed Empyrean Kings like he was cutting through grass. What sort of scene would it be if one became the Black-armored Demon God's successor?

Not only that, the Black-armored Demon God had also mentioned a place that they found alien. The 12 Empyrean Heavens!

Very few of the legendary human figures had seen any mention of this place in books. It represented a wider world, a world with higher martial arts.

However, everyone knew that with the Black-armored Demon God's savage personality, he would not be considerate to a disciple he took in. The war spirit he mentioned probably was to make Jiang Xiaorou his weapon, one that would fight only for his sake, and with no other thoughts.

However, the other choice would then be death. Besides, it was a death that the Black-armored Demon God would personally

execute.

Right in front the Black-armored Demon God's pressure, whose heart wouldn't feel a sense of trepidation?

The Black-armored Demon God's aura grew stronger as Jiang Xiaorou took a deep breath. Her aura also rose another notch as the Skyfox phantom image behind her suddenly rose up into the sky, facing the Black-armored Demon God on the same level.

The Sacred Spirit's cold pair of eyes were identical to Jiang Xiaorou's. It was the embodiment of the Sacred Spirit, and it was also a manifestation of Jiang Xiaorou's will, it was one with Jiang Xiaorou.

"Since you want to drink my blood, then come get it!" Jiang Xiaorou's voice was clear as it resounded through the world, clearly entering everyone's ears!

"Hahahahaha!"

The Black-armored Demon God erupted into laughter. His voice was cold and cruel and it shook the world, constantly echoing. People immediately felt their eardrums hurting and all their blood turned chaotic like their bodies were about to burst open.

Those legendary human figures began injecting greater amounts of Yuan Qi into the protective shields, but they were only able to withstand a portion of the terrifying pressure. Even they

themselves shuddered from the laughter and had their Yuan Qi suppressed.

It was too terrifying. Jiang Xiaorou and the Black-armored Demon God's terrifying momentum were wantonly facing off each other. One stood on the ground, while the other stood in the clouds. The clash of their aura emitted numerous lightning sparks that seemed to tear through the world.

"Then die!" The Black-armored Demon God's killing aura was released. Ever since he awoke, he had met two arrogant people. One was Yi Yun and the other was Jiang Xiaorou.

Amongst these two, one was insidious and crafty by sneakily attacking him, while the other did not know what was good for herself and thought too highly of herself, and dared to reject him.

These two people were going to be killed by him!

Accompanying his roar, the lands suddenly trembled. Outside the Desolate race's protective array, mountains began rupturing as boulders started crashing down!

The moment the roar echoed, the Black-armored Demon God's lance was suddenly stabbed towards Jiang Xiaorou. Immediately, the blood cloud in the sky swirled and a violent wind howled, the heaven and earth seemed to be compressed together.

It was just a simple lance, but at this point, in everyone's eyes,

this lance was infinitely huge. It was like it was the only thing that existed in the world and it was looming over their heads.

Without being able to dodge, let alone withstand it, how could humans stand up to something that resembled the forces of nature?

The Human race geniuses involuntarily trembled under such an impressive show of force. They had no doubts that the residual power of the Demon God's lance was enough to instantly turn them into smithereens. They would be left without bodies and their souls might even be destroyed in the resulting storm.

Even the legendary human figures found it bleak. With such a powerful Demon God, even if they were to join forces, how much change was possible?

He was too powerful, there was no way to beat him!

"Roar!"

Against the Demon God's attack, the Skyfox Sacred Spirit behind Jiang Xiaorou issued an angry growl.

The mighty sound waves dispersed the Black-armored Demon God's roar!

At the same time, Jiang Xiaorou lifted the bone staff and gently waved it at the Black-armored Demon God.

Her actions looked very gentle, but at the same time, the Skyfox Sacred Spirit behind her was moving its six tails, gathering the Power of Desolates and using the power of the Divine Wilderness, it struck out at the Black-armored Demon God's attack!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The land trembled! Distant mountain peaks crumbled instantly!

This was simply the most extreme show of force. This erupting power and Jiang Xiaorou's gentleness formed a strong contrast, yet they strangely merged together.

"Bam!"

The first clash between both parties resulted in remnant shock waves instantly flattening the ground around them. What were once mountainous regions were now forcefully flattened into plains!

The world changed colors!

It was blocked!

Before people had any time to react, the Black-armored Demon God had already struck a second time with his lance.

The terrifying energy collision twisted space itself, as the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was already extremely chaotic.

The Black-armored Demon God's second strike was still in full force, one that could destroy the world.

As the Black-armored Demon God laughed boisterously, his boldness mounted as the battle progressed.

His body had already fractured into tracks of wounds, with blood seeping out of them wantonly.

However, the flowing of this blood did not seem to weaken or slow his attack. Instead, it stimulated him to become even crazier.

He had not recovered from his injuries, and this was all due to Yi Yun's harassment and sneak attacks. But it was alright, even if he was injured, annihilating the Desolate race and Yi Yun was more than enough!

It was impossible for these lowly life forms to put up a struggle in front of him!

Boom!

The Skyfox Sacred Spirit suddenly turned ethereal, and Jiang Xiaorou's face turned pale.

The Sacred Spirit was unable to hold on!

Members of the Desolate race felt their hearts tightened as their expressions changed.

The Sacred Spirit was originally seriously injured. It had forcefully woken itself up, and it was barely sustaining itself.

Under the Black-armored Demon God's ravaging attacks, it suffered a relapse from its injuries and it quickly approached its limits.

The Sacred Spirit was old. It had lived for tens of millions of years, and it could not undergo its third Heavenly Tribulation, so it was already approaching its death.

The legendary human figures felt their hearts sink.

The Sacred Spirit wasn't able to hold on anymore?

"Where's Yi Yun? Where did Yi Yun go?" Someone asked.

Although they thought of Yi Yun as a huge threat, the Human race was accustomed to relying on Yi Yun, even if their logic told them that against the terrifying Black-armored Demon God, even if Yi Yun appeared, nothing would change.

"Yi Yun went to search for the Black-armored Demon God prior

to this. Now with the Black-armored Demon God here, Yi Yun has yet to return." A legendary human figure said.

They were informed of the news prior to this.

What?

Yi Yun went searching for the Black-armored Demon God? And now with the Black-armored Demon God here, did Yi Yun fail to find him? Or was he already...

People did not dare to think any further. Why did he search for the Black-armored Demon God before this? Wasn't that simply courting death?

...

"Hahahaha!" The Black-armored Demon God could not stop laughing. He could sense the Sacred Spirit weakening. If this carried on, in just a while, he could kill Jiang Xiaorou.

The Black-armored Demon God aimed at Jiang Xiaorou's head and ruthlessly stabbed once again.

"Die!"

However, at that moment, a fleeting series of shadows flashed. A stunning sword beam, as cold as the luminous moon, like a

blooming snow lotus, stabbed at the Black-armored Demon God silently.

Boom!

The Black-armored Demon God immediately sensed it as he instantly pulled back the lance that he had stabbed towards Jiang Xiaorou!

Ka Ka Ka!

The lance did not strike that figure, but instead, it struck a closed snow lotus bud.

This snow lotus clashed with the lance and immediately bloomed. Instantly, frost Qi surged out, and the frost crystals quickly traversed down the lance!

Chapter 733: God Confining Lock

"It's Lin Xintong! Lin Xintong has made her move! Is she attacking the Black-armored Demon God alone?"

Seeing the snow lotus appear, people already knew that it was Lin Xintong.

Previously, when everyone faced the Black-armored Demon God, there was no need to even mention taking the initiative to attack because just withstanding his killing aura was extremely difficult for them. However, Lin Xintong had single-handedly attacked the Black-armored Demon God with her sword.

Was she sick of living?

Whew!

Lin Xintong stabbed with her sword. This was an attack that contained everything she had. All her laws, concepts and insights were in that attack.

The snow lotuses were pure and flawless. The petals were crystalline, and they were condensed from all her martial efforts to date.

Lin Xintong's original target was directed at the Black-armored Demon God's back, where his heart was.

However, the Black-armored Demon God's reaction was just too fast. He could change his posture and move at anytime he wanted despite attacking with all she had. With a sweep of his lance, he struck Lin Xintong's sword.

"Peng!"

The sword vibrated vigorously as the ice crystals shattered, melting into rain. All of Lin Xintong's protective Yuan Qi quivered intensely, as numerous cracks began forming.

"Xintong!"

Not far away was the Lin family and when they saw this scene, their hearts nearly stopped beating. Matriarch Lin's face was pale as her hands trembled.

Lin Xintong was the hope of their Lin family. Even if the entire upper echelons of the Lin family died, Lin Xintong was not to die.

"Ka-cha!"

The snow lotus protecting Lin Xintong also exploded, as ice crystals scattered in all directions. After it struck the Black-armored Demon God, it shattered completely, but it failed to do him any harm.

Lin Xintong's attack was to save Jiang Xiaorou. Even though Jiang Xiaorou was augmented by the Sacred Spirit, she was unable

to withstand the repeated assaults by the Black-armored Demon God.

"You want to die in her place? Fine, I'll grant you your wish!"

The ice crystals on the Black-armored Demon God's lance were still spreading to the point that his hands were covered in ice. However, he did not care, and he instead revealed a sarcastic smile.

He knew that the white-dressed female in front of him had an important relationship with Yi Yun.

Anyone with ties to Yi Yun was to die!

He wanted to see Yi Yun grief-stricken, and then kill Yi Yun after that. The Black-armored Demon God was fully confident about his speed. He believed that even if Yi Yun noticed his departure at the first moment of notice, he would only be met with a pile of corpses even if he charged here at full speed.

"Go to hell!"

With the lance in hand, the Black-armored Demon God stabbed his lance at Lin Xintong's heart.

This strike was without any gaudy display, nor did he use any Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. It was just a simple stab, yet, everyone knew that this strike contained a horrifying 'momentum' that was indomitable!

If it wasn't for Lin Xintong, the other legendary human figures would probably be bearing the brunt of this momentum, with their bodies completely crumbling.

"Peng!"

At that instant, Lin Xintong's protective Yuan Qi shattered into droplets of lights. Her body had lost all protection!

In front of the Black-armored Demon God, even stars could be crushed, let alone flesh?

Yet, at that moment of definite doom, Lin Xintong indifferently lifted her sword, and stabbed it straight at the Black-armored Demon God's throat without any fear!

A death blow just before her death?

Everyone seeing this was stunned. People felt pity just as the lance was about to hit its target. Even the hostile factions against Yi Yun did not wish to see Lin Xintong die. As for the upper echelons of the Lin family, their hearts seemed to have shrunk from worry.

The Black-armored Demon God's physical defense far exceeded any weapon. Lin Xintong's deathblow would definitely not harm him, and instead, if Lin Xintong were to be stabbed in the heart by the lance, it would spell certain death for her. No one was able to

withstand the Black-armored Demon God's frontal attack!

Guaranteed death with a single strike. There was no other way about it!

At that split instant, just as people could only watch helplessly as the lance stabbed at Lin Xintong...

Weng!

Heaven Earth Yuan Qi exploded, as the endless blood cloud in the sky was penetrated. Twelve golden beams of light shot down from blood cloud.

The golden beams' speed was extremely fast, and nearly instantly, they flew at the Black-armored Demon God's body.

Ka Ka Ka!

The Black-armored Demon God's body and lance were all twined around by the beams of light!

People managed to clearly make out that the twelve golden beams of light were actually twelve chains!

The golden chains, about the thickness of a baby's wrist, had penetrated the blood cloud, allowing the rays of the sun to illuminate the chains, making it blindingly bright.

Ancient runes on the golden chains began to emerge, like they were dictating an ancient Order, one that was able to seal demons and lock gods!

This chain was...

People were alarmed, and at that moment, before they could give it further thought, Lin Xintong's sword had already stabbed at the Black-armored Demon God's throat. As for the Black-armored Demon God's lance, it was completely bound by the chain's Order!

Cha!

The sword pierced through. The Black-armored Demon God's skin was extremely tough, and he managed to use just his muscles to withstand Lin Xintong's strike!

The immense impact caused the soft sword to bend, and as for the Black-armored Demon God's throat, it had only been stabbed by just a bit before the sword could no longer proceed!

A few drops of the Demon God's blood flowed out, staining the cold sword blade red.

A cold beam flashed in Lin Xintong's eyes, with frost Yin energy exploding from her sword. Lin Xintong had already circulated the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' to its limits. Through the Black-armored Demon God's tiny wound, extreme Yin energy surged

right into his body!

"Pa! Pa! Pa!"

A few drops of the Demon God's blood froze into red gems. Even the Black-armored Demon God's wound had begun freezing. However, beneath the Black-armored Demon God's red eyes there was a grin.

"God Confining Lock? I never expected that you would secretly set up the God Confining Lock formation array that allowed you to appear so fearless. It looked like you were seeking death yourself, but you managed to save that red-dressed girl and injured me after that."

As the Black-armored Demon God looked at Lin Xintong, his entire body was trapped in the God Confining Lock, and it did not seem like he could move.

This array...

The legendary human figures were amazed seeing how it suddenly appeared to trap the Black-armored Demon God.

God Confining Lock array? What array was this? Where did the Desolate race obtain this array from?

The moment that this array was activated, it seemed like the world was resounding with sacred murmurs of chanting, that even

reduced the pressure that the blood cloud gave to the people. The God Confining Lock array had not only trapped the Demon God, it had even sealed the Demon God's terrifying strength, killing aura and Yuan Qi in his body.

This feeling was extremely apparent, and it astonished many people.

Ever since the Black-armored Demon God had appeared, the Human and Desolate race had always been repressed. This counterstrike, seemed... to be able to temporarily stop the Black-armored Demon God!

In fact, when Jiang Xiaorou was possessed by the Sacred Spirit, and at the moment that Lin Xintong made her move, the God Confining Lock was already being secretly cast. It was activated by the former Desolate Queen, Shepherd Boy and many legendary Desolate race figures.

This array left behind by Yi Yun was the greatest thing that these legendary Desolate race figures would rely on to resist the Black-armored Demon God.

Jiang Xiaorou and the Sacred Spirit had appeared to fight together, not to achieve any outcome with the Black-armored Demon God, but to give them time to activate the array.

The Black-armored Demon God had arrived too soon, which meant that they had no time to prepare.

However, Jiang Xiaorou and Lin Xintong's attacks gave the time for the array to be successfully activated!

Between the Heavens and Earth, shimmering golden chains that looked like they sprouted out of the Heavens and Earth, chained up the Black-armored Demon God's four limbs!

Chapter 734: Redoubtable Strength

"To my surprise, you actually have this array formation." The Black-armored Demon God said with a deep voice.

The God Confining Lock array could be traced back to ancient times.

The so-called ancient times was not tens of millions of years ago, when the Azure Yang Lord fought the seven Demon Disciples, it was an era even further back. It was back when the mighty figures of each race in the 12 Empyrean Heavens fought the ancient Ancestor God.

Back then, each race gathered more than a hundred mighty warriors and set up the God Confining Lock array, resulting in 3000 God Confining chains to shoot out. Even the Heavenly Dao itself could be temporarily sealed.

That was what a true God Confining Lock was.

But now, the God Confining Lock used by the Desolate race was a simplified version, and of course accordingly, the simplified version of the God Confining Lock array's operating requirements were lower. If not, it would not be something that the members of the Desolate race could operate.

"What a waste of a heavenly treasure. If such an array formation were to be placed in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, it would be extremely precious. What a pity. With a bunch of trash like you,

how are all of you able to allow this array to display its greatest strength?" The Black-armored Demon God said with a sneer.

As he spoke, his joints cracked as his muscles swelled up. Blue veins began to appear all over his body like crawling earthworms.

"Pa! Pa! Pa!"

Many cracks began to appear on the Black-armored Demon God's muscle as blood spewed out!

His injury-ridden body did not seem like it could withstand his redoubtable power.

Every time he used his energy, it was a major depletion of the Black-armored Demon God's life force essence.

However, he did not mind. He allowed his blood to flow as he laughed maniacally.

Lin Xintong felt her heart palpitate. Retracting her sword, she quickly retreated backward!

"Ka-cha!"

The golden chain that twined around the Black-armored Demon God's lance suddenly snapped, causing golden light to spew wantonly which was followed by a thunderous explosion!

The Black-armored Demon God managed to free his lance, as the remaining energy shattered the void.

This amount of force was horrifying. If Lin Xintong had retreated any slower, she would probably be seriously injured or even dead.

He broke through just like that!?

The legendary human figures, as well as the legendary Desolate race figures who were powering the array were all alarmed.

This array was so profound and the Black-armored Demon God had even said that the array formation was extremely precious even in the 12 Empyrean Heavens. Yet, such an array formation failed to completely trap the Black-armored Demon God?

A pale Jiang Xiaorou looked at the Black-armored Demon God as her gaze turned weak.

"Ha!"

The Black-armored Demon God roared as the remaining eleven chains vibrated. The runes on the chains flickered rapidly. They lit up and dimmed at times, like they were about to rupture at any time.

The Black-armored Demon God held his lance in one hand, and

forcefully pulled with the other hand!

A terrifying power was transmitted through the eleven chains!

Boom!

Heaven Earth Yuan Qi surged in all directions as the energy that the Black-armored Demon God injected into the chains exploded. The land trembled as the Desolate race Palace sunk deeper, and it looked like it was about to collapse!

A few legendary Desolate race figures were thrown out of the four corners of the palace. All of them looked pale, like they were suffering from internal injuries.

The God Confining Lock's array disk emerged in the Palace's core, flashing occasionally with golden runes.

The runes' power flowed through the eleven chains, but the chains had not been broken yet!

However, despite the God Confining Lock not being completely broken apart, the legendary Desolate race figures that powered the formation had been forcefully pulled out, and they looked extremely miserable.

"Hahahaha! Trash!" The Black-armored Demon God looked at the miserable state of these legendary figures as he laughed maniacally.

Upon seeing this scene, the glint in Lin Xintong and Jiang Xiaorou's eyes dimmed.

The Human race and the Desolate race could not help but shudder, especially those legendary Desolate race figures who had been pulled out. They could feel the deep sense of helplessness and powerlessness.

He was too strong. Even if he was confined by eleven chains, the Black-armored Demon God still remained unrivaled!

He was able to be so arrogant because he had the means to do so. There were numerous mighty figures present here, all warriors that stood at the pinnacle of the Tian Yuan world. But at that moment, even if they all joined forces, they would still be no match for an injured or even imprisoned Demon God!

There was no way of obtaining victory. Under the current circumstances, the Demon God was still as terrifying as ever!

Many people felt their hearts turn cold.

But at that moment, two figures suddenly flew forward.

These two figures came from the Human race.

After that, a few figures joined the two figures and flew into the

sky.

"It's the Sanctuary Island couple!"

"It's our Seniors!"

The Human race geniuses exclaimed in unison.

The Sanctuary Island couple held hands while hovering midair. They silently looked at the Black-armored Demon God.

A few other legendary Human race figures also stared straight at the Black-armored Demon God.

The corners of the Black-armored Demon God's mouth suffused a sneer. "There are more who are sick of living?"

With the caliber of these people, the number that stood forward were the number who died.

Although the Black-armored Demon God was still trapped by the eleven chains, his lance was already freed. From the way he freed himself and brutally pulled the legendary Desolate race figures out, it was obvious that nearing the Black-armored Demon God was still suicidal.

So what if the legendary human figures attacked, what could they do?

The Black-armored Demon God did even bother with them. As long as he continued freeing himself from the remaining eleven chains, he could slaughter everyone including Jiang Xiaorou and Lin Xintong. He wanted to use their blood to dye his lance red.

At that moment, with a deep growl, the chain around his left leg began to tremble violently.

"Bam!"

Countless ancient runes shattered. Another chain of the God Confining Lock had broken!

With this chain shattering, everyone's hearts began to undergo violent trepidations.

"The Black-armored Demon God is indeed tough, but we will not sit idle either! We have escaped so much, and today, the Desolate race has managed to set up an array to temporarily restrain him. Besides he is also injured, if it remains hopeless under such a situation, then if we were to carry on fleeing, there will be no hope of us eliminating him in the future."

The Sanctuary Island couple said loudly. With that, the two of them took out an array disk, as all their Yuan Qi was let loose!

"Set up the array formation! Do not let him break free from the God Confining Lock any longer!" The Sanctuary Island couple

shouted loudly.

The other legendary human figures did not speak as they released their Yuan Qi as well.

A powerful burst of energy instantly formed a sea of Yuan Qi midair.

And following that, the array disk emitted a black light, as the small array disk became like an bottomless whirlpool, absorbing the entire Yuan Qi sea.

The legendary human figures continued injecting their Yuan Qi into the array disk, while the array disk was connected to the Sanctuary Island couple. The couple's aura rose constantly, and soon, they reached a terrifying stage.

"Another array formation?" The Black-armored Demon God scanned the legendary human figures. "Cosmic Infinite Array? That's probably what you are capable of."

This was an array formation used by the Azure Yang Lord against the seven Demon Disciples tens of millions of years ago. It also came from the 12 Empyrean Heavens, so the Black-armored Demon God naturally knew about it.

He stopped trying to release himself from the shackles of the God Confining Lock, and instead, he pointed lance and swung it at the legendary human figures.

Even though he was facing two arrays, he still remained as calm as ever.

Chapter 735: Sacred Spirit's Nirvana

"Looking at us with contempt?"

When the legendary human figures saw how the Black-armored Demon God was behaving, they felt pangs of fiery in their hearts. They knew that the Black-armored Demon God was terrifying, but now, despite him being trapped in the God Confining Lock, he still thought nothing of them, disparaging them completely.

"Everyone!" The Sanctuary Island Lord said with a deep voice from within the worldly array, "We have all practiced martial arts for years, enduring the loneliness associated with reclusive training and the dangers that accompanied mystic realms. We have gone through all kinds of hardship. Other than fighting against fate, it is because we are unwilling to lead ordinary lives, and do not want to waste our lives!"

"One strike! I only want one strike! We need to produce a domineering stance!"

As he spoke, his Yuan Qi surged. His hair stood up, and in between his eyebrows, a flame was burning.

Beside him, his partner's black dress was also fluttering, as she pushed her energy to the limits.

At that moment, the Sanctuary Island couple had actually chosen to burn their blood essence!

This...

Seeing the Sanctuary Island couple's actions, the legendary human figures were stunned. Although they had made the difficult decision of staying behind to fight the Black-armored Demon God, most of them only hoped to seriously injure the Black-armored Demon God, so as to allow their lineage to continue.

But to burn one's blood essence?

That would drain one's life span.

The legendary human figures were naturally unwilling to burn their blood essence.

But at that moment, with their lives on the line, they were pushed to the edge of the cliff. If they were defeated, it was equivalent to death!

Compared to the elders, who did not have much lifespan left, the Sanctuary Island couple's life force and potential were much higher than theirs. Yet, they did not hesitate to burn their blood essence, what more them?

Humans were beings that were easily influenced by their surroundings.

They were selfish at times, but at times, they might have righteous ardor and turn fearless.

Instantly, all the legendary human figures, who were powering the Cosmic Infinite Array, burned their blood essence.

"Boom!"

As blood and Qi surged into the sky, a golden array seemed to flip the cosmos!

Mountains crumbled as the world shook.

The Cosmic Infinite Array was naturally not as abstruse as the God Confining Lock.

However, despite the God Confining Lock being powerful, the legendary Desolate race figures could not let it live up to its potential.

As for the Cosmic Infinite Array, although it was a few notches weaker, the legendary human figures were able to bring most of the Cosmic Infinite Array's power into play. As such, the difference was no longer that great.

With the Sanctuary Island couple as the lead, the Cosmic Infinite Array seemed to transform into a small world itself.

As the human geniuses on the ground looked up, they were all holding their breath as they watched with great concern. Their eyes reflected a redness that was a result of the burning blood and Qi in the sky.

These were their seniors, their Patriarchs. They were human warriors who stood at the peak!

"Black-armored Demon God!" The Sanctuary Island couple roared.

As the voices reverberated through the air, the Cosmic Infinite Array began to spin with a loud rumble. It suddenly smashed itself at the Black-armored Demon God!

It seemed to blot out the sky and cover up the earth. It was like an entire world falling down from the sky, smashing heavily at the Black-armored Demon God's head!

Everyone's gaze followed the Cosmic Infinite Array's fall. Although they did not partake in it, their breaths stagnated and they felt their blood tossing and turning. It was like they were a part of that attack!

It was a strike that contained the Human race's willpower.

Seeing this scene, the Black-armored Demon God finally stopped looking at them with contempt.

He roared as his body began tearing apart and blood spurted out everywhere!

In the blood that sputtered out, the black lance was like a Black Dragon that emerged out of water, stabbing forcefully!

"Die!"

The lance was aimed straight at the Cosmic Infinite Array's core!

Two of the strongest powers at that moment in time clashed right into each other without any fancifulness!

Weng!

Instantly, everyone felt like all sounds had disappeared from their ears. The lighted scene in front of their eyes had disappeared, and it was replaced by a screen of red blood. It was an oppressive Yuan Qi.

It wasn't truly silent, but at that moment, due to the immense destructive force, they had temporarily lost their sense of hearing despite their Yuan Qi protecting them!

The light that appeared as a result of the clash did not disappear. Instead, because of the crazy burst of energy, it caused space itself to distort.

What happened? Everyone stared with widened eyes.

Suddenly, the wanton energy was swept away.

The Black-armored Demon God's figure appeared. His hair was disheveled, and his arm was covered in blood. He was standing midair.

The energy had been sucked into the lance.

The black lance had pierced right through the Cosmic Infinite Array's core!

The Sanctuary Island couple was right in the middle and they had burnt their blood essence. The couple, who had been augmented by the array's powers, had suffered a blow that resembled being struck by a mountain.

The Sanctuary Island Lord was slightly further in front. His sternum had shattered, and the right arm that held a sword had burst into a mist of blood!

As for the other legendary human figures, they also experienced an immense impact. Those who were slightly weaker had their organs completely smashed, and they were in critical conditions!

The Human race had paid a bitter price to produce the strongest strike and they finally seriously injured the Black-armored Demon God. At that moment, the Black-armored Demon God's body had

suffered from repeated injuries. The surface of his body was completely cracked. There was nearly nowhere on his skin that was still intact. And the healing of his wounds was slowing down too.

A chance!

In front of the Desolate race Palace, the legendary Desolate race figures were giving their all to power the God Confining Lock array. Ten of the divine chains of Order were confining the Black-armored Demon God.

Above the Palace, the Skyfox's phantom image turned a faint red, while Jiang Xiaorou flew up and stood on top of the Skyfox phantom image's head.

The Skyfox's fur was fluttering where its long ears were. The bit of cinnabar in the middle of Jiang Xiaorou's eyebrows had also turned vermilion.

Her forceful stance as well as the Sacred Spirit Skyfox's aura was increasing rapidly. When this aura reached its peak, Jiang Xiaorou raised her bone staff and suddenly began to chant profound ancient words. The Heaven and Earth seemed to experience a cataclysm!

The ground quaked, as if the land's life force and immense history, as well as the souls of all the flora and fauna, was rising up from deep underground, surging right into the Skyfox's body.

Its shape was rapidly increasing. As the long hair behind Jiang Xiaorou fluttered, she gathered an ancient aura that made people want to pay homage to her.

Everyone could tell that this was the most powerful strike that the Sacred Spirit could produce at the cost of burning its life!

"Oh?"

Upon seeing the Sacred Spirit's state, the Black-armored Demon God showed his first look of surprise.

As for the Human race and the Desolate race continuously attacking him without any break in between, he was furious!

"Aw!!"

The Skyfox howled and charged at the Black-armored Demon God!

The Black-armored Demon God screamed as he raised his lance to face the attack. The black lance pierced through the Skyfox's head!

As for the huge Skyfox phantom image, it also pierced through the Black-armored Demon God's body!

The result of the terrifying impact radiated in all directions, as the red clouds in the sky were pushed to greater heights. Branched

lightning lit up the tenebrous sky. Buzzing and hissing, they trembled with the anger of being shackled to the sky since time began, causing the world to turn silent!

Everyone could even feel the ground suddenly sink down!

In the sky, the blood clouds had dispersed and the killing aura had vanished.

The Black-armored Demon God's hair was disheveled as his arm drooped low.

As for Jiang Xiaorou, she was holding the bone staff to support her body. Her face was pale. Even the bit of cinnabar in the middle of her eyebrows had turned dim. She had clearly pushed all her strength to its limits.

And behind her, the Sacred Spirit's phantom image was so blurry that it nearly disappeared. The huge Skyfox's head looked down on the world from high in the air. It had a nonchalant and calm expression, like it was experiencing a faint sense of nostalgia.

People could sense that the Skyfox was bidding farewell to this world.

Chapter 736: Devouring Souls

The Sacred Spirit had expended all of its energy. The Skyfox, which was nearing the end of its life, had been injured. And compounded with it burning its life force, it struck out its final strike before its death.

The Desolate race warriors felt terrible about this. Their Sacred Spirit came from the 12 Empyrean Heavens, and it had silently protected the Divine Wilderness for tens of millions of years. Now, it died in battle for the Desolate race.

They were upset over the Sacred Spirit's death, but the battle was still ongoing. They had no time to hold a memorial ceremony for the Sacred Spirit.

The Sacred Spirit's phantom image turned increasingly faint, as it was about to disperse at any moment.

At that moment, even the human warriors felt an explicable sense of sorrow, let alone the Desolate race.

Against a calamity that could destroy the world, all prejudice, and the hatred between the races no longer mattered.

"All of you... "

Suddenly, a low and raspy voice echoed from the sky. The Black-armored Demon God's hair was disheveled and he was covered in

blood. Several cracks had even appeared on his black armor.

However... his aura was still exceedingly powerful. In fact, his killing aura was even more intense!

"All of you have completely infuriated me. All of you are to die. Die!"

The Black-armored Demon God roared. His body looked like it was made of blood only. The rate at which his muscles were recovering was much slower, and his life force was getting closer and closer to eventual collapse.

However, he still was a god of death. His terrifying combat powers made the Human and Desolate race despair.

Unrivaled!

This was an enemy no one could defeat. They had used every means they had and each strike had consumed their life force, expending all that they had!

Now, the Sacred Spirit was dead. All the legendary human figures were grievously injured, yet the Black-armored Demon God still had ravaging killing intent!

Despair!

Every warrior could only feel a strong sense of despair at that moment.

There were still ten chains twined around the Black-armored Demon God's body. As he held onto his bloody lance, he suddenly reached out and grabbed his armor.

He grasped his armor tightly!

And with that...

Wu Wu Wu Wu!

A shrilling and ghastly wail echoed as numerous souls appeared from the Black-armored Demon God's armor as they writhed in pain.

The souls had twisted faces and miserable expressions. Their spiritual soul flames were dim, and they were filled with despair.

They were the warrior souls that had been sealed in his armor.

Amongst these souls, a large number of them were Yuan Opening realm human experts, and even quite a number of human Empyrean Kings!

After being killed by the Black-armored Demon God, their bodies were devastated, while their souls were trapped, experiencing

endless pain. Yet, they still managed to retain their thoughts back when they were alive.

Amongst them was Shentu Patriarch and Mystic Tiger Immortal.

Nearly a year ago, Shentu Patriarch was killed by the Black-armored Demon God and his soul had been sealed in the armor. He had endured such extended period of torture to the brink of collapse!

As for Mystic Tiger Immortal, he had been killed only a short while ago. Although his body was dead, he realized that he still possessed his consciousness. Other than feeling extreme fear, he still had fantasies, hoping that he would one day be able to escape from the Black-armored Demon God's armor, possessing a body and carry on living.

Mystic Tiger Immortal and Shentu Patriarch had been grabbed simultaneously by the Black-armored Demon God. Previously, while they were in the armor, they knew about the intense battle happening outside. They even had a vague understanding of the details of the battle.

Now that Mystic Tiger Immortal was suddenly released, he felt extremely excited seeing the outside world.

As for Shentu Patriarch, he seemed to regain a bit of hope from his despair.

"Wu Wu Wu... Save... Save me..."

"Save me!"

Mystic Tiger Immortal pleaded for help with great difficulty. He could see the Sanctuary Island couple and the Desolate race's Desolate Queen.

Just thinking of his soul undergoing the torture in the Black-armored Demon God's armor made him turn crazy from the pain.

Now, the Desolate Queen and the Sanctuary Island couple had become the only people that could save him.

"It's Mystic Tiger Immortal... "

Some people recognized Mystic Tiger Immortal. Although he was in soul form, as a human Empyrean King, his aura was still extraordinary. Anyone who was familiar with him could recognize him.

"Didn't he lead his family clan in a bid to escape? Why was he also killed?"

"That scum escaped faster than anyone else. Now that he has been killed and his soul trapped, he wants us to save him? To save him, we need to approach the Black-armored Demon God. That is sacrificing our lives in exchange for his half-dead soul. He can dream on!"

People say in a disgruntled manner. At that moment, even the Human race despised a lowlife like Mystic Tiger Immortal, let alone the Desolate race.

"Save me!"

Mystic Tiger Immortal shouted in pain, yet everyone ignored him. And at that moment...

Swish!

The Black-armored Demon God lifted his hand, and forcefully put a large handful of tortured souls into his mouth.

"Ah Ah Ah Ah!"

The souls that were bitten by the Black-armored Demon God let out wails of pain as they were being eaten by the Black-armored Demon God!

The moment the souls entered his body, they dissipated immediately, turning into pure soul energy that he absorbed!

This is...

People looked in shock at the Black-armored Demon God and felt their hearts go cold. The Black-armored Demon God had stored

souls in his armor, and at that moment, he was absorbing the soul energy to recover his power!

They had no way of preventing the Black-armored Demon God from eating the souls and they could only watch helplessly.

"All of you shall die!" The Black-armored Demon God's eyes were filled with killing intent!

"Peng! Peng! Peng!"

A series of sounds resounded as soul after soul exploded as they were devoured by the Black-armored Demon God.

When Mystic Tiger Immortal and Shentu Patriarch saw this scene, their souls turned cold and they felt unfathomable despair.

It was not as horrifying as if they were just being killed. Now, not only had their bodies been destroyed, their souls would also be dispersed, turning into energy for him. This way of dying was extremely horrible!

However, after the Black-armored Demon God ate 80% of the warrior souls, he suddenly stopped.

By a stroke of luck, Mystic Tiger Immortal and Shentu Patriarch were spared.

For the Black-armored Demon God, these souls were enough for his treatment.

Visible blood and Qi rapidly emanated through the Black-armored Demon God's arms, as blood lines appeared, before they rapidly spread throughout his body.

The Black-armored Demon God's chest rose and fell violently as the red blood lines quickly covered his entire body. They glowed intermittently, and even reached his pupils. Like a layer of totem runic patterns, it spread all over his body, making the Black-armored Demon God look even more demonic!

The Black-armored Demon God's wounds were slowly recovering as his muscles bulged. Like divine metal, his bones began to issue explosive sounds, with each one sounding like tumultuous thunder.

"Ah! Ah! Ah!" sounds came out of the Black-armored Demon God's throat as his eyes looked extremely frenzied.

His soul sea was originally in a mess, and now with him suddenly devouring large amounts of souls that could provide nourishment to his body, the large quantity of memory fragments also surged into his body, stimulating his soul sea, and making his soul sea even more unstable.

However, at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God was on the brink of madness. He did not care about this at all.

The Black-armored Demon God suddenly lifted his head and looked at everyone with a feverish gaze. It made these people seem to hear a resounding boom in their ears that came from their pounding heartbeat.

Chapter 737: Lotus Flower Concept

In the eyes of everyone, the Black-armored Demon God was currently in a completely frenzied state.

"What... really just happened?"

People were shuddering in fear. Although the Black-armored Demon God's flesh had healed, his soul was still clearly in chaos. His spiritual mind was acting like it was in a tumultuous storm.

"His soul sea absorbed many soul fragments. Although those human warriors were weak, their combined soul energy is no trifling matter. The crux of the matter is that the Black-armored Demon God is heavily injured. When he first came, he was already in a seriously injured state, so he is unable to withstand the energy." Lin Xintong muttered midair.

She was proficient in pure Yin laws, so she was extremely perceptive of the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual condition.

"He was seriously injured when he first came?" People were stunned as many of them did not realize that. Even a seriously injured Black-armored Demon God was so terrifying?

"Wasn't he recuperating before this? Why did he come to attack us before he recovered from his injuries?" A legendary human figure asked.

Upon hearing this question, Lin Xintong took a deep breath. "This is probably the work of Yi Yun... "

Yi Yun?

The legendary human figures were stunned. Yi Yun made the Black-armored Demon God forgo his recuperation to attack the remote mountains?

How did he do that?

"Where's Yi Yun, could he have already... ?"

From Lin Xintong's words, Yi Yun clearly had met the Black-armored Demon God prior to this.

It was hard to believe that Yi Yun alone managed to escape, despite facing the Black-armored Demon God.

Yi Yun was strong, but the Black-armored Demon God was even more terrifying. He could fend the combined forces of the Desolate race and the Human race, two divine arrays, as well as the Sacred Spirit's strike that consumed its life force alone. Yet, all of that failed to do much to the Black-armored Demon God. He was an existence who was impossible to resist against by human means.

At that moment...

"Ding-Dang!"

The Black-armored Demon God grabbed a God Confining Lock chain that bound his right leg. Ka Ka Ka! With his hands, he ripped at it in two different directions.

Golden runes immediately exploded into flashes. The legendary Desolate race figure responsible for that God Confining Lock chain immediately felt a heavy blow. His face was pale as he tried his best to hold on.

The Black-armored Demon God's muscles bulged on both his arms and he revealed a grin.

As a series of "Ka Ka" sounds issued, golden runes suddenly exploded as that God Confining Lock chain was forcefully ripped apart!

That legendary Desolate race figure immediately felt his body quiver, as he spat out a mouthful of blood. His face turned as white as a sheet of paper, while black blood flowed out of his orifices.

With the God Confining Lock chain broken, that legendary Desolate race figure was also seriously injured.

Seeing the Black-armored Demon God rip the God Confining Lock apart with his bare hands, everyone trembled with fear.

The Black-armored Demon God looked at another chain, and

with a swing of his lance, he smashed at it.

"Ka-cha!"

Yet another God Confining Lock chain was severed!

The legendary Desolate race figure manning this chain immediately suffered internal injuries. Even the skin on his face ruptured as blood spurt out all across his body. While trembling, he still tried to stabilize the God Confining Lock chain, but his strength fell short of his wishes.

"I've already said that all of you are going to die!"

With four of the God Confining Lock's chain severed, a third of the array was cracked, making it unable to restrain the Black-armored Demon God any further!

As the Black-armored Demon God twisted his neck, the veins on his body began to squirm.

With a grab of his hand, he threw the remaining 20% of the human warriors souls back into his armor, saving it for future rations.

It was not because he could not bearing eating these souls, but he did not want to give his chaotic soul sea further injuries.

"Hua la!"

The chains tightened. After losing four God Confining Lock chains, the God Confining Lock array was no longer perfect, and it was impossible to prevent the Black-armored Demon God from moving forward.

With his lance in hand, he approached Jiang Xiaorou step by step!

"Your blood... give it to me!"

The Black-armored Demon God wanted to devour Jiang Xiaorou's blood. For those souls, not only were their energies impure, they were also harmful to his soul sea if he ate them. But Jiang Xiaorou's blood contained powerful energies and it was extremely suitable to help him.

"Rou'er!"

The former Desolate Queen's face turned white as she stood beside Jiang Xiaorou. Shepherd Boy also stood in front of Jiang Xiaorou. They were preparing to fight to the death.

Abruptly, the sunlight that dawned upon the lands dimmed slightly.

At that moment of crisis, people raised their heads in astonishment. They realized that the sun in the sky had

disappeared, as it was covered by a gigantic snow lotus.

Around the snow lotus, absolute darkness emanated from it. People could even see faint stars as a result.

As the starlight showered down, it augmented Lin Xintong, increasing her aura steadily. With that, she pointed her sword tip at the Black-armored Demon God!

With Jiang Xiaorou's life on the line, Lin Xintong had no choice but to make her move!

However, everyone had previously seen Lin Xintong use all her strength in an attack, yet it had failed to injure the Black-armored Demon God. She had nearly been killed by the Black-armored Demon God.

No matter how strong Lin Xintong was, it was impossible for her to withstand a single strike of the Black-armored Demon God. Even a graze might deal her serious harm!

"You want to die in her stead again? You managed to escape the last time, but this time, I'll kill you first!" The Black-armored Demon God roared as he brandished the lance in his hand!

A strike without any gaudy display stabbed through the thousands of starlight rays in the sky as it flew straight at Lin Xintong.

"Xintong!"

On the Lin family's side, Matriarch Lin's creased face turned pale.

The members of the Desolate race also felt extremely nervous. The Black-armored Demon God was originally charging at Jiang Xiaorou, so Lin Xintong was forced to make her move just to save Jiang Xiaorou. If Lin Xintong died as a result of this, they would feel greatly indebted to the Lin family.

"Ka-cha!"

The black lance stabbed straight, clashing with Lin Xintong's sword beam.

The starlight gathered, augmenting the sword beams, but even so...

Peng Peng Peng!

The sword beam began to shatter, and in this disproportionate showdown, the black lance beam's momentum was indomitable. The empty void was pierced, causing violent tremors!

Unstoppable!

Seeing the black lance beam about to penetrate Lin Xintong's body, no one could bear to watch any further.

And at that moment, Lin Xintong's eyes flashed. She tapped lightly with her toes and every step she made midair produced a lotus flower.

Lotus flowers bloomed, they were beautiful and holy.

The lotus flower was a concept. Although it was not as powerful as pure Yin and Yang, it still contained an inexplicably profound mysticism.

Lin Xintong stepped through the void, with each step producing a lotus flower. The way she moved did not seem fast. Each step could be seen clearly by others, and they could even see the process of the lotus flower blooming.

But strangely, the lance beam that was about to pierce Lin Xintong was always just short of doing so. It failed to reach Lin Xintong!

As Lin Xintong retreated, the black lance beam chased closely behind her. Under the Black-armored Demon God's full power, even though Lin Xintong had displayed an exquisite lotus flower concept, the lance beam was drawing closer to Lin Xintong, and it nearly penetrated Lin Xintong's neck!

On the brink of death, Lin Xintong remained extremely calm, like there was no lance pointing in her direction.

Her toes tapped again, as Lin Xintong shrunk her body backward. And at the same time, an incredibly fast divine beam shot out from behind Lin Xintong!

Lin Xintong did not even look back, as her figure shrunk into that divine beam!

"Boom!"

The black lance clashed with the divine beam, causing the void to collapse. Before a tumultuous explosion could be heard, its sound waves were devoured by the void's cracks, causing silence in the world!

People looked in astonishment as a miniature pagoda that was six stories tall spun midair. This miniature pagoda was the one that shot that divine beam of light, and Lin Xintong had used her lotus flower concept to retreat into this miniature pagoda!

Chapter 738: Yi Yun vs Demon God

After being struck by the Black-armored Demon God's lance beam, the six-storey miniature pagoda flew backward. As it spun rapidly mid-air, it also grew in size rapidly.

Boom!

The divine pagoda crashed down, suppressing the Divine Wilderness, standing erect with an indomitable spirit!

That pagoda!?

People looked at the divine pagoda that had suddenly appeared with astonishment. Many of them knew that it was the God Advent Tower that came from the Great Empress mystic realm, and it was owned by Yi Yun.

"Yi Yun!?"

"It's Yi Yun! He had previously faced the Black-armored Demon God directly, but he still managed to survive!"

With the Black-armored Demon God attacking the remote mountains, and with the knowledge that Yi Yun had launched a sneak attack on him, people were beginning to suspect that Yi Yun had been killed by the Black-armored Demon God.

But now, the God Advent Tower had appeared, and it had blocked the Black-armored Demon God's strike!

As people recalled the lotus flower concept that Lin Xintong used from before, she had clearly sensed Yi Yun's arrival and she knew the God Advent Tower was flying in her direction. Hence, she had retreated the moment she dealt her blow, taking shelter immediately afterward in the God Advent Tower. This made the Black-armored Demon God's attack fall short. The couple had great teamwork between the two of them.

Seeing the God Advent Tower undamaged and Lin Xintong taking shelter in the God Advent Tower, Matriarch Lin heaved a sigh of relief.

"Xintong cultivates the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' together with Yi Yun, so they probably have a telepathic link between themselves. They already detected each other's presence from not far away. Hence, Xintong could attack the Black-armored Demon God in such a manner. She really gave this pile of old bones a fright."

As Matriarch Lin looked at the God Advent Tower, she became even more fond and appreciative of Yi Yun.

Even though the Black-armored Demon God was on a rampage, and she knew that Yi Yun's appearance did not mean that he was the match for Black-armored Demon God, she felt an inexplicable sense of contentment.

"You have finally arrived!" The Black-armored Demon God looked at the God Advent Tower as he roared out with laughter. "The God Advent Tower is a momento of the Azure Yang Lord. Do you think that I can't do a thing with you hiding in the God Advent Tower?"

The God Advent Tower's defenses were astounding, and with the Black-armored Demon God's power, even a frontal assault on it would be parried.

But...

The God Advent Tower was able to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's attack all because of its arrays.

As a mobile immortal residence, the God Advent Tower was made out of extremely strong refined materials. However, without the support of energy and arrays, it was just a dead object.

A dead object definitely could not ward off the Black-armored Demon God.

If Yi Yun did not launch a counteroffensive and was continuously attacked by the Black-armored Demon God, in time to come, the energy in the God Advent Tower's arrays would be expended. When that happened, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong would only be left for the slaughter for the Black-armored Demon God!

"Are you still going to hide like a tortoise inside the God Advent

Tower? No problem, I'll kill all these people first!"

Yi Yun had really come, which also showed how much Jiang Xiaorou meant to him. Now, Yi Yun was hiding in the God Advent Tower, while Jiang Xiaorou was on the other side, with the Black-armored Demon God in between them.

It was impossible for Yi Yun to bypass the Black-armored Demon God to save Jiang Xiaorou.

"Since you aren't coming out, then watch me drink her blood. Once I recover a bit of strength, I'll shatter your tortoise shell."

The Black-armored Demon God sneered as he looked at the God Advent Tower before turning to Jiang Xiaorou.

Yi Yun was here now, making the Black-armored Demon God's thirst of killing Jiang Xiaorou even stronger. He wanted Jiang Xiaorou, a beautiful woman, to die a horrible death.

"Rou'er!" The former Desolate Queen stood in front of her.

People immediately woke up from the shock the God Advent Tower had given them.

Although Yi Yun had appeared at such a critical point in time, he was still unable to change the battle situation. They were still in the midst of grave danger!

And it seemed like... Yi Yun had, for some reason, angered the Black-armored Demon God!

Seeing the Black-armored Demon God abandon the God Advent Tower, and swaggering over to Jiang Xiaorou, everyone felt their hearts turn cold. The Black-armored Demon God did not only want to kill Jiang Xiaorou, he also wanted to kill everyone present.

They had led a life of hardship in order to pursue their martial paths. Yet now, they could only be like sheep waiting to be slaughtered. They had no means to strike back and it was pathetic.

The Black-armored Demon God raised his lance as a forceful stance gathered on its tip. The Yuan Qi throughout the world rapidly gathered as he drew closer to Jiang Xiaorou, his stance cumulating in strength.

If he struck out, the former Desolate Queen and Shepherd Boy had no means of withstanding it. They would only be reduced to smithereens.

What were they going to do? People looked at Jiang Xiaorou and then they looked at the God Advent Tower.

They felt that if they were put in the position of Yi Yun, it was extremely difficult to make a choice.

And at that moment, the God Advent Tower flashed with a

golden brilliance, as a Golden Crow phantom image descended. As Yi Yun stood on the Golden Crow's back, he appeared at the top of the God Advent Tower.

He looked at the Black-armored Demon God, with the pure Yang broken sword in his hand. He pointed the rusty blade straight at the Black-armored Demon God!

"Yi Yun came out!"

People held their breaths. From what they knew, Yi Yun's strength was not much different to Lin Xintong's.

Lin Xintong was clearly no match for the Black-armored Demon God, so it was impossible for Yi Yun to step forward to defeat the Black-armored Demon God.

There was no need to even mention victory, even withstanding a single strike of the Black-armored Demon God's lance was extremely difficult!

"Yun-er!"

Seeing Yi Yun come out of the God Advent Tower, Jiang Xiaorou felt her heart tense up.

Yi Yun would be much safer in the God Advent Tower, but once he came out, he would be placed in an extremely dangerous situation.

Upon seeing Yi Yun appear, the Black-armored Demon God grinned viciously. He abandoned Jiang Xiaorou and approached Yi Yun.

"What foolishness. To die for a woman." The Black-armored Demon God mocked.

As he raised his black lance, a massive amount of energy surged out the tip of the lance. Around Yi Yun, space began to suddenly tighten. It was like a cage entrapping him within.

"Seal!"

The Black-armored Demon God let out a deep growl. In between him and Yi Yun, a black screen of light appeared, enveloping the two of them in it.

"A sealed enchantment!" Someone exclaimed.

The Black-armored Demon God had used a portion of his energy to set up a sealed enchantment. This sealed enchantment could temporarily seal a region of space, preventing Yi Yun from escaping. And the God Advent Tower was outside the sealed enchantment!

The Black-armored Demon God did this to prevent Yi Yun from being able to dodge his attacks and escape back into the God Advent Tower.

This made everyone's hearts tighten even more. With Yi Yun unable to escape back into the God Advent Tower, he was also sealed in the enchantment. It seemed like he had to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's blow!

Up to now, no one had been able to withstand a frontal blow that the Black-armored Demon God produced!

Without even needing to look at the light curtain, Yi Yun could see the strength of this sealed enchantment easily with the Purple Crystal's energy vision. He could attack and break through the light curtain, but the Black-armored Demon God would not give him the chance to do so.

As Yi Yun looked at the Black-armored Demon God, he suddenly sneered, "Your body is still bleeding!"

The Black-armored Demon God had suffered a severe hit on his vitality. Even though he had consumed a large number of souls that had provided him with energy, they were still very limited.

After ripping away four God Confining Lock chains, he had depleted a lot of his energy.

Yi Yun could still see that the God Confining Lock chains, which had lost most of their efficacy, were still twined around the Black-armored Demon God. If the Black-armored Demon God was at his peak condition, he could have ripped all the God Confining Lock chains apart. Why would he leave them entwined around him?

Despite the Black-armored Demon God looking extremely powerful and invincible, Yi Yun could tell that this was actually his weakest moment. It was also the chance for him to defeat the Black-armored Demon God!

"Since I came, I never planned to hide. Instead... I'm here to put you down under my sword!"

Yi Yun's voice resounded through the remote mountains. The Golden Crow beneath his feet also let out a loud shrill that rumbled through the Heaven and Earth!

Chapter 739: One Sword Strike To Seal The Throat

Put the Black-armored Demon God under his sword?

What Yi Yun said stunned both the Desolate race and Human race. Put the Demon God down? This was the Black-armored Demon God that neither Lin Xintong, the Sacred Spirit nor two powerful arrays could do a thing against.

"You want to put me down? Hahaha!"

The Black-armored Demon God suddenly roared with laughter. He had crossed swords with Yi Yun several times and he had a rough gauge of Yi Yun's strength. All Yi Yun could do was sneak up on him while he was recuperating.

"What a joke. Back when I was recuperating, whenever you sneaked up on me, even a simple counterattack of mine could injure you through the God Advent Tower. You sure have the nerve to make such a bold statement of putting me under your sword!"

With that, the Black-armored Demon God attacked. The lance in his hand looked simple and lusterless, but it was a peerless divine weapon.

The Black-armored Demon God's attacks were always simple sweeps or stabs, yet such simple moves remained unrivaled.

But now, the Black-armored Demon God's lance was stabbing straight at Yi Yun's heart.

There was an enchantment sealing Yi Yun's surroundings, isolating him from the God Advent Tower, so there was no room for retreat. Even if he could retreat, Yi Yun would not do so either. He knew deep down that this was the best opportunity to kill the Black-armored Demon God. Once he missed it, the opportunity would not come again!

That instant, time seemed to slow down for Yi Yun.

The scene of the Azure Yang Lord slashing at the Black-armored Demon God from the disk array in the Great Empress mystic realm kept replaying in his mind.

In the disk array's images, the Black-armored Demon God was holding a lance and he was riding a divine horse, yet he had been destroyed by the Azure Yang Lord with one sword strike!

That single sword strike was like an azure lightning bolt that pierced through the Black-armored Demon God!

Tens of millions of years ago, the Black-armored Demon God was at his peak, and he was far more impressive than he was now.

That strike...

He just needed to produce a hundredth of that strike's power!

‘Back then, the Azure Yang Lord had destroyed the seven Demon Disciples when they were at their peaks. I can only kill one of them, and he is already severely injured. If I can't destroy him, wouldn't attempting to voyage through the 12 Empyrean Heavens be a joke?’ Thought Yi Yun

With the pure Yang broken sword in his hand, he felt his mind being enriched. An indescribable will was augmented on the pure Yang broken sword. This was Yi Yun's Sword Intent, which was much stronger than the Sword Intent he previously had.

The realms of the sword were divided into gaining insight into Sword Intent, followed by condensing one's Heart of the Sword, then tempering one's Sword Soul, and finally creating the Heavenly Dao of the Sword.

Yi Yun spent nearly a year to gain Dao-seeking enlightenment in the Pure Yang Sword Palace and he had already reached the large success stage of Sword Intent. And now, he was already beginning to reach for the threshold of condensing his Heart of the Sword.

Heart of the Sword was also a warrior's temperament. It was not a sword technique, it was a sublime will of Sword Dao.

Pressing forward with indomitable will and irresistible force!

Si Si Si—

Behind Yi Yun, the Nine Neonate and Golden Crow phantom images appeared at the same time. A beam tore through the void, missing the black lance, stabbing straight at the Black-armored Demon God's throat!

Oh!?

Upon seeing this situation, people felt their hearts quaking!

When warriors exchanged blows, it was one party launching an attack while the other first tried to parry it, before thinking of a way to destroy his opponent.

But now, Yi Yun's attack was not for defending, it was offensive!

He had deliberately not dodged the Black-armored Demon God's lance so he could stab at the Black-armored Demon God's throat!

The Black-armored Demon God's powerful attacks made people shudder with fear. Just withstanding his attacks was nearly impossible. Yet, Yi Yun did not even dodge. It was almost like an attack with no return.

"He is about to be pierced through by the lance. Is he trying use death in exchange for a strike?"

"The Black-armored Demon God's offensive strength is just too

formidable. If Yi Yun's sword beam were to clash with the lance directly, the sword beam would definitely shatter. It would not harm the Black-armored Demon God at all, so he avoided the lance, but to do that would result... "

People held their breaths. Even if Yi Yun did not care for himself and wanted to exchange death for causing injury with that one strike, what sort of harm could it cause the Black-armored Demon God?

The Black-armored Demon God not only had terrifying offensive strength, his defenses were also phenomenal!

"Yun-er!"

Jiang Xiaorou's heart stalled. She helplessly watched as the Black-armored Demon God's lance had already stabbed into Yi Yun's chest.

The Black-armored Demon God grinned. "You want to die with me? You aren't worthy!"

"Ka-cha!"

The black lance pierced through Yi Yun's protective Yuan Qi as it ripped like paper, leaving no suspense.

Just as it seemed like the lance was about to penetrate Yi Yun's body...

Sou!

From Yi Yun's dantian, a stream of light flew out and faced the Black-armored Demon God's lance.

In that instantaneous flash, the stream of light rapidly increased in size, turning into a youth dressed in pale gold robes. The youth's looks resembled Yi Yun greatly, like they were made from the same mold. The only difference was that his skin had a pale gold luster, like his skin had a metallic texture.

The moment the youth appeared, he welcomed the Black-armored Demon God's lance. With a wave of his hands, a series of shiny projectiles shot out of his body. The projectiles were...flying sabers!

999 flying sabers danced through the air in a chaotic fashion, like snow had just fallen from the sky!

This was Yi Yun's Thousand Snow Domain!

Boom!

The flying sabers clashed with the black lance, causing terrifying shock waves to burst outwards. Despite the momentum of the Black-armored Demon God's lance reducing, it still heavily slammed into the pale gold youth's chest.

The youth's body quivered as he smacked the black lance before flying backward.

And at that moment, the terrifying energy in the black lance exploded out, sweeping through the surroundings. Even the enchantment that the Black-armored Demon God created burst open and collapsed!

Under such an energetic storm, Yi Yun's body transformed into a stream of light and streaked towards the youth in pale gold robes. After Yi Yun's body merged into the youth's dantian, he disappeared.

Boom!

The youth was like a mountain that had been struck. His body fell, smashing through a mountain.

As gravel thundered down, it buried the youth deep underground.

What is this...?

Seeing this scene, everyone was dumbfounded.

Even Jiang Xiaorou was completely baffled. Who was the youth dressed in pale gold robes that resembled Yi Yun so much?

How was Yi Yun after withstanding that strike? Was the youth dead?

People turned extremely anxious. And at that moment, someone suddenly shouted, "Look at the Black-armored Demon God's neck!"

With the exclamation, everyone looked over and saw the Black-armored Demon God holding his black lance in one hand, while his other hand was clasping his neck.

In between his fingers, dark red demonic blood flowed out.

He was injured!

Yi Yun's strike had reproduced the charm of the Azure Yang Lord's strike from back then. At that instant, he had even reached the threshold of the Heart of the Sword.

In order to let the strike's offensive power reach its limits, Yi Yun had avoided the Black-armored Demon God's lance beam. All his Sword Intent had surged right at the Black-armored Demon God's weak spot!

One sword strike to seal the throat!

The Black-armored Demon God slowly removed his hand. There was a wound the thickness of a finger left behind on his neck.

Although the wound was small, it was very deep. Around the wound, his flesh was squirming, like it was attempting to fix itself.

However, there was an undying Sword Intent lingering around the wound. It was constantly tearing the wound open!

The Sword Intent was difficult to extinguish, and it constantly caused damage over time.

Chapter 740: Draco True Avatar

"That is the Azure Yang Lord's Sword Intent... You... "

The Black-armored Demon God's eyes were filled with murderous intent. Although Yi Yun's strike was extremely powerful, it was far from being able to kill him.

However, that attack had damaged the essence of his life force once again. The undying Sword Intent left behind by Yi Yun's blade made him recall the strike that had destroyed his demonic soul tens of millions of years ago.

This made his soul sea, that was on the brink of collapse, turn even more chaotic!

And at that moment...

Boom!

The collapsed mountain exploded as rocks that weighed millions of pounds were sent flying before melting due to an intense heat wave.

A three-legged Golden Crow flew up high into the sky, and on its back, stood a youth dressed in a pale gold robe.

This youth had a cold expression, and 999 flying sabers were

circling around him.

Who was he!?

The Black-armored Demon God's lance had been weakened by that person's saber array, but it had still managed to stab into his pale gold chest. Yet, for some inconceivable reason, he did not die!

He did not even suffer any serious injuries, at least not on the surface.

"You are... an avatar!?" The Black-armored Demon God stared at the youth with shining eyes.

For it to look identical to Yi Yun and be used as some form of enchanted treasure stored in Yi Yun's dantian, the only thing it could be was Yi Yun's avatar.

How did Yi Yun obtain such a powerful avatar, considering the fact that he had cultivated for less than three decades?

It had managed to endure one of his blows without dying! It was not even seriously injured!

The youth did not respond. He had clear-cut and well-defined, handsome facial features.

The robe around his chest had been pierced through by the

Black-armored Demon God's lance attack.

But now... pale gold Heaven Earth energy gathered together, which mended his robe.

The robe had a metallic feel to it and there were exquisite and mysterious-looking runes embroidered on it. Wearing it gave the youth an air of majesty, like he was a king from ancient times who had stepped foot into the rivers of time.

Swish!

A stream of light flashed as Yi Yun's actual body flew out of the youth's dantian.

He was holding the pure Yang broken sword in his hand. After taking a glance at the damages his avatar had received, he heaved a sigh of relief. The Draco First True Gold avatar's defensive strength was truly impressive.

Back when Yi Yun had entered the God Advent Tower, he had passed the God Advent Tower's tests and went to the highest level together with Lin Xintong.

There, Yi Yun had found a few paragon treasures.

One of them was the disk array controlling the God Advent Tower. After Yi Yun refined it, the God Advent Tower had become Yi Yun's immortal residence, which he could bring along with him.

As for the second item, its value even exceeded the God Advent Tower.

It was a Cosmos Bag, and there was a seven foot stone sculpture stored in it. The sculpture were crass, but there were pure Yang Great Dao runic patterns engraved on the surface through natural processes.

After Yi Yun touched the stone sculpture, it cracked, revealing the Draco First True Gold avatar! (Yi Yun obtained the avatar in Chapter 555. As it's been a while, you might have forgotten it)

Draco First True Gold could only be formed in extreme pure Yang lands, such as in the core of some mysterious star, through absorbing the pure Yang essence of the Heavens, Earth and the divine items of the world.

What was formerly a precious stone was refined into True Gold, and that was Draco First True Gold.

Draco First True Gold could be used to produce divine sacred weapons, and it had a value impossible to measure. What was even more valuable than Draco First True Gold was when it produced flesh and blood after spending a countless amount of time in an extreme Yang land.

From a precious stone transforming to True Gold, and from True Gold spiritually metamorphosing into a Dao body divine fetus.

Not only was its defensive strength comparable to Draco First True Gold, it could also interface with the Heaven and Earth, allowing it to gather Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. It was the epitome of a naturally formed perfect Yang body.

Back when the Azure Yang Lord received this divine item in the Sinkhole, he had planned on refining it into an avatar. However, it required a long period of time.

The Azure Yang Lord had placed the Draco First True Gold avatar at the top level of the God Advent Tower and he used the entire pagoda's arrays to nourish the avatar, slowly refining it to take form.

Unfortunately, before the Draco First True Gold avatar took form, the Azure Yang Lord had passed on.

After tens of millions of years, when Yi Yun came to the God Advent Tower, the Draco First True Gold had already successfully taken form. Yi Yun left a spiritual imprint in the Draco First True Gold, making it his avatar.

Ever since Yi Yun came out of the God Advent Tower, the Draco First True Gold had been hidden and cultivating inside his dantian.

Yi Yun and the avatar were one and the same person. Whatever laws Yi Yun received insight on, his avatar would receive the insight as well.

After Yi Yun obtained the Thousand Snow Domain, he had given it to his Draco First True Gold avatar, letting his avatar cultivate it for use.

Back then, when Yi Yun came out of the God Advent Tower and fought in the Soul Tomb, Yi Yun was only facing Zhulong, who had yet to achieve his cultivation peak after reincarnation, so there was no need to use it. Only now, against the Black-armored Demon God, in this final showdown where Yi Yun was no match for the Black-armored Demon God, did he have to rely on the Draco First True Gold avatar, as well as the God Advent Tower.

Indeed, Yi Yun's actual body had no means to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's strike. That black lance would bore a hole through him easily.

However, the Draco First True Gold avatar was different. Its body was a peerless weapon in its own right. Compared to the Black-armored Demon God's lance, it was far more stronger.

"This avatar is not something that the Tian Yuan world can have. Was it left behind by the Azure Yang Lord as well?"

The Black-armored Demon God stared at Yi Yun with scarlet eyes that protruded out slightly.

The wound on his neck emitted a wisp of black gas as the Sword Intent left behind by Yi Yun had been mostly eliminated. His wound was finally beginning to recover.

But at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God had suffered a heavy blow from both the Sacred Spirit and the two powerful arrays. Before Yi Yun came, the Black-armored Demon God's vitality was extremely weak. It was very difficult to use that bit of vitality to heal his wounds.

The Black-armored Demon God suddenly grabbed at his armor.

Wu Wu Wu Wu!

A large number of souls were pulled out of the Black-armored Demon God's armor and amongst them were Shentu Patriarch and Mystic Tiger Immortal's souls!

Previously, the Black-armored Demon God had deliberately left the souls of the human Empyrean Kings aside, but now, against Yi Yun and his Draco First True Gold avatar, the Black-armored Demon God had already decided on devouring all of the remaining souls.

"Ah, ah, ah!"

Shentu Patriarch and Mystic Tiger Immortal were struggling vigorously after being pulled out a second time.

They could also see Yi Yun and his Draco First True Gold avatar, and even had a general idea of the astonishing clash between Yi Yun and the Black-armored Demon God!

However, they could not be bothered to understand why Yi Yun possessed such terrifying power because their lives were in danger!

"Hu!"

The Black-armored Demon God sucked in a large batch of souls through his mouth. One could hear the sad and shrill wails as the souls were devoured.

The pain derived from having their souls devoured was an agony that no human could endure.

Seeing that they were about to be sucked into the Black-armored Demon God's mouth, Shentu Patriarch and Mystic Tiger Immortal felt despair as they screamed crazily.

"Yi Yun! Save me!"

"Save me!"

Mystic Tiger Immortal and Shentu Patriarch were on the brink of collapse, yet Yi Yun did not make a move. Despite Yi Yun not having any feelings of pity towards the two of them, Yi Yun naturally did not want to see the Black-armored Demon God recover.

Unfortunately, at the moment that the Black-armored Demon

God devoured this souls, he had already set up a force field to protect himself. To destroy that force field in a short period of time? Difficult!

Chapter 741: Sword Strikes Like Fluttering Snowflakes

"Wu Wu Wu... "

The tragic wails of souls echoed as Mystic Tiger Immortal and Shentu Patriarch were both sucked into the Black-armored Demon God's mouth. They didn't even get to struggle as their souls were completely destroyed.

On the Human and Desolate race front, they shuddered seeing this scene. These legendary human figures had died an extremely tragic death.

After devouring the souls of human Empyrean Kings, blue veins began to bulge out of the Black-armored Demon God's forehead. His eyes were like that of a wild beast, as his soul sea became even more chaotic.

Yi Yun quietly watched all of this as the Black-armored Demon God received damage after damage. In addition to him overdrawing on his life essence several times, it moved his life closer and closer to its end. If all this went well , the final straw that broke the camel's back would appear.

As for Yi Yun, he just needed to hold out till that straw appeared, causing the Black-armored Demon God's life force to collapse, resulting in his complete destruction!

"Die!" The Black-armored Demon God said this word through gritted teeth as he forcefully brandished his lance.

Swish!

The world turned dark as rays of light were distorted. The Spatial dimensional forces instantly turned chaotic.

Spatial dimension laws?

People were alarmed because up to now, the Black-armored Demon God had almost never used laws. His offensive strikes were always simple stabs or sweeps. It was probably because there was no need for him to use laws.

But now, the Black-armored Demon God had conjured up the spatial dimension power, and the power began to envelope the pale golden robed Yi Yun.

He wanted to separate Yi Yun's actual body from his avatar!

Once his avatar was separated, Yi Yun's actual body had no way to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's frontal assault.

Seal!

As space began to seal, Yi Yun's heart sank. With a flash of his body, before the space enclosed fully, he charged into his avatar's

dantian! Naturally, he would not allow his actual body to be separated from his avatar by the Black-armored Demon God.

"Twang!"

As the lance moved forward, it was augmented by spatial dimensional forces. As the ground and mountains got twisted by the distortions of space itself, they began to crack and crumble.

The Black-armored Demon God's strike was aimed straight at the middle of the Draco First True Gold avatar's eyebrows!

Sha! Sha! Sha!

The Thousand Snow flying sabers flew out of the avatar's dantian. The 999 flying sabers merged as one, and they stabbed at the Black-armored Demon God's lance.

However, the Black-armored Demon God's lance was too powerful, and with it augmented by spatial dimensional forces, it was not something that the Thousand Snow Domain could withstand.

Boom!

A gigantic energy explosion happened as a storm stirred up, concealing the sky and sun. Nearly all the rays of light were swallowed by it, as it became an empty, black void.

"Careful!"

The Human and Desolate race warriors were terrified of this storm.

In front of the Black-armored Demon God, they were just too weak.

To prevent further harm, the Human and Desolate race Empyrean Kings set up enchanted seals to block the storm.

And at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God's lance had struck the Draco First True Gold avatar!

With a violent tremor, the avatar flew backward as it spat out a mouthful of blood. Even though it had a Draco First True Gold body, it too had received a great deal of damage after receiving two consecutive heavy strikes!

"Refine!"

The Black-armored Demon God struck out a second time as spatial dimensional forces shot out and directly enveloped the Draco First True Gold avatar. The avatar which, had flown backward, was like a bug stuck to a spider's web. It was restricted midair by the spatial dimensional forces!

"Ding!"

The Thousand Snow flying sabers began to slash at the spatial dimensional forces, severing the chains formed from spatial laws. However, even more spatial dimensional energy surged over, and like a massive net, there was nowhere for him to escape to.

"No matter how many treasures you have, without the strength supporting them, it will still be useless!"

The Black-armored Demon God was in control of Yi Yun's avatar. A gigantic black hand was conjured as it tried to grab the spiritual sea of Yi Yun's avatar!

The gigantic black hand had a sinister and cold air to it. There were ghastly wails emitted from it, and it was full of a killing aura.

"Yi Yun, careful, he is trying to wipe away your avatar's spiritual imprint!"

Amidst the storm, the Sanctuary Island's Island Lord shouted, so as to warn Yi Yun.

Although the Draco First True Gold avatar's defensive strength was crazily strong, it still needed to be controlled by Yi Yun. If its spiritual sea was torn apart, then the spiritual imprint left behind on the Draco First True Gold avatar would be forcefully wiped away by the Black-armored Demon God. If that happened, not only would Yi Yun suffer a serious blow to his spiritual being, the Draco

First True Gold avatar would also become ownerless and the Black-armored Demon God could control!

Then, Yi Yun, who was still hiding in the Draco First True Gold avatar's dantian, would have obvious consequences!

As the avatar was already restricted by the Black-armored Demon God, the gigantic black hand was just in front of his eyes. It would strike in just an instant!

And at that moment...

"Boom!"

There was a tumultuous sound, like the nine heavens had collapsed. A divine pagoda came crashing down from the sky, right at the Black-armored Demon God!

Oh!?

The Black-armored Demon God's facial expression sank. The God Advent Tower was a mobile treasure that the Azure Yang Lord brought from the 12 Empyrean Heavens. Its offensive strength was too horrifying, so even though it could not display a hundredth of its power, it was enough to injure him.

The Black-armored Demon God, who had already been severely injured, would be pushed to the brink of collapse if he received the God Advent Tower's strike.

If the Black-armored Demon God carried on attacking the avatar, it would take at least a few seconds to wipe out Yi Yun's spiritual imprint. By then, the God Advent Tower would have long smashed onto his body.

"Scram!"

His black lance stabbed upwards, striking the base of the God Advent Tower.

"Ka-cha!"

The lance quivered violently as the impact from the God Advent Tower caused it to bend. The Black-armored Demon God had used a lance to forcefully withstand the God Advent Tower!

Whew!

At that moment, a white figure charged out of the God Advent Tower, as icy-blue snowflakes suddenly appeared in the sky, fluttering beautifully through the sky.

With a sword in hand, Lin Xintong slashed down from top to bottom!

A white sword beam came crashing downwards like a thousand foot waterfall!

The Black-armored Demon God's pupils constricted as all the muscles on his body bulged!

"Ha!"

He roared out loudly as his bulging muscles began to crack. All of the Black-armored Demon God's energy exploded as he swung his lance, causing the black lance to bend back into shape. The God Advent Tower was deflected upwards by the lance!

The Black-armored Demon God had used his terrifying strength to fling the God Advent Tower away!

This scene made people shudder. The Black-armored Demon God was too terrifying. Yi Yun, who had the Draco First True Gold avatar and God Advent Tower, was fully suppressed in front of the Black-armored Demon God, and he was in critical condition!

"Die!"

The Black-armored Demon God was covered in blood. After he flung the God Advent Tower away, he did not even manage to take a breather, as he charged straight at Lin Xintong!

Just flinging the God Advent Tower away had drained a great deal of the Black-armored Demon God's energy. Having used up most of his energy, he did not have the momentum any further. He was at his weakest, but even so...

"Peng Peng Peng!"

The lance stabbed forward as white sword beams began to shatter in sequence. The thousands of snowflakes fluttering in the sky were also shattered as the black lance was aimed straight at Lin Xintong's neck.

Lin Xintong's black pupils reflected the cold lance tip. At the moment of life and death, she remained extremely calm as she circulated the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' to its limits. Pure Yin began to surge in her terminated meridians!

The full power of the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' could only be released by Lin Xintong with her pure Yin and terminated meridians!

Cha! Cha! Cha!

Her sword came surging down like a blanketing snow storm, clashing with the black lance time and time again. It cut the Black-armored Demon God's flesh open, and at the same time, Lin Xintong quickly retreated!

Lin Xintong's 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' was also no match for the Black-armored Demon God.

Chapter 742: Withering With A Single Sword Strike

The Black-armored Demon God was indomitable. As his muscles were bombarded by Lin Xintong's sword Qi, the sword Qi were shattered relentlessly. His black lance was locked onto Lin Xintong as it drew closer to her!

And at the same time, the God Advent Tower was being restrained by the Black-armored Demon God using spatial dimensional forces. The Black-armored Demon God feared the divine pagoda. While battling Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, he had to divert a large portion of energy to restrain the God Advent Tower. If not, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong could hide in the God Advent Tower at any moment. He would then have to expend a great deal of life force just to completely drain the God Advent Tower's arrays of their energy.

He withstood the sword Qi as his damaged body was still draining his life force. But even so, he still wanted to kill Lin Xintong in one fell shot!

As long as he killed either Lin Xintong or Yi Yun, then the other would be much easier to kill.

However, how could Yi Yun sit idle and watch Lin Xintong being killed?

Xiao—

The Golden Crow screeched forward with Yi Yun standing on its back!

The Draco First True Gold avatar was injured and Yi Yun had stored it in his dantian. Now, Yi Yun was pointing the pure Yang broken sword straight at the Black-armored Demon God!

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had no means to have a frontal clash with the Black-armored Demon God. Their hearts were telepathically connected, so with both of them tying him down, they enjoyed great teamwork!

"Hmph!"

The Black-armored Demon God sneered. He knew what was on Yi Yun's mind. Yi Yun planned on using that strike to force him to defend, hence, saving Lin Xintong.

The Black-armored Demon God knew that if he were to stop his attack to respond to Yi Yun, Lin Xintong would be out of danger, then he would have endured Lin Xintong's sword Qi for nothing.

Just Lin Xintong alone wasn't much trouble, but with the God Advent Tower and with Yi Yun and his avatar combining forces with Lin Xintong, leaving Lin Xintong alive would spell disaster for the future.

He decided to kill Lin Xintong, even at the cost of being struck by

Yi Yun's sword!

With his mind made up, the Black-armored Demon God's black lance did not lose any momentum!

Upon seeing this scene, the Human and Desolate race warriors, especially the Lin family, felt their hearts shrink. The Black-armored Demon God had decided on killing Lin Xintong, and for Yi Yun's strike, so what if it landed on the Black-armored Demon God? He could not save Lin Xintong at all, and it probably would be very difficult for it deal any serious damage to the Black-armored Demon God!

The Black-armored Demon God completely ignored Yi Yun and just as Lin Xintong's life was on the line, Yi Yun held his breath. His eyes flashed with phenomenological images of the growth of thousands of living beings, and the withering of plants.

"Whew!"

A piece of deadwood shot out of Yi Yun's Dantain. It was the Death Soulwood!

The Death Soulwood flew up into the sky and behind Yi Yun, a phantom image of a divine tree condensed.

The divine tree looked lush initially, but then it instantly dried up. As a countless number of leaves fell, they looked like butterflies of death.

Withering... The falling of leaves was withering, the drying up of trees was withering and the death of people was also withering...

Yi Yun injected the Withering concepts that he understood from the Pure Yang Sword Palace into his sword. This was the first Sword Dao that Yi Yun created for himself!

Withering Sword Dao. Withering with a single sword strike!

Yi Yun's blade aimed straight at the Black-armored Demon God's eyebrows.

The strike contained an air of death and withering, but on the surface, it did not look like anything special. Even the sword Qi was very stable and calm, like it did not possess any lethality.

"Oh? You think of harming me without using the Azure Yang Lord's Sword Intent?"

The Black-armored Demon God grinned. Tens of millions of years ago, he had nearly been destroyed by the Azure Yang Lord's attack. He feared the Azure Yang Lord's Sword Intent the most.

As for a Sword Dao created by Yi Yun himself, he was not worried about it at all.

Boom!

All of Lin Xintong's Sword Qi was shattered by the lance, and Lin Xintong's slim body quivered vigorously. Her face was pale as she looked at the storm swept up by the black lance that was about to annihilate her completely. And at that moment, Yi Yun's sword had reached the Black-armored Demon God's head.

The sword tip tapped lightly in the middle of his eyebrows, like it was a strike that could not deal any damage.

Weng!

The Withering concept burst out, like it was a bleak autumn scene. It flowed from the middle of the Black-armored Demon God's eyebrows straight into his soul sea.

Although it looked like a weak bundle of energy, the moment it entered his soul sea, the Black-armored Demon God's life force rapidly withered!

Oh!? The Black-armored Demon God was alarmed.

The Black-armored Demon God's soul sea was already on the brink of collapse, and he was currently at his weakest. A weak life force was just like a withering tree.

At that moment, the Black-armored Demon God was like a blighted piece of wood. If he experienced the withering of his life, the damage would increase even more.

It was an extremely rare concept, created by Yi Yun himself. Even the Black-armored Demon God had never experienced it before. Hence, he was momentarily at a loss as to how to dissolve it.

As his spiritual energies were rapidly disappearing, the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea was drying up and shrinking. The excruciating pain made the Black-armored Demon God let out a blood-curling scream.

"Ah, ah, ah!"

He clenched his head, while his body shot out like a meteor. He was struggling violently, trying to dissolve the Withering concept that Yi Yun had shot into his soul sea.

And at that moment, the surging storm was still in front of Lin Xintong!

After losing the Black-armored Demon God as its energy source, the storm was much weaker, but Lin Xintong alone, would find it very difficult to withstand it.

Yi Yun gathered his Yuan Qi as the Draco First True Gold avatar, which was injured, shot out of his dantian.

999 flying sabers shuttled through the void as the Thousand Snow Domain came crashing down, creating a spiraling flying

saber tornado!

Lin Xintong also bit the tip of her tongue and circulated the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra', forcefully striking out.

With the Thousand Snow Domain and Lin Xintong's fluttering snowflakes combined, they harmoniously broke the Black-armored Demon God's storm apart.

Yi Yun took the opportunity to charge forward and grab Lin Xintong by the waist. The two of them passed through the void in a sideways fashion, finally dodging the core of the storm.

Boom!

The storm exploded, while Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were already far away from it. Although they experienced a portion of the aftermath, they did not receive any serious injuries.

The Black-armored Demon God's attack was too terrifying. Even if they had used all that they had, just experiencing one of his attacks put them into such a pathetic state, with their lives on the line.

"Black-armored Demon God..."

Yi Yun glanced at the Black-armored Demon God, and he saw him holding his black lance in one hand, while his other hand was grabbing his head. He seemed like he was in a frenzy!

The withering that began from his soul sea was equivalent to the blighting of his soul. It was an inhuman torture for the Black-armored Demon God, who didn't have much life force left.

Pain that came from the soul was difficult to bear. Previously, the legendary human figures, who had their souls absorbed by the Black-armored Demon God, had experienced a similar pain. Now it was the Black-armored Demon God's turn to experience it.

"Ah... "

The frenzied Black-armored Demon God slashed out with his lance, as the few remaining blood clouds in the sky were swept up. A storm began to wantonly brew in the clouds, while snakes of lightning flashed.

The entire world seemed like it was torn apart by this void, as mountains began to crumble. The Desolate race's protective array began to shatter like flaking pieces of paper. There were Human and Desolate race warriors, who were too close to the fallout, that were torn into shreds.

Under such power, lives with weak strength were just ants.

"Xintong, let us attack together!"

He had to take advantage of the Demon God's perilous situation! At that moment, Yi Yun could not care about those young warriors

of the Human and Desolate race who fell victim to the storm. With the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea in chaos, slashing out that lance attack meant that he had just finished his move and having used up his energy, he was at his weakest. This was the best opportunity to kill the Black-armored Demon God!

Chapter 743: A Leaf To Cover The Skies!

As Yi Yun and Lin Xintong combined forces, the Yin and Yang energies in their bodies blended together. Because of them combining forces, the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra' experienced a harmonious reconciliation, resulting in a qualitative change in strength.

As the starlight showered down from the nine heavens, they flowed onto Lin Xintong's sword. As pure Yang flames surged, Yi Yun imbued the pure Yang broken sword with the flames. The entire Divine Wilderness' Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was, at that moment, surging turbulently over.

Swords used in unison!

Weng!

The two swords tore through the Heavens and Earth, as they slashed at the Black-armored Demon God at the same time!

The Black-armored Demon God, who was currently suffering from his chaotic soul sea, surprisingly did not block or dodge the two strikes. The blades slashed across his body, as his muscles cracked apart, leaving two dreadful gashes!

As blood splattered, the Black-armored Demon God's eyes turned ferocious.

"The both of you are not strong enough to kill me!" The Black-armored Demon God suddenly roared. Ignoring the blood oozing out of his body, he turned around suddenly and threw his black lance at Yi Yun, who was flying backward after having successfully attacked.

Whew!

The black lance was like a black, punishing lightning bolt from a god. It tore through the void, as it shot straight at Yi Yun's back where his heart was!

This lance was formidable, as it was injected with all of the Black-armored Demon God's strength. The terrifying penetrating force seemed like even the Tian Yuan world could be penetrated with just this one strike!

There was no way that Yi Yun could resist it with his body. Even the Draco First True Gold avatar would be severely injured if it resisted this attack, whatmore Yi Yun himself!

And at that moment, the Draco First True Gold avatar had previously used the Thousand Snow Domain to tear the spatial dimension storm apart. It was still a good distance away from Yi Yun himself, so there was no time for it to return to save Yi Yun.

As for the God Advent Tower, it had been bound by the spatial dimensional forces that the Black-armored Demon God produced before. There was no way that Yi Yun could hide inside it.

He had to face the strike directly!

The black lance contained an extremely terrifying 'forcefield'. It had locked on to everything, so there was no way to dodge as such a powerful forcefield couldn't be broken through. Even if he broke through, it would be too late!

Yi Yun!

The black lance came flying at him like a divine arrow of death. People held their breaths as they saw this scene unfold in front of them. The Black-armored Demon God had even thrown his weapon. In a battle between warriors, it was taboo to let go of one's weapon. Once it was let go, it meant that that person was going for broke!

Who could withstand a strike from the Black-armored Demon God when he was going for broke!?

The Human and Desolate race warriors tightened their hearts. Jiang Xiaorou's heart stopped beating, and as for Lin Xintong who was right beside Yi Yun, she could only watch helplessly. Similarly, she had been bound by the 'forcefield', so there was nothing she could do. Lin Xintong, who was usually calm, felt extremely anxious at that moment. Her watery eyes were filled with worry and fear. She could not imagine Yi Yun dying.

In a split second!

Against this strike, Yi Yun's heart turned cold as death approached!

At this point in time, he could only take a gamble.

He twisted his body and he faced the black lance head on. With the pure Yang broken sword in his hand, a green beam flew out of his dantian!

It was a leaf.

A tiny tree leaf that was an inch in size was in no way eye-catching. The tree leaf's surface was interlaced with rows of runic patterns that contained the Great Dao of the world.

It was the Dao Tree's leaf.

Billions of years ago, at the birth of the Universe, the Dao Tree had been born out of Chaos. Its existence preceded the Pure Yang Sword Palace's owner.

The Dao Tree's 3000 Dao Leaves represented 3000 Great Dao. On every Dao Leaf, it was a sublimation of the way of the Heavenly Dao, as such, this Dao Tree was itself like a God.

A green leaf that seemed negligible moved towards the indomitable black lance.

"Boom!"

The black lance struck the middle of the Dao Leaf!

It was a collision with unbalanced proportions. People did not realize what the black lance had collided with at the beginning. Only when the black lance's forcefield weakened, like it had crashed into a divine mountain, did people realize that there was a leaf at the tip of the lance!

A leaf managed to withstand the Black-armored Demon God's lance!?

Rumble! Black lightning flashed as spatial dimensional forces surged. All of the Black-armored Demon God's energy had surged out, as the unassailable lance was like a black flood dragon, forcefully charging forwards.

As for the Dao Leaf, there was Dao and Truth interweaved with Heaven and Earth laws. The profound divine runes interleaved to form a large net that resisted the black lance's momentum.

For peerless mighty figures, a grain of sand could suppress the land, while a tree leaf could cover the skies!

To do all of this required Heaven and Earth laws.

"Buzz——"

The nomological net deformed as mysterious and profound runes began to imprint themselves on the cold lance.

"What!?"

The Black-armored Demon God was alarmed. He did not know where Yi Yun had obtained that leaf. Although he was well-learned, he had never seen a Dao Tree born during the time of Chaos.

He only knew that the leaf was extraordinary!

"You want to stop me with just a leaf?"

The Black-armored Demon God roared as all his muscles began to split outwards. His long hair began to flare up behind him.

He flew towards the black lance and he wanted to punch at the lance's pole, so it could shatter the nomological net completely!

However, at that moment, Yi Yun's avatar rushed over with the Thousand Snow flying sabers. Under the Thousand Snow Domain, there were countless numbers of saber flashes that resembled snow.

At the same time, Lin Xintong also began to brandish her sword, causing snow lotuses to bloom mid air!

Lin Xintong along with Yi Yun's avatar slashed the spatial dimension forces that bound the God Advent Tower apart!

Boom!

With the God Advent Tower released from its shackles, it started suppressing straight away like a divine mountain, smashing right at the Black-armored Demon God!

At the instant that the God Advent Tower was smashed downwards, Yi Yun rapidly retreated with all his might. Although the Dao Leaf's nomological properties were intricate, Yi Yun had to expend energy to power the Dao Leaf. Similarly, the God Advent Tower required Yi Yun's energy as well!

By using two paragon treasures consecutively, Yi Yun felt like his life force was being completely drained!

"Be defeated!" Yi Yun roared angrily. He knew that the Black-armored Demon God's life force was nearing on collapse, but his situation was not much better than the Black-armored Demon God's. He was much weaker than the Black-armored Demon God, and to power such powerful laws and treasures, his Yuan Qi was being depleted like a broken dam.

His cultivation level was limited after all. With such a cultivation level and such excessive expenditure of his energy, even with the Purple Crystal Origins constantly absorbing Heaven Earth Yuan Qi to replenish his energies, he was also on the brink of being

completely exhausted.

He had to quickly defeat the Black-armored Demon God, if not, the first to not hold out would be Yi Yun himself!

Boom!

With the lance no longer in hand, the Black-armored Demon God had no weapons to use. To everyone's surprise, he used his large arms that were like tempered divine metal to forcefully hug the God Advent Tower's base!

As the God Advent Tower came suppressing downwards, the impact was unrivalled. As the Black-armored Demon God hugged the God Advent Tower, he slammed heavily into the ground!

Seeing the Black-armored Demon God being struck down, the Human and Desolate race warriors felt their hearts beat loudly while their blood boiled.

He had managed to parry it!

Yi Yun had managed to parry the Black-armored Demon God's invulnerable strike, and he had powered the God Advent Tower to slam him downwards!

"Everyone, attack!" The Sanctuary Island couple shouted.

They could tell that it was already extremely difficult for Yi Yun and Lin Xintong to do all of this. They had to take this opportunity to help Yi Yun. This was also the best opportunity for them to strike the Black-armored Demon God!

Chapter 744: One Final Desperate Attempt

The Sanctuary Island couple flew high into the sky as the other legendary human figures followed closely behind. They once again began to power the Cosmic Infinite Array, by burning and consuming their blood essence!

They had expended too much of their energies, and only by burning their blood essence and life force could they have the strength to attack the Black-armored Demon God.

At that moment, even though they knew that overdrawing their life force would cause irreparable harm to themselves, and might even decrease their cultivation realm, these legendary figures could no longer care about that.

If they didn't kill the Black-armored Demon God, they would all die. Their heritage, their families and race would all be finished.

At the same time as the human experts attacked, the Desolate race's Empyrean Kings, including Shepherd Boy and the former Desolate Queen, attacked as well. They powered the God Confining Lock once again as burning blood and Qi shot up into sky.

After this strike, they would definitely have their cultivation realms greatly reduced, but this was the only opportunity to kill the Black-armored Demon God, hence their desperate actions.

The God Advent Tower came crashing from above, while the human and Desolate race's Empyrean Kings released a strike at the

cost of burning their life forces.

"Boom!"

Energy surged as it exploded in midair. It was like the sun had descended down onto the mortal realm, causing the Divine Wilderness' lands to crater inwards, as millions of tons of rock were evaporated instantly by the energy's high temperature.

The void was torn apart, and just the resulting shockwave alone was terrifying. It caused the attacking Human and Desolate race Empyrean Kings to suffer broken meridians and ruptured organs.

They were seriously wounded, and many of them were nearing the limits of their vitality. This strike had greatly reduced their lifespans.

This was a strike that combined the strength of the Human and Desolate race, all for one last desperate struggle!

They were already left without any power to carry on fighting, so this strike had to kill the Black-armored Demon God.

Up in the air, Yi Yun's energy was severely depleted. As for Lin Xintong, she had been injured by the Black-armored Demon God, and she was no longer able to participate in the battle.

Boom!

The God Advent Tower slammed into the ground, forming a huge crater as the pagoda bore deep underground. The suppressive force of the God Advent Tower was immense, as it broke through the lithosphere, causing magma to spew out!

Yi Yun's face was pale. After having to engage in intense battles again and again, especially having used the Dao Leaf, he had used a law that far exceeded his present cultivation realm. This drained too much energy. Now, he was using the Purple Crystal to rapidly absorb Heaven Earth Yuan Qi so as to recover his energy. However, he could no longer control the God Advent Tower for the time being.

Yi Yun using the God Advent Tower was like a child swinging a giant axe around. Although the power was immense, Yi Yun was still unable to fully wield it after all. Every time he attacked with the God Advent Tower, it would drain a tremendous amount of energy.

Now, half the pagoda was immersed in magma, and Yi Yun could not easily summon it back. However, his connection with the God Advent Tower was still crystal clear. As long as he recovered a bit more Yuan Qi, he would be able to retrieve the God Advent Tower.

However, the main problem was... the Black-armored Demon God!

Everyone was looking at the gaping hole in the ground. Its diameter stretched hundreds of thousand feet out, and looking far

into the distance, the hole stretched all the way to the limits of their vision. Amidst all this was a faint blood-colored smoke lingering around the hole.

At the bottom of the gigantic pit, there was flowing magma. The magnificent God Advent Tower was now half submerged into the magna, and only the top levels could be seen.

Was the Black-armored Demon God dead?

People held their breaths. If the Black-armored Demon God did not die, they really had no idea how they were going to carry on fighting.

"Bloop!"

Gases emerged out of the magma, forming dark red magma bubbles as they burst one by one.

Everyone's heart tightened as they stared intently at the magma's surface.

As the bubbles increased in number, they also increased in size as an intense amount of killing aura began to surge out of the magma.

Everyone's heart sank. Was the Black-armored Demon God not dead yet?

Yi Yun tightened his grip on the pure Yang broken sword, as his gaze landed on the magma lake like two electric beams.

"Boom!"

The magma lake exploded as a stalwart man, who was covered in blood, charged out. His muscles were ruptured, while his armor had cracked. The flesh on his two arms were mangled, while one could see a bloodied bone in his forearm. It could be said that he no longer looked human.

Black-armored Demon God! He was still alive!?

The Black-armored Demon God had only one eye left. His blood-red eye was filled with a chaotic and violent killing aura, as his gaze swept across everyone present. He said with a slur, "Die... Die... All of you shall die!"

People felt despair. They had attacked him at the cost of falling a cultivation realm, yet it was ineffective against such an enemy. They had lost all morale.

The Black-armored Demon God suddenly looked at Jiang Xiaorou.

His gaze was surging with a hint of greed.

"Blood... give your blood to me!"

The Black-armored Demon God stretched his hand with the revealed bone out. He wanted to grab Jiang Xiaorou and suck her dry of her blood so as he could recover his strength!

The Black-armored Demon God was very close to collapsing!

"Die!"

Upon seeing this scene, Yi Yun shouted from high up in the sky. His actual body held the pure Yang broken sword, while the Thousand Snow flying sabers were circulating around the Draco First True Gold avatar!

He and his avatar each wielded sword and saber weapons respectively, as they transformed into a gold and pale gold energy stream.

Sword and saber beams poured down from the sky!

At that moment, Yi Yun consumed all his energy and he decided to go for broke, risking his life on it!

"Roar!"

An angry growl, that sounded like a primordial beast, roared from the Black-armored Demon God's chest. It did not sound anything like that a human could produce.

The terrifying sound waves burst out in all directions, as the magma lake exploded!

The Black-armored Demon God had already lost his lance, so he clenched his fist and punched at Yi Yun!

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The Black-armored Demon God punched at Yi Yun at the risk of falling apart!

Although it was a strike from a spent force, with him using all his strength, the power was comparable to him attacking with his lance from before!

No one could withstand the Black-armored Demon God's direct blow!

However, at that moment, Yi Yun remained resolute and he appeared to have no fear!

Boom!

The saber and sword beams collided with the Black-armored Demon God's fist beam!

The magma began to churn as the land cratered once again. A

terrifying shock wave radiated out, leaving destruction in its wake.

The immense recoil caused Yi Yun's arms to fracture!

Ka-cha!

Yi Yun's right hand, which was holding to his sword, was now bending in a peculiar angle. However, the fist's momentum did not decrease, and slammed straight at Yi Yun's sternum!

And at that instant, the Draco First True Gold avatar flashed in front of Yi Yun, withstanding most of the impact for Yi Yun.

Even so, Yi Yun's sternum was fractured, damaging his heart and lungs. If not for the Draco First True Gold avatar, Yi Yun would probably have died right there and then!

Yi Yun flew backward as he spat out a mouthful of blood!

His sword had tapped on the Black-armored Demon God's forehead, while the avatar's saber had stabbed at the Black-armored Demon God's heart.

The combined attack of the 999 flying sabers may have lacerated the Black-armored Demon God's heavily damaged body, but it still failed to penetrate his body.

As for the pure Yang broken sword, the wound left behind by the

strike was even shallower. The defensive strength of the Black-armored Demon God's skull was much stronger than his chest muscles.

"You can't kill me!"

The Black-armored Demon God was in a frenzied state. On his forehead, the spot where Yi Yun pricked with his sword did not have much blood flowing out. However, strangely, there was a strand of black gas condensing around it, before it slowly sank into the wound...

This strand of black gas seemed to be even more sinister than the Black-armored Demon God's killing aura...

Chapter 745: Spatial Seal

Yi Yun knew that his final strike would not be able to penetrate the Black-armored Demon God's skill, hence he had added the 'evil energy' that the Purple Crystal controlled on the sword.

This evil energy had entered the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea at the moment Yi Yun pricked him!

Ever since Yi Yun entered the Heavenly Dao Union, and took control over Shentu Nantian's corpse, the evil energy had once again been in Yi Yun's control.

The evil energy was adept at devouring and possessing souls. Back then, it had devoured the masked man, allowing Yi Yun to make the masked man his puppet and read his memories, eventually destroying Blood Moon's 'Blackstone Trials' plans.

Back then, the evil energy had grown a lot. After that, in Blood Moon's Soul Tomb, Yi Yun had used the evil energy to devour all the sleeping Yin specters!

After devouring so many Yin specters, the evil energy was greatly enhanced.

Of course, no matter how much the evil energy had grown, trying to use it to devour the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea was wishful thinking.

But it was different now. The Black-armored Demon God was a spent force, and his soul sea had reached the brink of collapse multiple times, and he had suffered heavy blows.

At that moment, the relatively weak evil energy was the final straw that broke the camel's back.

Yi Yun had resorted to using the God Advent Tower, the Draco First True Gold, the Death Soulwood and the Dao Tree's Dao Leaf. He had used every means he had, yet he failed to kill the Black-armored Demon God, but he had managed to push him to the point of being a flickering candle in the wind. Finally, the evil energy, that was best at devouring souls, had been injected into the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea!

Yi Yun flew backward in an uncontrollable fashion. There were sounds of his bones cracking all over his body as his muscles ruptured, splattering blood everywhere!

Yi Yun could no longer attack anymore!

"Die!" The Black-armored Demon God was like a mad demon as he lifted his fist, in preparation to chase after Yi Yun.

Everyone's heart sank when they saw this. It's over!

Yi Yun was flying backward with no strength left to fight. And although the Black-armored Demon God looked heavily injured, he still had a surging killing aura, there was no question about the

difference in strength.

Probably that one hit would kill Yi Yun, who had no way of defending himself!

And they would be killed following that!

Despair!

Everyone felt despair rise up their hearts. Was today the end of the world?

Just as everyone felt a deep sense of despair, the Black-armored Demon God, who was flying towards Yi Yun at a high speed, suddenly trembled, before he sank downwards abruptly. He nearly fell into the magma lake.

"Ah Ah Ah!" The Black-armored Demon God suddenly screamed.

His attack on Yi Yun stopped as a result as he felt like his head was about to burst apart!

The Black-armored Demon God could sense a dark energy squirming in his soul sea and biting at it!

This energy was devouring his soul power, and combining it into its own strength.

Yi Yun!

What did he just do!?

The Black-armored Demon God's soul sea was already on the brink of collapse, and it was just a mess of fragments.

Now, the evil energy was inside his soul sea, biting at it, immediately causing his soul sea, that was about to collapse, to begin stirring.

The pain coming from one's soul sea was a thousand times worse than physical pain. Even the Black-armored Demon God found it unbearable.

"Get out! Get the hell out!" The Black-armored Demon God's eye was blood red, as his twisted expression writhed in pain. He began waving his fist randomly, attempting to force the evil energy inside his soul sea out. However, that energy was like a maggot. Although it was much weaker than his soul power, it was extremely cunning. It sank deep into his soul sea, and bit on it, refusing to come out!

Although tigers were strong, sometimes an extremely small parasite that drilled into their brains, would make them fall into madness!

“Dissipate! Dissipate! Dissipate!”

The Black-armored Demon God roared as he tried to dissipate the evil energy. However, every time he used his soul power, his soul sea would crumble a bit more. If this went on, his soul would collapse, leading to his death before he dissipated the evil energy.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Space surrounding the Black-armored Demon God began to rip apart as surging energy swept up into a storm.

At that moment, anyone who approached the Black-armored Demon God would be instantly annihilated into dust.

"What's wrong with the Black-armored Demon God?"

The Human and Desolate race warriors had seen that Yi Yun seriously injured, while the Black-armored Demon God was chasing him for the kill. They thought everything was over.

But now, there was a twist, as the aggressive Black-armored Demon God had suddenly fell into great pain.

"He has received an attack on his soul sea." The Sanctuary Island Lord said.

He was extremely sensitive in his spiritual perception. He did not know what Yi Yun had done, but he could sense how unstable the Black-armored Demon God's mental situation was.

"An attack on his soul sea? Yi Yun has such means?"

"Has the situation reversed?"

Everyone held their breaths as they stared intently at the Black-armored Demon God. At that moment, they were already too weak to fight. Yi Yun and Lin Xintong could no longer launch any more attacks either. Everything depended on whether the Black-armored Demon God's soul would collapse.

Yi Yun managed to stop his body not far away. As he held on, his eyes focused on the Black-armored Demon God. Indeed, he was too weak to carry on fighting at that moment. He had staked everything on the evil energy.

Suddenly, the Black-armored Demon God raised his head in extreme agony. His fervent gaze locked onto Yi Yun.

"You!"

Then he charged right at Yi Yun again, before screaming in excruciating pain once again.

The evil energy was being controlled by Yi Yun's Purple Crystal, so it began to devour the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea at an even faster pace.

"Damn it! Damn it!"

The Black-armored Demon God wished that he could tear Yi Yun apart.

He felt his soul sea was in extreme chaos once again. Under this situation, he would not be able to hold on.

There was only one way to dissipate the evil energy. He had to let his soul sea enter a slumber.

Only by entering a slumber would he be able to summon powerful soul power to slowly repair the injuries to his soul sea. Only then, would he be able to devour the black energy.

And this process would not take long. It would take a few decades only.

However, after he entered a slumber, he would lose touch of the external world, and lose the ability to protect himself.

When that happened, even those so-called legendary figures of the puny members of the Human and Desolate race would be able to kill him bit by bit, let alone Yi Yun.

"To think a bunch of ants wants to kill me. Such wishful thinking!"

How could the Black-armored Demon God let these ants bit him to death, considering his esteemed life?

He needed to enter slumber, but he too needed to protect himself.

There was no time left. He had to enter slumber immediately!

The remaining energy he had left was to protect his slumbering body. If he wanted to kill Yi Yun, with Yi Yun controlling the evil energy to give him a backlash, they might end up dying together!

"Ah!"

With a roar, the Black-armored Demon God suddenly punched out.

In the empty void, profound laws appeared as it gathered on the Black-armored Demon God's fist.

A black crack tore open beneath the Black-armored Demon God's fist.

This was another dimension. It had been punched open by the Black-armored Demon God through the use of spatial dimensional laws.

Chapter 746: Uncertain Life Or Death

Once this alternate dimension closed, although it was located in the Tian Yuan world, no one would be able to locate it, unless there was someone who had a deeper mastery of spatial dimension laws than the Black-armored Demon God.

However, it was impossible for there to be such a person in the Tian Yuan world.

Amongst them, the person who knew spatial dimension laws the most didn't even have 0.01% of the Black-armored Demon God's comprehension.

The Black-armored Demon God's soul sea could no longer withstand the evil energy ingestion. He had to immediately enter a slumbering state, and before that, he planned on entering this space, sealing him in it, so he could protect his body.

These puny humans could still live a little longer while he entered his slumber.

"Be sealed together with me!" The Black-armored Demon God endured the pain from his chaotic thoughts, and grabbed at Yi Yun.

The spatial crack behind the Black-armored Demon God was increasing in size, like a giant mouth. It locked the surrounding space!

And at that moment, Yi Yun and the Black-armored Demon God were both above the magma lake, and Yi Yun felt like he was about to be sucked into the spatial wormhole!

He was seriously wounded and he had no way to break free from the spatial wormhole. The Black-armored Demon God's attainment in spatial dimension laws far exceeded Yi Yun's.

As the spatial crack expanded rapidly, it pulled at Yi Yun.

There was no way to escape!

Yi Yun felt alarmed. At that moment, he could not control the God Advent Tower. The Thousand Snow flying sabers also could not tear through the spatial wormhole. He did not have much energy left in him.

The Black-armored Demon God grinned at Yi Yun.

The Black-armored Demon God did not care about those ants from the Human race. When he woke up once again, those ants would just become his food.

However, Yi Yun was different. He was the Azure Yang Lord's successor. He originally thought that Yi Yun was just a shameless person. But then, after the intense battle from before, with Yi Yun using all sorts of different techniques, it made him see the potential that he possessed.

The Black-armored Demon God would not allow such an enemy to keep growing outside.

He needed to enter slumber for a few decades. By the time he woke up again, Yi Yun might be able to grow to a point where he could face him in true battle, so how could he allow this to happen?

The Black-armored Demon God decided to seal himself with Yi Yun.

In the sealed dimension, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi would be completely cut off, without a tinge of it left. Yi Yun would not be able to heal himself, let alone cultivate.

As such, by the time the Black-armored Demon God healed his soul sea, even if he would be extremely weak after his slumber, he would still be able to kill Yi Yun easily. With one less threat of Yi Yun, by the time he came to the Tian Yuan world in peak condition, there would only be Lin Xintong left. It was nothing to fear.

As everything happened so fast, when they saw the spatial crack about to devour Yi Yun, many people were greatly alarmed. Yi Yun had been sucked into the spatial crack!

"Yun'er!" Jiang Xiaorou's expression changed. She was too far away, and she was unable to do anything in time.

"Yi Yun!"

Lin Xintong was closest to Yi Yun. She slashed out with her sword, hoping to sever the spatial dimensional forces and release Yi Yun. However, her sword beam was engulfed by the spatial wormhole. There was no way that she could sever it.

Seeing Yi Yun about to be swallowed by the black hole, she flew towards Yi Yun and held his hands.

"Xintong, you... "

Yi Yun was alarmed. He wanted to push Lin Xintong away, but her hands held onto him firmly. She wanted to pull Yi Yun out.

However, her injuries were worse than Yi Yun, so there was no way that she could pull him out.

"Hahaha!" The Black-armored Demon God roared with laughter. His face was still writhing in pain, but he managed to say, "To think that there is someone throwing herself into danger. What foolishness! Even better, the both of you shall be sealed together. In twenty years, I'll kill the both of you, then there will be no one left in this world that can hurt me one bit!"

The Black-armored Demon God's voice was distorted by the spatial storm as his body retreated into the spatial crack. As the blood and Qi swirled, bolts of lightning were emitted. And

instantly, the black hole shrunk, and in a blink of an eye, it changed into a black spot in the sky.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's bodies also disappeared along with the black hole.

"Xintong!" Matriarch Lin and the rest of the Lin family turned aghast at seeing this.

They could only watch helplessly as the two most promising youths of the Human race disappeared in the spatial seal, with their life or death uncertain.

The sky was cloudless for thousands of miles as calm was restored.

If not for how the ground looked like it had collapsed with destruction everywhere, the calmness would make people think that nothing had happened. It was like everything was just a nightmare.

Some of the young human geniuses looked blankly into the sky and felt their bodies go limp. It was like all their strength had been drained away.

The Black-armored Demon God's monstrous and murderous actions had destroyed the Human and Desolate race's arrays, leaving the Empyrean Kings seriously wounded. Under such a situation, they had seen their peers evaporate into bloody clouds

when they were hit by the shock waves. Their hearts were full of despair, thinking that they would definitely die.

However, they never expected that, Yi Yun, a young man who was about their age, had managed to engage in such an intense battle with the Black-armored Demon God. It could be said that there was a moment in time that they were nearly equals.

They did understand what had happened during the final moments. They did not know of the evil energy, nor did they know that the Black-armored Demon God was opening an alternate dimension so as to protect himself during his slumber.

They only saw Yi Yun and Lin Xintong disappear with the Black-armored Demon God... No one knew if they would return or not.

The Sanctuary Island couple, as well as the rest of the Empyrean Kings, were extremely worried.

However, with their strength, attempting to break through the void to search for Yi Yun and Lin Xintong was undoubtedly wishful thinking.

"What did the Black-armored Demon God say before he disappeared?" A legendary human figure asked. The Black-armored Demon God used an ancient language, so they could barely understand the simpler words.

The Black-armored Demon God could use their mental

fluctuations to understand their words, but they did not understand what the Black-armored Demon God was saying.

"The Black-armored Demon God said Lin Xintong was throwing herself into danger. He would seal Lin Xintong and Yi Yun together, and kill them in twenty years. Then, there will be no one left in this world that could hurt him one bit." A Desolate race Empyrean King said with a heavy tone.

His words made everyone's heart turn cold!

Many of them did not know what had happened at the end. But now, they understand that it was a spatial cage that had appeared at the very end. And the Black-armored Demon God had intended for Yi Yun and Lin Xintong to be sucked into it.

What were they going to do?

Everything was in the Black-armored Demon God's control. In twenty years, the Black-armored Demon God would appear once again...

They did not dare think any further.

"Young Master Yi and Lady Lin are undoubtedly a dragon and phoenix amongst people. They will not die too easily." The Sanctuary Island couple said as they looked into the void.

Instead of saying this was their judgment, it was better to say

that it was them expressing their hope. And their words clearly could not comfort many. That was because the final strike was mediated by the Black-armored Demon God, while Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had clearly been hit by it.

After entering the alternate dimension, that was the Black-armored Demon God's home ground. The Black-armored Demon God was adept at controlling spatial dimension laws, while Yi Yun and Lin Xintong did not know much about it. How were they able to defeat the Black-armored Demon God?

In front of the Desolate race palace that had nearly completely collapsed, Jiang Xiaorou raised her head to look at the spot where Yi Yun disappeared.

"Yun-er... "

Jiang Xiaorou's face was pale. As she looked at the empty void, it was like her gaze penetrated the void.

In the whistling wind, a sandstorm blew across the ruined land, but Jiang Xiaorou's vacant gaze remained locked onto that spot.

Inside the rumbling magma lake, the God Advent Tower remained standing there. In the final moment, Yi Yun was completely exhausted, and he was stuck in the spatial worm hole, so he could not even take the God Advent Tower away.

Without the God Advent Tower, and with Yi Yun being

completely unfamiliar with the alternate dimension, how was he able to resist the Black-armored Demon God?

Jiang Xiaorou's heart sank bit by bit.

The former Desolate Queen looked at Jiang Xiaorou, while her heart ached for her.

"The two of them will definitely return alive." The former Desolate Queen said.

"Definitely... " Jiang Xiaorou repeated it, like she was trying to fortify her confidence.

Those human Empyreal Kings, the young human geniuses, as well as the Desolate race's warriors all looked up into the sky, regardless of their race or status.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's figures during their battle with the Black-armored Demon God were still deeply impressed in their eyes...

Chapter 747: No Room For Retreat

The apocalypse was finally over. This battle had dealt a heavy blow to the Human race, the Desolate race... as well as the entire world.

The Human and Desolate race had lost numerous elites. The Desolate race's Sacred Spirit had died fighting, while Shepherd Boy, the former Desolate Queen and many legendary Desolate race figures were eviscerated. Many of them had suffered a drop in cultivation realm, and they would not be able to recover in a short period of time.

The Sanctuary Island couple were in a similar situation.

However, other than grief, a dark cloud hung over the Human and Desolate race. All of them knew that the end of the apocalypse was just temporary. The Black-armored Demon God would still return, and the period of time was limited to twenty years...

They still had twenty years to breathe freely, but what could they do during these two decades?

Nurture a successor to resist the Black-armored Demon God? That would be a joke.

Break through the void to search for Yi Yun and the Black-armored Demon God's traces? That amounted to wishful thinking.

It seemed like they could not do a single thing. In twenty years time, the Black-armored Demon God would return to the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness, and having been restored to his peak condition, they would be nothing but ants in front of him.

They had nowhere to escape, nor did they have any tricks that they could use. All they could do was await death.

Only unless Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were still alive. Only unless they managed to kill the Black-armored Demon God while inside the alternate dimension!

However, the likelihood of that was very low. They also knew that Yi Yun and Lin Xintong did not know any spatial dimension laws.

Spatial dimension laws were considered a heritage of the 12 Empyrean Heavens, and with its immense power, it was something that few people in the Tian Yuan world knew.

Once the Black-armored Demon God set up spatial dimension laws to open up an alternate dimension, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong would very likely be trapped in a spatial dimension maze, with no way of getting out.

"Yun-er... " Jiang Xiaorou sighed.

Although she firmly believed Yi Yun could return, she still felt

extremely worried deep in her heart.

She wondered how Yi Yun was, after being sealed in that alternate dimension...

...

At that moment, in a dimmed alternate dimension, spatial dimensional forces suddenly warped as Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had arrived.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were readying themselves to fight the Black-armored Demon God to the death. But with a flash in front of their eyes, they had seemed to traverse an immense distance in a split instant. They then appeared in this silent world, where there was no sign of the Black-armored Demon God.

Yi Yun was alert of his surroundings. He used his nearly depleted energies to prepare for any unexpected situations, but there was nothing out of the ordinary in this void space. He couldn't even sense the presence of Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, and his perception could not be spread out.

Yi Yun frowned as he thought about the Black-armored Demon God's words. He did not know much about the language, but through the fluctuations of the Black-armored Demon God's mind processes, he had a rough idea of the Black-armored Demon God's intentions.

It seemed like the Black-armored Demon God planned on sealing them in this spatial dimension.

"Let's look around."

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong flew through the void. They slowly explored the ends of this space. It was a confined space, and they were surrounded by spatial dimensional barriers that resembled curtains that stood in between the Heavens and Earth.

The black barriers were thick and dark, and they looked like a mess of Chaos. Their perception could not penetrate it, and just touching it made them feel like they had entered an intricate and confusing spatial maze.

Their perception would turn faint, and the once they probed too far, the perception would be lost, with no way of recovering it.

This spatial dimension seal... was truly weird!

Yi Yun took a deep breath. The Black-armored Demon God had used spatial dimension laws to seal the boundary, and he had set up a spatial maze outside. All of this was done to completely seal Lin Xintong and him inside. Unless they were proficient in spatial dimension laws, there was no way of escaping.

"It looks like the Black-armored Demon God is determined to seal us in here. In the future, when his strength is restored, he will then kill us." Lin Xintong said softly. Although she was in such a

gloomy situation, she did not appear afraid at all. She did not regret her choice of ignoring all consequences to enter this sealed space with Yi Yun. She did not even mention this matter, let alone talk about regret. The reason why she made the choice was, in her opinion, a very natural option.

Seeing Lin Xintong's unpanicked look, Yi Yun felt somewhat guilty. "Xintong, you shouldn't have been sealed in here with me in the first place."

Lin Xintong shook her head gently.

"I couldn't think of any other methods outside, so I might as well be together with you. Then, if we encounter anything, we will face it together." Lin Xintong said lightly.

Her tone remained natural, like she didn't find that it was a great sacrifice for her feelings, it was a natural choice.

Yi Yun felt touched as he silently tightened his grip on Lin Xintong's hand.

At that moment, for Lin Xintong to be able to say those words so calmly, it gave him the feeling of fiery warmth and passion.

This kind of true feeling that resided in plainness, while they faced this difficult moment together, hand in hand, was even more precious.

"We cannot be trapped in here!"

Yi Yun took a deep breath as he said solemnly. He was saying this for Lin Xintong, as well as for himself.

"The Black-armored Demon God must be sleeping in another space. If... we can find him... "

The space that Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were in was not considered very vast. It did not have any Yuan Qi at all.

In the space, the both of them could not recover from their injuries, nor could they cultivate. It was equivalent to simply waiting for death.

They needed to escape or find the Black-armored Demon God.

Although they were sealed in an independent void, Yi Yun's connection with the evil energy still remained.

He could faintly sense where the evil energy was located. However, there were layers of spatial dimension barriers separating him and the evil energy.

Yi Yun sensed that the evil energy was somehow being suppressed by the Black-armored Demon God. The evil energy was now sealed in a corner of the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea, preventing it from devouring the Black-armored Demon God's soul any further.

And the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea had fallen into a state of silence. This meant that the Black-armored Demon God was in deep slumber. Through such a slumber, the injury to his soul sea would slowly recover. When the time came, the evil energy would not only fail to devour the Black-armored Demon God's soul, it would instead be devoured by the Black-armored Demon God, and in turn, used to nourish his soul.

The Black-armored Demon God, who was deep in slumber, had no means to resist. This was the best opportunity to kill him!

But what preceded that... was finding him!

Yi Yun looked at the black spatial dimension barrier. There was no Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, so Yi Yun was unable to heal himself, thus, he would constantly remain in a weak state. He did not know spatial dimension laws either, so even though he could vaguely know where the Black-armored Demon God's location was through the evil energy, Yi Yun could not do a thing.

If he had the God Advent Tower, he could still power the God Advent Tower with all his strength, and use its terrifying impact to smashed through the spatial barriers.

However, the God Advent Tower was isolated outside the alternate dimension. Even if he had it in hand, with him currently being extremely weak and, being completely devoid of Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, he could not control the God Advent Tower at all!

In twenty years time, once the Black-armored Demon God woke up, not only would they die. Jiang Xiaorou, the Desolate race, the Lin family, all of them would be slaughtered and destroyed.

Twenty years... He had to seize this twenty years and use it properly!

He had no room for retreat, and he could only proceed forward. Even if there was no path in front of him, he had to find a path!

Chapter 748: The Light In The Midst Of Darkness

"The Black-armored Demon God should be completely asleep and he can't resist at all. As long as we find him, we can kill him!"

Yi Yun tightened his grip on Lin Xintong's hand. Although it seemed like they were faced dead ends, all they needed to do was carefully analyze the situation. They only needed to do two things.

Firstly, they had to grasp spatial dimension laws! Secondly, they had to recover their strength, and it would be best if they could make a cultivation realm breakthrough, so they could control more powerful energies,. They would then be able to gain dominance over spatial dimension laws and forcefully break through the thick spatial barrier!

There was no one to guide them for the first point. Without any inheritance to learn from, how was one to gain nomological insight independently? That was truly as difficult as ascending the heavens.

As for the latter point, this dimension did not have any Yuan Qi. Simply eating pills or relics restored impure Yuan Qi. This made it difficult for them recover to their peak states. And to attempt at making a breakthrough in cultivation realm, so they could control more powerful energies, that was something even more impossible.

As Yi Yun was ruminating over possible actions, Lin Xintong

moved towards the spatial barrier. She stared intently at the spatial barrier's energy flow, slowly pondering over its mysteries.

Just using a spatial barrier and its energy flow to gain insight into the mysteries within was an extremely difficult method. It required extraordinary perception.

Although Lin Xintong had very good perception, she had a lacking foundation. Her horizons were limited, and she was much worse when compared to the 12 Empyrean Heavens' elites. If the elites of the 12 Empyrean Heavens could not gain any insight of spatial dimension laws from a spatial barrier, then it would be even harder for Lin Xintong to do so.

But even so, Lin Xintong still proceeded without hesitation to try to understand the cold spatial barrier. She concentrated intently and was extremely meticulous.

Lin Xintong seldom said any words that voiced her feelings or resolve. Instead, she would just face all difficulties and obstacles together with Yi Yun, like it was a matter of course. She never lacked the courage to wield her sword to cut through a thorn-filled path together with Yi Yun.

Just like a decade ago, Lin Xintong had been given a death sentence with her naturally Yin Meridians. Despite there being no means to join her terminated meridians up, she still silently fought against her fate, never giving up.

Lin Xintong stretched her hand out as she gingerly touched the

black spatial dimension barrier. As her slender fingers gently tapped on it, ripples began to appear on the black screen, like the surface of water.

On these ripples, she could see numerous runes flicker.

These runes had formed a lock, sealing the black screen. This was a lock that the Black-armored Demon God had left behind.

That was to say, if Yi Yun and Lin Xintong wanted to charge out of this independent space, not only would they have to gain insight into spatial dimension laws and break through the spatial barrier, they had to also crack open the runic lock that the Black-armored Demon God left behind.

Difficult! Difficult! Difficult!

Yi Yun breathed gently as his gaze was absorbed by the black screen. All he saw was deep black.

However, the Purple Crystal began to activate at that moment, allowing him to see the profoundly formed energies. They were like chains intertwined with each other.

The Purple Crystal's vision could see through the origins of energy. Back in the saber tomb, Yi Yun had managed to gain insight using the Purple Crystal.

It was the same this time.

Although spatial dimension laws were extremely abstruse, in the Purple Crystal's vision, the trajectories of spatial energy was extremely clear.

However, being able to see things clearly did not mean comprehension.

The saber tomb's text were a form of inheritance, so being able to see it clearly meant comprehension. This was like making a replica of a key. Once he could see it clearly, just copying it, would produce a similar key.

But for the spatial energies contained in the spatial barrier, they were the most primitive Heavenly Dao laws. Trying to comprehend his own version of Dao from it was equivalent to looking at a lock. He needed to first understand the principles behind opening a lock, before he could consider creating a key. That was more than a hundred times harder.

However, Yi Yun did not know the principles behind opening a lock, nor did he have anywhere to learn it from.

Yi Yun swallowed a superior-grade relic in front of the spatial barrier and sat down. As he stared intently at the spatial barrier, the surging gray spatial energies appeared like bobbing water waves to him. Their flow trajectories looked perfect and harmonious, containing a mysterious charm.

Seeking enlightenment was a dull and lonely process, especially

went it came to gaining insight to such a profound Dao like spatial dimension laws. It was made even more obscure and arduous.

There were 3000 Great Dao in martial arts constituting a wide variety. Warriors would usually be able to gain insight into a very limited number of Dao throughout their entire lives.

These Dao were of different grades.

The highest were the Great Dao of Origins.

There were very few types of Great Dao of Origins. They exceeded all the other laws and they were the most difficult to gain enlightenment on, as well as the most difficult Dao to master.

Other than the difficulty of making any breakthroughs while meditating over the Great Dao of Origins, just trying to find manuals or heritage that described the Great Dao of Origins was nearly impossible. Any manuals that could describe such Dao was a rare treasure!

For example, 'Chaos Dao' was a Great Dao of Origins!

One level lower were the Great Dao of Supremacy.

The Yin and Yang Dao that Yi Yun and Lin Xintong cultivated were Great Dao of Supremacy.

Now, the spatial dimension Dao that they were trying to understand, or Chrono Dao, Life and Death Dao or Immortal Dao were all Great Dao of Supremacy.

Trying to independently gain insight to a Great Dao of Supremacy was extremely difficult.

Yi Yun also did not know how far he could go in his enlightenment. Many a time, getting stuck at a point during enlightenment could leave one stuck for more than a decade.

As for Yi Yun, it was a race against time. If he could not beat it, it meant death.

And at that moment, Yi Yun realized that there were dots of light shimmering on his body in the Purple Crystal's energy vision.

These dots of lights looked like luminous jewels in the night as they sparkled.

Oh?

Yi Yun understood something and naturally knew what the dots of light were. Stretching his hand out, the dots of light landed on his palm.

Dao Leaf!

This Dao Leaf had withstood the Black-armored Demon God's strike, saving his life.

Although the Black-armored Demon God's attack was extremely powerful, it was nothing compared to the Dao Leaf. It did not even leave a mark.

This was only right, but what made Yi Yun astonished was that this Dao Leaf could emit such bright light, despite there being no Yuan Qi fluctuations in this completely isolated alternate dimension. It was expiring Origins energy, and it was unknown where this energy came from.

Although this alternate dimension was isolated from everything else, it could not isolate Dao. Its existence and itself was a part of Dao.

Yi Yun looked at the Dao Leaf. The sparkling lights emitted by the Origins energy could only be seen through the Purple Crystal's vision. The Heavenly Dao runic patterns formed veins on the Dao Leaf, and the energy was flowing through it like the flow of blood.

The Dao Tree that was born out of Chaos embodied the 3000 Great Dao, and within all of that, it contained the Chaos Dao.

As for the other Great Dao of Supremacy, including spatial dimension Dao, Yin-Yang Dao, etc, they were naturally a part of it. It had become a part of the Dao Leaf's runic patterns!

As he held onto the Dao Leaf, Yi Yun took a deep breath as his eyes sparkled with a strange twinkle.

"Not long ago, you separated yourself from the Dao Tree to follow me. I will not be an insult to you! I'm sorry for nearly having my confidence shaken just now."

Yi Yun grasped the Dao Leaf tightly. Indeed, he did not have spatial dimension heritage, but he had the Dao Tree's lead that accommodated the 3000 Great Dao. This was one of the sources of Heavenly Dao. With the Dao Leaf, it was equivalent to having the best spatial dimension heritage!

With the Dao Leaf in hand, why would he need to have his confidence shaken?

Back in the Pure Yang Sword Palace, Yi Yun had sat quietly underneath the Dao Tree, gaining insight into the Withering Dao by himself. Furthermore, it was the Withering Dao that came from the Dao Tree of Chaos!

Now, inside the spatial barriers formed by the Black-armored Demon God, he did not believe that he could not gain any insight into spatial dimension Dao!

Chapter 749: Fishing In Troubled Waters

Three months had passed since Yi Yun was sucked into the alternate dimension.

In the past three months, the area where Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had disappeared was constantly guarded, as people hoped that they would escape from the alternate dimension. Unfortunately, after so many days, this place remained quiet and tranquil. There was not a single spatial dimension ripple.

The dense blood clouds that had gathered there had long dispersed. The remote mountains were restored of its peace, but... it was littered with collapsed mountains. The huge pit in the ground that had a diameter of five kilometers indicated how intense the battle was three months ago.

At the bottom of the pit, there was still magma that had yet to cool down, making it resemble a volcano's mouth. However, the God Advent Tower, which was previously immersed in the magma lake, had been pulled out.

Without Yi Yun's control, the God Advent Tower had shrunk down to ten feet in size. It began absorbing Heaven Earth Yuan Qi so as to replenish the energy it had consumed during the battle.

The Desolate race had fished the God Advent Tower out and they had sealed it inside the palace. Without Yi Yun, no one could control the God Advent Tower. The Desolate race hoped that Yi Yun would be able to return safely in twenty years time, and regain

control of the God Advent Tower, so the world could truly tide through the apocalypse.

However, everyone knew that for all to happen was equivalent to a miracle.

On this day, the Sanctuary Island couple led the Human race, as they planned to leave the Divine Wilderness.

The Desolate race had already prepared two Empyrean Kings to escort them back to the Tian Yuan world.

In the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, the legendary Human and Desolate race figures had all suffered seriously. Many of them dropped in cultivation realms. It was unlikely that they would recover before the battle in twenty years.

It was fated that the second apocalypse in twenty years would be even more tragic.

For this, the legendary figures felt a deep sense of powerlessness.

Actually, they also knew that even if they recovered to their peak states, it would still be useless.

Whether they recovered their peak states or not just meant the difference between a smaller or bigger ant in front of the Black-armored Demon God.

This truly gave them a helpless sense of sadness.

"Sanctuary Island Lord, take care!"

The former Desolate Queen led the legendary Desolate race figures to bid farewell to the Sanctuary Island couple. In the battle three months ago, the legendary human figures had sacrificed a great deal as well. Without them, the Desolate race's sacrifice would be even worse. At the critical moment, the legendary human figures had attacked, slowing the Black-armored Demon God's offensive down.

"Your Majesty, we will return to the Divine Wilderness in 19 years time. Regardless of the outcome, we will face it together." The Sanctuary Island Lord sighed.

At that moment, his heart was heavy. The period of twenty years was like the wait for receiving their death sentences...

When the time came, how would the world turn out?

Just as the Sanctuary Island Lord was thinking...

"Boom!"

An explosion sounded out from the Desolate race's palace. Plumes of black Yuan Qi shot up into the sky!

Everyone was alarmed as they looked back. The Desolate race's palace had been attacked!

What is the meaning of this?

The former Desolate Queen's heart sank, as she sped towards the area where the explosion was. The Sanctuary Island couple followed closely behind.

The few of them arrived at the explosion nearly instantly. They saw the palace in ruins as it had been blasted apart by Yuan Qi. Amongst the destroyed walls, a Yuan Opening Desolate race Elder lay on the ground covered in blood. All his meridians had been severed and his dantian was destroyed. He had been killed!

"Elder Qingyue!"

The former Desolate Queen was enraged as she looked around but she saw nothing.

"God Advent Tower! Someone has stolen the God Advent Tower!"

The former Desolate Queen's expression immediately turned extremely ugly. This palace was where the God Advent Tower was sealed in. Someone had broke into the palace in broad daylight, killing a Desolate race Elder, stealing the God Advent Tower away!

"What did you say?" When the Sanctuary Island couple heard the former Desolate Queen's words, they were infuriated. "Young hero Yi's battle with the Black-armored Demon God had saved the Desolate race and Human race. Because of that battle, his survival is still unknown, yet someone took this opportunity to rob Young hero Yi of his treasure?"

One had to know that companion treasures of warriors were imbued with a spiritual imprint. Without the owner around, and the treasure obtained by someone else, slowly refining it would wipe the treasure of the imprint. After all, a spiritual imprint was no match against an expert.

Just thinking of how someone took advantage of Yi Yun being sealed to forcefully wipe out the imprint he left on the God Advent Tower, made many legendary Human and Desolate race figures furious.

Yi Yun was separated from the God Advent Tower by a spatial barrier, so his control of the God Advent Tower was extremely weak. To fish in troubled waters was an extremely despicable act.

"Let's split up and chase after that person. We cannot let that person succeed." The Sanctuary Island Lord said angrily.

He had a hunch that this was done by a human. The Desolate race was united by a Queen, and they had the religion of the Sacred Spirit. They were much more united than the Human race, so it was unlikely that they would steal what was in their care.

And for a human to do such a thing at that moment made the Sanctuary Island Lord furious.

"Chase after him!"

Shepherd Boy was the first to fly out. His body transformed into a blue beam of light, as he moved extremely fast.

Shepherd Boy could sense the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi fluctuations so he could chase after that person.

For a person who could instantly kill a Yuan Opening realm Elder, it had to be a Heaven Ascension mighty figure.

For a Heaven Ascension realm expert to escape at high speeds, he would naturally leave behind Yuan Qi fluctuations.

Behind Shepherd Boy, the Human and Desolate race experts chased closely behind by using the Yuan Qi fluctuations. Everyone in this group was extremely powerful. Even though they had been injured in the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, they still had their speed. After they chased a few thousand kilometers, the Yuan Qi fluctuation began to dwindle till it finally disappeared.

A bunch of legendary figures saw Shepherd Boy, who was the first to fly off, standing still alone mid air not far from them.

There was no trace of the person who had stolen the God Advent Tower.

"The Yuan Qi fluctuations ended here!" Shepherd Boy said with a frown.

The Sanctuary Island Lord's face turned ashen.

"Preposterous!"

Previously, there were many legendary Human figures who chose not to fight the Black-armored Demon God. For that, the Sanctuary Island couple did not think much of it. After all, everyone had their own thoughts. In the eyes of many, remaining in the remote mountains to fight the Black-armored Demon God was equivalent to dying in vain. Hence, they had the right to leave.

But now... Someone had stolen the God Advent Tower that Yi Yun left behind in front of them. This behavior was too despicable!

"This person is extremely powerful. I couldn't keep up." Shepherd Boy said as he shook his head.

He was indignant as Yi Yun had saved the Desolate race and Jiang Xiaorou. Yet, he could not even protect the God Advent Tower that Yi Yun left behind.

If he could not find the God Advent Tower, regardless of whether Yi Yun was alive or dead, he felt ashamed to face Yi Yun.

"This matter is likely done by a human. I'm really ashamed. I will answer to all of you." The Sanctuary Island Lord said with a sigh.

He had a guess who was the one who robbed the God Advent Tower, but he couldn't be sure.

"Then we will trouble the Sanctuary Island Lord. The God Advent Tower is of great importance, so please do it with great urgency."

The former Desolate Queen was clueless about how to retrieve the God Advent Tower, so she could only rely on the Sanctuary Island couple. However, she knew that with the Sanctuary Island couple injured, their cultivation levels had deteriorated. They might not be able to recover their peak conditions, and to search for the God Advent Tower in the vast Tian Yuan world? Difficult!

"Your Majesty, don't worry. Although a treasure separated from its owner can have the imprint wiped off easily, the God Advent Tower is no ordinary treasure. Regardless of who wants to wipe away Young Master Yi's imprint, it wouldn't be that easy." The Sanctuary Island Lord said, before he bade the Desolate race farewell, and embarked on the return journey back to the Tian Yuan world...

Chapter 750: The Pagoda Stealer

Tian Yuan world, Umbriferous Divine Palace.

It was a black palace situated at the bottom of a dark valley.

This valley was perennially covered in darkness, without seeing light. It would usually be dimmer in valleys, so the interior of the Umbriferous Divine Palace was pitch black. Mortals would not be able to see their fingers in front of them.

But in the Umbriferous Divine Palace, warriors were able to easily see around them.

At that moment, in a large hall in the Umbriferous Divine Palace's core, there was a hexagonal altar. A miniature six-storey pagoda was placed on the altar.

This small pagoda was Yi Yun's God Advent Tower!

Now, the God Advent Tower was completely sealed in the Umbriferous Divine Palace.

Around the God Advent Tower, dark red runes would occasionally appear in the hall. Energy waves would follow this runes and be transferred into the miniature pagoda. Every energy flow brought with it a dark red glow. The glow pulsed like flowing blood in veins.

This was a blood sacrifice array. The goal of setting this array was to wipe the imprint that Yi Yun had left on the God Advent Tower away. It was best way to wipe an imprint away using intense blood, Qi and killing aura.

Dozens of black-robed monks stood around the blood array. They were chanting ancient curses as their voice runes turned into demonic energies that were injected into the array before being injected into the God Advent Tower.

And in the middle of the array, the God Advent Tower stood there in a lusterless state, silently experiencing everything that being was done to it.

After leaving the Great Empress mystic realm, the God Advent Tower had lost the support of the Great Empress mystic realm's arrays. Now, it was only Yi Yun's enchanted treasure.

And without Yi Yun around, the God Advent Tower didn't have any intelligence. It would not retaliate against enemies that violated it. Hence, this bunch of people dared to slowly refine the God Advent Tower. If Yi Yun was around, a simple rumble of the God Advent Tower was enough to shock the black-robed monks into meat paste.

Now, the refinement of the God Advent Tower wasn't going very smoothly.

The arrays in the God Advent Tower were extremely profound and intricate. It was impossible to understand the array

formations, so what they could only do was slowly deplete the God Advent Tower's array formations of their energy.

The Heaven Earth Yuan Qi in this Umbriferous Divine Palace was isolated by the blood array. Without Heaven Earth Yuan Qi being provided to it, the God Advent Tower had no way of replenishing its energy.

And in the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, the God Advent Tower had been greatly depleted of energy. It was the best opportunity to refine the God Advent Tower.

"I don't believe that with twenty years, I won't be able to deal with a dead object."

A gray-robed man enveloped by black gas walked out of the Umbriferous grand hall. His skin was pale, and there was a strange cursed seal on the middle of his eyebrows. He looked extremely sinister.

"Refining this pagoda twenty-four hours a day, without a single break, only until the pagoda's energy is drained completely. If you are able to do that, I will reward you generously. If you can't, then none of you are worthy of living!" The gray-robed man said with a cold voice.

These black-robed monks were nurtured in the Umbriferous Divine Palace. They had been taken in since they were young, and they were death knights loyal to the Umbriferous Divine Palace.

The Umbriferous Divine Palace was a mysterious faction in the Tian Yuan world, and its owner was considered the number one person in the Tian Yuan world, Sovereign of the Eventide.

One year ago, the Sovereign of the Eventide and the Sanctuary Island couple had established the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium. They had invited Yi Yun, and the Sovereign of the Eventide had targeted Yi Yun unfairly, intending to get Yi Yun to sign a soul contract which promised to never attack the Tian Yuan world's factions when he one day became strong. However, Yi Yun ignored him completely and it even turned into a fight. Shentu Patriarch had fought Yi Yun, and he had nearly been killed by him!

Finally, if not for the Sovereign of the Eventide interfering, Shentu Patriarch would have been destroyed by Yi Yun!

Although the Sovereign of the Eventide saved Shentu Patriarch, he could do nothing about Yi Yun, and he had to let Yi Yun leave freely.

At that meeting, the Sovereign of the Eventide became enemies with Yi Yun.

Later on, when the Black-armored Demon God appeared, the Sovereign of the Eventide had disappeared. In the Divine Wilderness's remote mountains battle, the Sanctuary Island couple led the legendary human figures in battle. But as the number one human, the Sovereign of the Eventide did not show up...

From the moment that the Black-armored Demon God appeared,

the Sovereign of the Eventide had vanished. Only now did he appear, but only to steal the God Advent Tower.

If Yi Yun was here, he would probably find it hard to recognize the Sovereign of the Eventide.

This was because, back at Greatsword Mountain, Yi Yun saw the Sovereign of the Eventide as a thin old man, and he looked like a walking zombie.

But now, the Sovereign of the Eventide was a middle-aged man with pale skin. He looked a lot different.

The Sovereign of the Eventide had eyed the God Advent Tower for a long time ago. Now, with Yi Yun sealed, it was the best opportunity for him to obtain the God Advent Tower.

The only problem was that refining it was extremely difficult.

At that moment, a red-dressed girl walked into the hall and knelt down on one knee in front of the Sovereign of the Eventide.

"Congratulations to the Lord for obtaining the God Advent Tower. However... in twenty years, I wonder how the Lord will handle the appearance of the Black-armored Demon God?"

This red-dressed girl was also groomed by the Umbriferous Divine Palace since she was young. She was loyal to the Sovereign of the Eventide, but she knew that over all these years, despite the

Sovereign of the Eventide hiding his true strength, and even if he obtained greater strength through the God Advent Tower as his personal treasure in twenty years time, he would still... be powerless against the Black-armored Demon God.

"Black-armored Demon God?" The Sovereign of the Eventide sneered. "He is an ancient Demon God that had lived for tens of thousands of years. Even if his current strength is less than 1% of its original self, it is not something that we can handle. That bunch of foolish people even thought of killing the Black-armored Demon God. That is completely absurd!"

"Thankfully, Yi Yun was dumb enough, hence, giving me this opportunity. Now that Yi Yun is lost in the alternate dimension's maze, and doesn't even know spatial dimension laws, there is no way that he can come out. It would be useless even if he knows that I'm refining the God Advent Tower. I also have no plans on fighting the Black-armored Demon God. This Tian Yuan world is considered an abandoned world, but in fact, there are spatial nodes that connect it to the 12 Empyrean Heavens. With the God Advent Tower, I should be able to use those spatial nodes to head to the 12 Empyrean Heavens. As for the appearance of the Black-armored Demon God in twenty years, what would that have to do with me? As long as I'm in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, who cares if the Tian Yuan world perishes! When the time comes, those idiots in the Tian Yuan world as well as that barbaric race in the Divine Wilderness will all die." Sovereign of the Eventide said with a grin.

Of course, this was all on the premise of him refining the God Advent Tower! As he looked at the God Advent Tower, he waved his hand gently, and a huge squarish seal flew out of his interspatial ring. The squarish seal shimmered with a pale gold

luster and looked extremely heavy.

The seal hovered mid air, and it spun with a buzz as it emitted black beams of light in all directions.

"Suppress!"

Waving his hand downwards, the seal slammed heavily on the God Advent Tower!

"Dang!"

A crisp metallic collision sounded, as the altar shook vigorously, like it could not withstand the impact. However, the God Advent Tower remained still. Instead, the pale gold seal was sent flying away!

The Sovereign of the Eventide took a deep breath. The more powerful the God Advent Tower was, the more excited he became. Only such a treasure was worth him putting in so much effort.

A voracious smile appeared at the corner of his lips as he muttered to himself in a deep voice. "What a good treasure, but no matter how good a treasure is, it is just a treasure and it is dead. Without your owner present, I'll smash down on you a hundred times a day. I want to see how long that array of yours can last!"

Chapter 751: Statue Shatters

In the alternate dimension where the Black-armored Demon God was sealed, Yi Yun sat quietly in meditation. A green leaf floated not far away from him. As the green leaf spun, it fluttered through the void slowly, entering the spatial barrier at times before appearing once again.

A spatial barrier that could isolate Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was completely ineffective against the Dao Leaf.

As the Dao Leaf entered the spatial barrier time and time again, Yi Yun's consciousness followed the Dao Leaf as he experienced the spatial dimensional powers in the spatial barrier, so he could be enlightened on spatial dimension laws.

The spatial dimension laws in the Dao Leaf were far closer to the Origins of spatial dimension powers than the spatial barrier. It was formed out of the Chaos when the Universe first was formed. Back then, heaven and earth had yet to appear and space itself had yet to form.

The Universe began from Chaos before Yin-Yang and space-time formed. Finally, the five elements appeared, forming all matter.

The spatial dimension laws of Chaos could be said to be the essence of spatial dimensions.

Hence, when the Dao Leaf flittered through the spatial barrier, the power of the spatial dimension's barrier would even open up,

like it was evading the Dao Leaf. Wherever the Dao Leaf passed, there would be energy flow left behind. All this could be clearly seen in Yi Yun's energy vision.

For Yi Yun to have the Dao Leaf and the Purple Crystal at the same time, this unique method of Dao-enlightenment was truly unrivaled.

Unfortunately, this method of Dao-enlightenment could not be shared with Lin Xintong.

The Dao Leaf had fallen for Yi Yun, while Yi Yun had been sitting under the Dao Tree for more than half a year to seek enlightenment. Furthermore, it was done in the Pure Yang Sword Palace.

Now, even though Lin Xintong could see the Dao Leaf, the insights in the Dao Leaf could not leave as deep an impression on her as much as Yi Yun.

However, Lin Xintong's perception was surprisingly good. She was extremely focused on her martial path. Even if gaining insight in her present situation was extremely difficult, she did not falter one bit.

Suddenly, Yi Yun frowned and opened his tightly shut eyes. It was like two lightning beams that flashed in the dark alternate dimension.

"God Advent Tower!?" While Yi Yun was in a mystical state of meditation, he suddenly sensed the abnormal changes to the God Advent Tower.

It seemed like someone was attacking and refining the God Advent Tower.

He had been pulled into the alternate dimension by the God Advent Tower, while the God Advent Tower had been left behind with the Desolate race. No one in the Desolate race would use this treasure, what more attempt to refine the God Advent Tower.

Yi Yun guessed that something had happened to the God Advent Tower. Someone had used some trick to steal it from the Desolate race.

Now, that person was trying to wipe the imprint he had left in the God Advent Tower away.

As the possessor of the God Advent Tower, his spiritual connection with the God Advent Tower had weakened a lot due to the spatial barrier. However, he was the first to realize it when someone attempted to refine the God Advent Tower.

Regardless of who that person was, it was impossible for that person to take it for himself. That was the Azure Yang Lord's enchanted treasure. It was not something that anyone could refine, however... the spiritual imprint he had left in the God Advent Tower was different.

If that person kept draining the God Advent Tower's arrays of their energy, and by cutting the provision of Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, the God Advent Tower would not be able to replenish its energy. Then, the energy in the God Advent Tower's arrays would slowly dissipate, and it would not be able to protect the spiritual imprint that he left in the God Advent Tower.

When that happened, his spiritual imprint would be forcefully wiped away. This would cause non-trivial damage to Yi Yun's soul.

Things went from bad to worse. Yi Yun took a deep breath and he ignored the God Advent Tower. He shut his eyes once again.

Despite knowing of something happening, it did not cause any changes to his mental wellbeing.

It was useless being anxious while trapped in the alternate dimension. The only thing he needed to do was gain insight into the spatial dimension laws, so he could finish the Black-armored Demon God!

...

In the Umbriferous Divine Palace.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

A deafening explosion happened again and again.

The Sovereign of the Eventide had once again put his pale gold seal away and looked at the undamaged God Advent Tower.

He would slam on the God Advent Tower every day and night. The blood sacrificial array was also constantly in a circular motion, but this was an extremely slow way of draining the God Advent Tower of its energy. If this went on, it would take them at least another seven or eight years before they could fully drain the God Advent Tower of its energy.

Back then, in Yi Yun's fight with the Black-armored Demon God, the Black-armored Demon God had attempted to break through the God Advent Tower's array, but he did not do so. Instead, he used spatial dimensional forces to bind the God Advent Tower. This was because breaking through the array required a long period of time.

And compared to the Black-armored Demon God's strength, the augmentation of the Sovereign of the Eventide's pale gold seal and the blood sacrificial array were inferior to the aftershocks of the Black-armored Demon God's blow.

Although the God Advent Tower was drained of a great deal of energy, the remaining energy could be described as being as massive as an ocean.

It was extremely difficult for the Sovereign of the Eventide to use such methods to drain the God Advent Tower of its energy.

The Sovereign of the Eventide was beginning to feel impatient. After all, there was still the threat of the Black-armored Demon God. He needed to speed things up.

If he could increase the pale gold seal's offensive strength, it would be much easier to drain the God Advent Tower of its energy.

And for this to happen, the Sovereign of the Eventide had long figured out a solution. This was also the second thing that the Sovereign of the Eventide thought of doing!

After taking another look at the God Advent Tower, the Sovereign of the Eventide revealed a sinister smile. With a flash of his figure, he disappeared from the Umbriferous Divine Palace.

His goal was the Desolate race!

And at that moment, in the Desolate race's territory.

After having the God Advent Tower stolen under their eyes, many members of the Desolate race were furious. They also felt that they had let down Yi Yun.

Yi Yun had saved the Desolate race, yet they could not even protect Yi Yun's treasure well.

However, they also knew that the person who stole the God Advent Tower was a Heaven Ascension realm expert. Even the Shepherd Boy and the Sanctuary Island Lord had failed to catch up

to that person. So even if they were furious, they could not do a single thing.

Here, they could only guard the void where Yi Yun had disappeared. They longed for the day where Yi Yun and Lin Xintong would return, despite knowing their hopes were extremely slim.

On this day, the remote mountains were enjoying good weather. The fog of war had dispersed, but the entire Desolate race's territory was enshrouded by a dark shadow.

Jiang Xiaorou was silently sitting in front of the Sacred Spirit's statue.

Ever since Yi Yun had disappeared, she had been sitting there day and night in arduous cultivation.

In a warrior's world, strength was everything.

Jiang Xiaorou had heard from her mother that she possessed this world's strongest bloodline. She had just been unable to develop the full powers from her bloodline at the moment.

If she possessed enough strength, would she have been helpless when the Black-armored Demon God attacked the remote mountains? That she eventually had to see Yi Yun get sealed in the alternate dimension, without knowing what had happened to him?

Jiang Xiaorou had been meditating in front of the Sacred Spirit's statue for more than a month. Today, Jiang Xiaorou felt her heart suddenly tingle. She felt a deep ominous feeling.

She suddenly opened her pair of beautiful eyes. This was...

She held the bone staff in her hand tightly as she got up. Suddenly...

Ka Ka Ka!

The sound of crisp cracking echoed in Jiang Xiaorou's ears. In front of Jiang Xiaorou, a series of cracks had appeared on the Sacred Spirit's statue.

The Sacred Spirit statue that had existed for tens of millions of years... had suddenly shattered today. What was going on?

Jiang Xiaorou felt a sense of doubt and anxiousness. She crushed a voice transmission charm, sending the news of the Sacred Spirit statue shattering.

Now, nearly all the Desolate race's Empyreal Kings were gathered in the remote mountains. Informing all the legendary Desolate race figures of the situation was the safest option.

Jiang Xiaorou took a deep breath as she walked out of the hall with her bone staff in hand.

Chapter 752: Sacred Spirit's Corpse

When Jiang Xiaorou walked out of the Desolate race palace, she saw that in the remote mountains, the endless marshlands and stretches of collapsed mountains were covered by a dark cloud.

A man in black robes hovered high in the sky, and behind him were some of his followers.

This black-robed man gave people a very cold feeling. After his appearance, it was like the sky had darkened greatly as a dark, sticky energy seemed to permeate the void. It was from the Laws of Darkness!

"Who is he?"

Jiang Xiaorou was stunned and she felt a deep sense of unease. And at that moment, the former Desolate Queen, Shepherd Boy, and many legendary Desolate race figures had rushed over.

Seeing the black-robed man in the sky, their hearts sank.

The former Desolate Queen was flying high in the sky and when she saw the black-robed man, she could vaguely sense his cultivation level. It was at the peak of the middle-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm, and it was even closing in on the late-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm!

The peak of the middle-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm?

In the entire Tian Yuan world, including the Divine Wilderness where the Desolate race resided, the number of experts that had attained the Heaven Ascension realm were extremely few. And most of them were nearly at the early-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm. For example, the Sanctuary Island couple were only at the peak of the early-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm. The two of them were proficient in the art of joint attacks, and by combining forces, they had the offensive strength of the middle-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm.

As for a middle-stage Heaven Ascension realm expert, there was only one. He was the Sovereign of the Eventide!

The Sovereign of the Eventide was the strongest figure in the Tian Yuan world, so although the former Desolate Queen had never met the Sovereign of the Eventide, she knew that he was supposed to look like an old man. He did not resemble the middle-aged man in front of her.

However, having differing looks was not enough to say that they were two different people, especially when this middle-aged man cultivated the Law of Darkness, which was the same as the Sovereign of the Eventide!

"You are the Sovereign of the Eventide?"

The former Desolate Queen had a cold expression. During the battle in the remote mountains, both the Human and Desolate race had paid a heavy price. Many of the legendary Human and

Desolate race figures had burned their life force essence, dropping in cultivation realms, as well as dying in battle.

Yet, the Sovereign of the Eventide never appeared. As the only middle-stage Heaven Ascension realm warrior in this world, he definitely knew about the intense battle in the remote mountains. However, he did not appear during the battle, and now that the calamity was temporarily put on hold, he had appeared.

The moment he appeared, he came with unkind intentions. This made the former Desolate Queen think of the theft of the God Advent Tower more than ten days ago. This made her facial expression sink.

"It's you who stole the God Advent Tower!?"

To be able to kill a Yuan Opening realm Desolate race Elder in an instant, and rely on his speed to evade a bunch of legendary Human and Desolate race figures pursuing them, there were not many that could do that in this world. The Sovereign of the Eventide was highly suspicious!

"Hahaha! Your Majesty, please don't malign me. After the Black-armored Demon God appeared, I went into reclusive training and I hoped to make a breakthrough in my cultivation realm, so I could provide a bit of strength to save this world. Unfortunately... after I exited seclusion, I heard that the Black-armored Demon God had been repulsed by Yi Yun as well as the Human and Desolate race experts and now, the Black-armored Demon God has sealed himself. I find it such a pity that I missed the battle in the remote mountains!"

"I'm also very impressed by Young Master Yi's fabulous display of his skill during the battle in the remote mountains. I would love to protect the God Advent Tower left behind by Young Master Yi, so how could I steal it?" The Sovereign of the Eventide said with a plausible tone.

Regardless, Yi Yun's battle with the Black-armored Demon God had temporarily saved the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness. Now, many family clans had returned to their family clan's territories. The legendary human figures, who had personally experienced the battle in the remote mountains, were full of praise for Yi Yun, including the Sanctuary Island couple who were even more so. Hence, Yi Yun enjoyed great prestige in the Tian Yuan world now.

Even though the Sovereign of the Eventide was considered the strongest figure in the Tian Yuan world, he did not dare openly admit to the great crime of stealing the God Advent Tower.

As long as the Sovereign of the Eventide refused to admit it, then no matter how much suspicion the Human or Desolate race had for him, it would be useless.

"This despicable person."

The former Desolate Queen was enraged. The Sovereign of the Eventide was too shameless.

"You came here today, striking our Desolate race's Divine Bone

Altar. Is that a declaration of war against us?"

Below the Sovereign of the Eventide was the Desolate race's Divine Bone Altar.

The Divine Bone Altar was an important treasure of the Desolate race. Back then, Jiang Xiaorou had done her worshiping on top of the Divine Bone Altar, awakening her ancient bloodline, eventually obtaining the recognition of the Sacred Spirit.

Now, the Desolate race's headquarters had been moved to the remote mountains, so the Divine Bone Altar had naturally been moved here.

A while ago, the Sovereign of the Eventide had struck the Divine Bone Altar, activating the arrays in it. This also alerted the legendary Desolate race figures to rush here.

"Hahaha! Your Majesty, what are you saying? Why would I declare war on the Desolate race? In the face of a calamity, before the Black-armored Demon God is destroyed, the Human race and Desolate race have to stay united."

"I came here today because I have an ancient Desolate bone relic recipe in my hands. It is an ancient mystic relic that can help my cultivation go one step further. However, the materials needed to refine this relic are extremely scarce. In the entire Divine Wilderness, even killing a few primordial true spirits would not be enough, so I came here today for the Sacred Spirit's corpse. I never expected your esteemed race to bury the Sacred Spirit's corpse

beneath the Divine Bone Altar. I wanted to borrow the Sacred Spirit's corpse to refine a cauldron of relics, but I didn't expect a protective array to be residing on the Divine Bone Altar, so I inadvertently activated the array. Sorry for disturbing all of you."

As the Sovereign of the Eventide said this, he nonchalantly cupped his hands at the legendary Desolate race figures, like he was doing something trivial.

However, these words enraged the Desolate race immediately when they fell into their ears.

Sacred Spirit's corpse! This Sovereign of the Eventide dared to covet the Sacred Spirit's corpse!

The Sacred Spirit was a religion to the Desolate race. It had protected the Desolate race for tens of millions of years, and it was equivalent to their God.

If it wasn't for the Sacred Spirit in the Desolate race Headquarters several months ago, the Desolate race would probably have been wiped out.

And following that, in the battle in the remote mountains, the Sacred Spirit had burned the last of its life force, dying in battle for the Desolate race. The Desolate race had buried the Sacred Spirit underneath the Divine Bone Altar. But now, a human wanted to use its corpse to refine into relics!

Was this even tolerable?

Immediately, swaths of murderous intent locked onto the Sovereign of the Eventide. As the atmosphere turned tense, many legendary Desolate race figures were already tempted to attack him.

Seeing the Desolate race reacting like that, the Sovereign of the Eventide shook his head, like he felt distressed.

He said, "All of us are martial arts practitioners. In twenty years time, the Black-armored Demon God will return once again. Yet, you have the intention to kill me now? This is very disappointing for me."

"Yi Yun and Lin Xintong are already dead. You have burned your blood essence, dropping in cultivation realms. There is no way for you to withstand the Black-armored Demon God. In twenty years, who is going to face him in battle?"

"Back then, the Sacred Spirit of your esteemed race burned its life force to strike the Black-armored Demon God. That was such a respectable act, and the Sacred Spirit's sacrifice was no doubt to save the Divine Wilderness and kill the Black-armored Demon God completely. Unfortunately, the Black-armored Demon God is still alive, while Yi Yun and Lin Xintong have failed as well."

"I think that if the Sacred Spirit is aware of this in the nether world, it would wish that it could provide the last bit of warmth hope. Against the Black-armored Demon God, I'm sure the Sacred

Spirit is willing to give up its corpse. Now, the strongest warrior in this world is the lowly me. If I were to make a breakthrough, there might be a tiny bit of chance that I will be able to lead all of you to kill the Black-armored Demon God, and let all of you survive."

Chapter 753: Gift

The legendary Desolate race figures never thought that a person could be so shameless. The Sovereign of the Eventide had failed to steal the Sacred Spirit's corpse and he had activated the Divine Bone Altar's arrays as a result. Yet, he stood there, all high and mighty, like he was on a moral high ground and he even reprimanded them.

It was like the Sovereign of the Eventide was doing this for all life under the skies, while the Desolate race appeared selfish.

The legendary Desolate race figures were tempted to attack him, but at that moment, a crisp voice resounded beneath the dark clouds.

"Yun'er will not die." Jiang Xiaorou, with her bone staff in hand, stood in front of the Desolate race Palace. As the cold wind blew, Jiang Xiaorou's red dress fluttered about. She stood in great contrast against the dark sky.

The Sovereign of the Eventide was slightly surprised as he turned his head around and looked at Jiang Xiaorou. "I know you. You are Yi Yun's Desolate race sister, right? I understand the yearning in your heart, but unfortunately..." The Sovereign of the Eventide shook his head. "The time you spent cultivating martial arts is short, so you are limited in your realms. You can't understand the terrifying complexities of the spatial maze set up by the Black-armored Demon God. There is a vast difference between the understanding of spatial dimension laws amongst the Tian Yuan world and Divine Wilderness warriors and the Black-armored

Demon God's. Although my strength might not match up to Yi Yun, I happen to be one of the few people in this world that understand spatial dimension laws. But even I would be forever lost if I were to be sealed in the Black-armored Demon God's spatial maze."

Jiang Xiaorou looked coldly at the Sovereign of the Eventide. She said slowly but with a forceful tone, "Indeed, I do not understand the terror of the Black-armored Demon God, but I know that even if I were to hand you the Sacred Spirit's corpse, and even if you were to break through by a few realms, you would still be like manure in front of the Black-armored Demon God! Yun'er could force the Black-armored Demon God to seal himself. As for you, all you could do was flee before the Black-armored Demon God arrived. You were like a mouse tunneling into a hole to hide. Hoping that you would withstand the Black-armored Demon God in twenty years time? I rather hope that the Black-armored Demon God would commit suicide!"

Jiang Xiaorou got to the truth with her pertinent remarks. She voiced out what many of the legendary Desolate race figures were thinking.

The Sovereign of the Eventide's eyebrow pricked up as he narrowed his eyes to look at Jiang Xiaorou.

And at that moment, the legendary Desolate race figures were already transmitting voices amongst themselves. They were prepared to attack!

They believed that the God Advent Tower was in the Sovereign

of the Eventide's hands. And they had to protect the object that Yi Yun had left behind by all means!

"Hur!"

The Sovereign of the Eventide sneered. "You want to set up a battle formation to fight me? How would I allow that!?"

Upon saying this, the Sovereign of the Eventide moved. He long knew about the God Confining Lock that the Desolate race had. As the God Confining Lock array was extremely draining on the legendary Desolate race figures, and having used it twice during the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, many legendary Desolate race figures had suffered a drop in their cultivation realms. Now, it was unknown if they could successfully activate such an array.

Even if they could, the setting up of the God Confining Lock array required time. Such an array could only be effective if it was set up in advance for a known incoming invader. With the Sovereign of the Eventide suddenly coming, how would he watch idly as the legendary Desolate race figures setup the array?

The Sovereign of the Eventide flew straight at the former Desolate Queen. He knew that the God Confining Lock's array disk was in the former Desolate Queen's hands!

"Suppress!"

A squarish pale gold seal flew out of the Sovereign of the Eventide's hands. The seal flickered with a black glow as it came suppressing down on the former Desolate Queen!

"Your Majesty!"

A blue beam flashed from beside the former Desolate Queen. Shepherd Boy had rushed forward to face the Sovereign of the Eventide!

Shepherd Boy was extremely talented, and his strength was one of the top few amongst the Desolate race. However, due to his bravery in the battle against the Black-armored Demon God a few months ago, he was greatly drained, so he was currently in a weak state.

"A pearl grain of rice dares to compete with a moon's luminosity?"

The Sovereign of the Eventide sneered and with a revolution of the pale gold seal, it came smashing down on the Shepherd Boy.

"Boom!"

Black Yuan Qi exploded out in all directions. The blue beam was shattered immediately as the Shepherd Boy grunted. He had been sent into retreat by the pale gold seal, and that strike had damaged his meridians.

The Sovereign of the Eventide was already the strongest warrior in this world, so Shepherd Boy was not his match, to begin with. Now, the Sovereign of the Eventide was at his peak, while Shepherd Boy was in a trough. In this waxing and waning situation, the difference between their strengths was even greater.

"Die!"

The Sovereign of the Eventide controlled the pale gold seal as he suppressed it downwards like a mountain. He aimed it at the Shepherd Boy's head. He had already decided on fleeing into the 12 Empyrean Heavens, so he did not mind a deadly feud with the Desolate race. If killing all the legendary Desolate race figures allowed him to obtain the Sacred Spirit's corpse, he would choose to do so without hesitation. As for when the Black-armored Demon God appeared once again, the Sovereign of the Eventide couldn't even be bothered if there was anyone who could resist him.

Seeing the pale gold seal about to smash downwards, with Shepherd Boy's life on the line, the legendary Desolate race figures felt their hearts tightened. The former Desolate Queen waved her hands, and out of the sleeves of her robe, a squarish array disk flew out. It was the God Confining Lock array.

At that moment, the array disk flashed with golden beams of light. The array disk flew up to the Sovereign of the Eventide's head and the other legendary Desolate race figures had flown at the Sovereign of the Eventide, with great teamwork. They were already prepared to work alongside the effects of the array disk to seal the Sovereign of the Eventide.

If the Sovereign of the Eventide carried on attacking Shepherd Boy, it was very likely that he would be sealed to death by the God Confining Lock.

"Oh? The array was set up so fast?"

The Sovereign of the Eventide frowned. Of course, he wouldn't exchange his life for the Shepherd Boy's life. At the same moment that the pale gold seal came crashing down, the Sovereign of the Eventide flew high up into the sky to escape the scope of the God Confining Lock array.

"Boom!"

The pale gold seal slammed heavily into Shepherd Boy's arm as he had crossed it in front of his chest to forcefully block the strike. Although it was a hasty blow, it had still fractured Shepherd Boy's bones!

"I'll spare your life temporarily!"

As he was afraid of the God Confining Lock, the Sovereign of the Eventide kept far away from it.

"Roar! Roar! Roar!"

The furious roars of primordial true spirits echoed from the Desolate race Palace's surroundings. The primordial true spirits that protected the Desolate race Palace were rushing over!

Controlling desolate beasts was one of the most important battle techniques that the Desolate race had. Although these legendary Desolate race figures had suffered a drop in cultivation realms, the primordial true spirits would still remain a challenge for the Sovereign of the Eventide. Furthermore, with them about to finish setting up the God Confining Lock array, this made the Sovereign of the Eventide realize that he could not stay here for long.

"Fall of the Eternal Night!"

With a long hum from the Sovereign of the Eventide, black Yuan Qi surged out of his body, creating an explosive force field!

The sticky power of Darkness enveloped the remote mountains.

All the legendary Desolate race figures were enshrouded within.

"Careful!"

Everyone felt alarmed. This was the Sovereign of the Eventide's domain!

Warriors could use their energies to form a domain and demarcate a space. They would then become a master of that space.

As they were immersed in the Darkness, the legendary Desolate

race figures felt an inexplicable sense of despair, like their souls would forever reside in Darkness.

In front of the Desolate race Palace, Jiang Xiaorou was enveloped in the Eternal Night domain. She used her bone staff to support her body. Her face turned pale as her soul sea felt a sharp pain. It was so unbearable that it nearly made her lose consciousness.

"Break the domain first!"

The former Desolate Queen shouted. The legendary Desolate race figures teamed up and they were about to break the Sovereign of the Eventide's domain open.

At that moment, a raucous laughter came from the Sovereign of the Eventide amidst the Darkness. "I'll leave a gift with you. See you later!"

Chapter 754: Laws Of Darkness

"Whew!"

The Sovereign of the Eventide blended into a black beam of light that shot towards the heavens at an incredible speed. His followers had also been wrapped up in the black light, disappearing along with him!

The Eternal Night domain had disappeared, reducing the suppressive feeling and sense of despair to the soul. The pressure that disappeared suddenly made the legendary Desolate race figures feel an excruciating pain to their soul sea instantly.

The Empyreal Kings were alright, but the weaker Desolate race young elites, including Jiang Xiaorou, were in terrible shape. They felt a strong sense of dizziness, the weaker ones even fainted straight away.

Jiang Xiaorou took a deep breath as she touched her chest, and her eyebrows furrowed.

She felt a tingling pain in her heart.

With the Sovereign of the Eventide gone, the legendary Desolate race figures were furious but they could not do a thing. The Sovereign of the Eventide had escaped just as they finished setting up the God Confining Lock array.

Although the God Confining Lock array was extremely powerful, it was not flexible. Typical arrays were used in a defensive manner, and with the Sovereign of the Eventide prepared for it, hoping to kill him after he flew into the array's effective range was very difficult.

"That shameless person!"

The former Desolate Queen took a deep breath. She was considering on how to use the existing resources to kill the Sovereign of the Eventide, but under careful analysis, the Sovereign of the Eventide's strength far exceeded anyone of them. Furthermore, the Desolate race had been forced to retreat to the remote mountains. Many of the legendary Desolate race figures were injured, while the Desolate race headquarters, that had accumulated in strength for tens of millions of years, had been destroyed by the Black-armored Demon God, as such it was abandoned. Under such circumstances, the Sovereign of the Eventide could nearly have total freedom to come and go. It was very difficult for them to prevent that from happening.

"Qing Kui, are you fine?"

The former Desolate Queen looked at Shepherd Boy. He was covered in blood with his face pale, and one of his arms was fractured.

He forced a laugh, saying, "I'm fine. I'll recover after taking a few days of rest."

Although Shepherd Boy said so, everyone knew that he was barely holding on. He had yet to recover from the injuries that he received from the Black-armored Demon God. With his blood essence greatly drained, and now, with new injuries added on, it was a problem if he could recover in the future. It might even cause irreparable damage to Shepherd Boy's potential and lifespan.

"Qing Kui, Xiaorou and I owe you too much." The former Desolate Queen sighed. All these years, the Shepherd Boy had been loyal. Regardless of the danger, he would be first in line to protect them. He had saved the Desolate race and Jiang Xiaorou more than once.

Shepherd Boy smiled again as he shook his head, about to say something. At that moment, a legendary Desolate race figure's expression suddenly changed. He exclaimed, "Someone has fainted!"

"Huh!?"

After experiencing the loss of the God Advent Tower and the attack of the Sovereign of the Eventide, the Desolate race was on high alert. Having suddenly heard of people fainting, these legendary Desolate race figures rushed there immediately.

They spread their perception around the palace and they easily discovered the situation.

In fact, there was not only one person who had fainted.

More than a dozen young Desolate race elites had fainted. A simple check showed that these people had received a spiritual damage!

A black energy had entered deep into their soul seas, and spread out in all directions like a spiderweb, becoming one with their souls.

This is...

The former Desolate Queen felt alarmed and enraged. The black energy was filled with Darkness, and without a doubt, it was left behind by the Sovereign of the Eventide!

The Sovereign of the Eventide had realized that he was no match for the primordial true spirits and the Desolate race's array, so he decided to retreat. However, before his retreat, he had cast a tremendously powerful Eternal Night domain. This Eternal Night domain was not targeted at the legendary Desolate race figures because he knew that against so many legendary Desolate race figures, it was unlikely that the Eternal Night domain could have much effect. His target from the very beginning was the young Desolate race elites!

The Darkness-elemental energy had embedded itself into the young Desolate race elites' souls as the Eternal Night domain expanded. It had merged with their souls and began devouring their spiritual energies!

It would not kill their young elites for the moment, but it would

gradually weaken their souls. It was not difficult to remove the Darkness energy, but with the Darkness energy spreading out into numerous strands, it was tightly bound to the young elites' souls. Wiping out the energy would inadvertently damage the young elites' souls, and it might even turn them into retards.

And as for how to extract the Darkness energy? It probably would need someone whose attainment in Laws of Darkness were on a level approaching the Sovereign of the Eventide. And if one searched throughout the entire Tian Yuan world, there were not many legendary figures who cultivated in the Laws of Darkness. As for trying to find someone who surpassed the Sovereign of the Eventide, that was just a joke.

Instantly, the faces of the legendary Desolate race figures turned ugly. The Sovereign of the Eventide had attacked so many young elites in such a split instant, but the fact that he did not kill them was clearly a threat. It increased his chips for negotiation!

He was still eyeing the Sacred Spirit's corpse. Probably only by handing over the Sacred Spirit's corpse would the Sovereign of the Eventide agree to remove the Darkness mark on the young Desolate race elites.

The Sovereign of the Eventide had indulged into such madness.

The threat of the Black-armored Demon God still existed, yet he had done such a despicable deed to the Desolate race. He had ignored his status and attacked juniors. This was an act worthy of condemnation in the martial world.

"Oh no!" The former Desolate Queen's body suddenly stiffened up. "Rou'er!"

With a flash, she rushed straight at Jiang Xiaorou. Having attacked so many young elites, it was impossible for the Sovereign of the Eventide to avoid Jiang Xiaorou. After all, Jiang Xiaorou was the Desolate race's most important new Queen.

The group of legendary Desolate race figures felt their hearts tightened as they also rushed towards Jiang Xiaorou. They saw her face as white as a sheet. She was meditating on the ground, but despite not fainting, she was clearly not in a good condition.

The former Desolate Queen pressed her fingers on Jiang Xiaorou's forehead and felt her meridians. This probe caused the former Desolate Queen's heart to turn cold.

Jiang Xiaorou's body was filled with more than a hundred black energy bodies!

The black energy bodies in other young Desolate race elites combined was not even a fifth of what Jiang Xiaorou had!

The Sovereign of the Eventide clearly knew about Jiang Xiaorou's importance. Hence, he had placed the focal point on Jiang Xiaorou.

This was the so-called 'gift' before the Sovereign of the Eventide left!

"Xiaorou... " The former Desolate Queen's eyes were moist. She had been in command of the Divine Wilderness for years, and as Desolate Queen, she was in control of the world's strongest faction. However, today, she felt a stab right at the weakest spot in her heart.

Her love that ended in tragedy back in her youth with Jiang Xiaorou's father. She later lost her daughter, causing Jiang Xiaorou to experience all sorts of difficulties in the Cloud Wilderness.

It was not easy for her to find Jiang Xiaorou again, but soon, they experienced the return of Blood Moon and the Black-armored Demon God. This made Jiang Xiaorou tether on the line of life and death.

Now that the calamity with the Black-armored Demon God was temporarily put on hold, it was the Sovereign of the Eventide's turn. He had planted so much Darkness energy inside her body!

Seeing more than a hundred Darkness energy bodies, devouring Jiang Xiaorou's life force like leeches, the former Desolate Queen could no longer stop herself from crying.

Enough. The Desolate race had already experienced too much. She and her daughter had already experienced so much.

Would the two of them really have to die, and the Desolate race be exterminated before all of this would come to an end?

Chapter 755: Void Tearing

"Your Majesty... Do we really have to hand over the sacred remains of the Sacred Spirit?" A legendary Desolate race figure asked in a helpless manner.

The former Desolate Queen did not answer. She used all her remaining strength to hug Jiang Xiaorou like she wanted to merge her daughter into her own body...

She truly did not know how to resolve the situation. The Sacred Spirit had protected the Desolate race for tens of millions of years, sacrificing its life for the Desolate race, so how could she hand over the Sacred Spirit's corpse?

The Sacred Spirit did not belong to the Desolate race, to begin with. She did not have the right to use the Sacred Spirit's corpse to exchange for her daughter's life.

At that moment, Shepherd Boy was standing beside her. He had a deadpan expression, but the look in his eyes was fearsome. Many legendary Desolate race figures present had known Shepherd Boy for years, but they had never seen him in such a murderous state.

"Give the order. Gather all Desolate race warriors who know Laws of Darkness in the palace. Also, inform Sanctuary Island Lord of this matter... "

Shepherd Boy was a proud person, and unless necessary, he would never seek the help of others. But now, the solution to the

damage caused by the Laws of Darkness was something probably only the Sanctuary Island couple could come up with. After all, in terms of nomological attainments, it was more of a forte of the Human race rather than that of the Desolate race.

...

By the time the Sanctuary Island couple received the news and rushed to the remote mountains, it had been twenty days.

No one could remove the darkness energy left behind by the Sovereign of the Eventide. It was an extremely damaging attack. The person, who originally created it, did it not for killing, but for torturing and threatening.

It was even possible that the person who created this attack was the Sovereign of the Eventide himself. Under such circumstances, how could he allow others to crack his Darkness energy so easily?

"Your Majesty, I apologize for I do not have a solution either."

The Sanctuary Island Lord shook his head. A few legendary human figures, who had some understanding of the Laws of Darkness, had accompanied him, but they also shook their heads.

Towards such a scum that came from the Human race, these legendary human figures felt ashamed. However, they too were out of options. They had yet to recover from their injuries, and even if they had recovered, preventing the Sovereign of the

Eventide from escaping was highly unlikely. Besides, from the Desolate race's description, the Sovereign of the Eventide, who had restored his looks to that of a middle-aged man, seemed to have grown stronger.

"Sovereign of the Eventide has already gone against the tide and he no longer cares about the circumstances." The Sanctuary Island Lord sighed. Back when he saw that the God Advent Tower was stolen, he had a hunch that it was possibly the Sovereign of the Eventide. Now, with facts in hand, this was an outcome that he did not wish to see. This was because, with his present strength, there was nothing he could do!

"I'm really sorry my strength is limited. I can't crack Sovereign of the Eventide's Laws of Darkness, nor can I capture him to force him to treat Fairy Jiang. In the future, the few of us will live in the remote mountains. Although we will not be able to handle the Sovereign of the Eventide, by contributing a bit of our strength, we should still be able to help you protect Fairy Jiang."

Previously, the Sovereign of the Eventide had succeeded in planting the Darkness energy in Jiang Xiaorou's body because he had caught the Desolate race off guard. Once they were on alert, especially with the Sanctuary Island couple helping hold the ground, then no matter how strong the Sovereign of the Eventide was, he could no longer wreak havoc in the Desolate race's territory easily.

With the Sanctuary Island Lord expressing his intentions, the other legendary human figures also echoed in unison that they were willing to remain in the remote mountains.

Staying in the remote mountains was considered a form of sacrifice. This was because, in twenty years, the Black-armored Demon God would attack again. And the first spot he would attack was most likely the remote mountains!

"Thank you, everyone. The former Desolate Queen said with utmost gratitude.

Now, all they could do was take things one step at a time.

"Your Majesty, you do not need to worry too much. The energy left behind by the Sovereign of the Eventide may be despicable and unremovable, but it looks like it won't be easy for it to easily devour Fairy Jiang's life force... "

After probing Jiang Xiaorou's meridians for a long time, the Sanctuary Island Lord spoke.

He discovered that although the Darkness energy was devouring Jiang Xiaorou's life force, the loss of her life force seemed to be slowly awakening the hidden power in her bloodline due to the catalytic effects of the Darkness energy.

Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline was extremely extraordinary that even the Black-armored Demon God coveted it. In the words of the Black-armored Demon God, Jiang Xiaorou possessed the most valuable bloodline in this world. Back when he was seriously injured by Yi Yun, all he thought was to capture Jiang Xiaorou and drink her blood to treat his injuries.

It was obvious what the quality of the blood that could treat the Black-armored Demon God's wounds was.

Such a bloodline gave Jiang Xiaorou her tremendous life force. Even now, despite her strength being extremely limited, her life force still existed, and it was not easy for the Darkness energy to devour it.

Furthermore, it seemed that slowly, the Darkness energy was repressed by Jiang Xiaorou's life force.

"What terrifying life force... I really wonder what sort of person Fairy Jiang's father is in the 12 Empyrean Heavens."

"Maybe he is from some noble race... "

The Sanctuary Island couple exchanged words. If Jiang Xiaorou's hidden life force was continuously released, the Darkness energy bodies would not take her life for the time being. Of course, they would not be removed, but they would reside in Jiang Xiaorou's organs and her soul, like maggots in a bone. This could be said to be a latent problem for Jiang Xiaorou.

And she would have to live through such days for the next two decades, before the Black-armored Demon God's return. The thought of the Black-armored Demon God returning made people feel helpless...

As the Desolate race was not having any peace due to the appearance of the Sovereign of the Eventide, in the alternate dimension, Yi Yun's insights into the spatial dimension laws were slowly reaching a certain degree of proficiency.

After cultivating for an unknown period of time, every time Yi Yun went into meditation, months would pass in a blink of an eye.

Every time he gained insight into a spatial dimension Dao for himself, he would match it to the runic patterns on the Dao Leaf, so he could compare them.

An incorrect understanding would be abandoned by Yi Yun. If it was correct, it would be ingrained in Yi Yun's soul, becoming his own true Dao.

With the Dao Leaf as a standard of measure, the spatial dimension laws that Yi Yun understood were already approaching the Origins of spatial dimension very closely.

Compared to the Black-armored Demon God, Yi Yun's understanding was still extremely shallow.

Although it was shallow, it was a lot more solid and correct as it was close to the essence of space itself. This meant that Yi Yun's future attainment in Spatial Dimension Dao would be even higher.

One day, Yi Yun, who was in meditation, suddenly opened his eyes as he reached out to tear the void!

Intense spatial dimension forces surged as they gathered to form black bolts of lightning. As the snakes of lightning flashed, the void was torn apart.

A small flake of a layer in the spatial curtain had been forcefully torn out by Yi Yun!

He had torn the void!

This was the beginning steps of spatial dimension laws, but most people did so using weapons. They used powerful attacks, with the support of spatial dimension laws, to tear the void apart.

Tearing the void apart with one's bare hands, even if it was just a tiny bit, was extraordinary. For Yi Yun to be able to do so, it was all from his understanding towards the laws. As for the amount of energy required, it wasn't much.

"Yi Yun, you can already tear the void?"

Beside Yi Yun, Lin Xintong was astonished and delighted seeing this scene.

She had tried to gain Dao enlightenment together with Yi Yun. Her perception was extraordinary, and with it, she had managed to gain some insight into spatial dimension laws, but she was much more inferior to Yi Yun.

She never expected Yi Yun to be able to tear apart the void so quickly. If this carried on, it wouldn't be long before they could leave!

Chapter 756: Breaking The Spatial Barrier

Spatial dimension laws were considered very important in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, but they were considered very difficult to learn.

By being proficient in spatial dimension laws, other than Void Tearing, the next stages were... Partitioning the Heavens, Spatial Slash, Void Transference, Teleportation, Refining Independent Spaces, etc!

The higher the difficulty, the more powerful it became. Ignoring everything else, just grasping Void Transference was extremely important in the 12 Empyrean Heavens. This was because the 12 Empyrean Heavens were extremely vast. Even if a peerless mighty figure wanted to travel between two Empyrean Heavens, he would also need to exhaust a great deal of time. By grasping Transference, he could quickly reach his destination.

However, many experts in the 12 Empyrean Heavens were unable to do Void Transference. If they wanted to embark on a distant journey, they would need to use teleportation arrays or sit in spiritual boats that possess Void Transference capabilities.

As for Refining Independent Spaces, the God Advent Tower or Pure Yang Sword Palace's worlds were both independent spaces. This was an indispensable ability when refining advanced enchanted treasures. There were even fewer people that had such abilities. As such, when some peerless mighty figures wanted to refine their mobile enchanted treasures, they would have to hire the mighty figures, who knew spatial dimension laws, at high

prices to open an independent space for them in the enchanted treasure.

Mighty figures, who had the ability to open up independent spaces in items, led an extremely comfortable life even in the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Now, Yi Yun had only grasped Void Tearing, but to even tear the thick spatial barrier in front of his eyes apart was extremely difficult.

Yi Yun took his pure Yang broken sword out of his interspatial ring. He imbued spatial dimension laws into the pure Yang broken sword and he slashed at the spatial curtain!

"Cha!"

The blade tore through the void, as the spatial barrier cracked. However, after the crack appeared, it began to fade away at a speed visible to the naked eye. Spatial barriers had the ability to restore themselves.

Yi Yun had to tear it apart before the spatial barrier fully restored, but this was easier said than done.

By just slashing about a dozen strikes with his sword, Yi Yun already felt the energy deficit in his body, and he felt faint.

"Oh?"

Yi Yun frowned slightly. He knew that this was due to the impure energies in his body.

In this alternate dimension, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi had been isolated. So for all this time, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong would rely on the energies supplied to them through desolate bone relics, be it for their body consumption, healing or nomological meditation.

The more desolate bone relics they ate, the more impure the energies in their bodies were. This was inevitable.

After taking a deep breath, Yi Yun calmed himself again. Ever since he entered the Yuan Opening realm, the battles he went through and the insights he gained over the years, as well as the arduous cultivation in this alternate dimension, Yi Yun had long consolidated his realm. He could now greatly improve his cultivation level.

As long as he broke through the spatial barrier, he would be able to absorb Heaven Earth Yuan Qi and make a breakthrough immediately.

But now, the spatial barrier had yet to be torn apart!

Yi Yun was in no hurry. He meditated quietly in front of the spatial barrier, while the Dao Leaf floated in front of him. The leaf veins shimmered with a golden glow.

"Open!"

Yi Yun roared as he slashed out with the pure Yang broken sword!

"Chi!"

The spatial dimension forces were severed by the pure Yang broken sword, as a large spatial rift a hundred foot long appeared in front of Yi Yun.

"It's opening!"

Lin Xintong's eyes lit up. Just producing a few more of such spatial rifts would cause the spatial barrier to collapse, however, at that moment...

With a crisp but nearly imperceptible chipping sound, an inconspicuous black charm seal shattered along with the spatial rift's appearance, transforming into strands of black gas.

This black charm seal was embedded in the chaotic spatial dimensional forces, so it was difficult to detect it. So even though Yi Yun had some knowledge of spatial dimension laws, he could tell that something was amiss with this charm seal!

Yi Yun shuddered for a moment as he slowly lowered his broken sword.

"What's wrong?" Lin Xintong asked.

"I seem... to have triggered the Black-armored Demon God's trap, or it might be some form of alert mechanism."

"Oh?" Lin Xintong was astounded. "Isn't the Black-armored Demon God asleep? He can still wake up with the alert mechanism?"

Yi Yun shook his head. "It's impossible that he can wake up as he pleases. If not, the Black-armored Demon God's slumber would be like child's play. The moment he enters deep slumber, he definitely cannot be awoken easily. If that happens, his soul might collapse immediately. Besides, I still have the evil energy left inside his soul sea!"

Yi Yun's gaze was cold as he forcefully gathered Yuan Qi, slashing out again with the pure Yang broken sword!

In the alternate dimension, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was isolated, so Yi Yun's stamina was being quickly depleted. He lacked the energy required to tear apart the surrounding space.

"I'll help you!"

Lin Xintong held onto Yi Yun's hands, as a continuous stream of pure Yin Yuan Qi surged into Yi Yun's body.

The two of them cultivated the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra', so despite them not having much Yuan Qi left, and were relying on the impure Yuan Qi from desolate bone relics to sustain themselves, the Jade Marrow Spiritual Energy and Nine Yang Spiritual Energy that was in its truest Origins remained intact. This was the foundation of the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra'.

Lin Xintong and Yi Yun held hands as the Jade Marrow Spiritual Energy and Nine Yang Spiritual Energy slowly blended together. Yi Yun felt a refreshing feeling flowing into his body, like his nearly dried up meridians were being revived.

Another slash!

Yi Yun roared as all his body's energy surged out without reservation.

Chi La!

The thick spatial barrier was split apart by Yi Yun's strike. Following that, the spatial dimension forces sealed in the spatial barrier surged out like a storm. Even the spatial maze and array formation seals set up by the Black-armored Demon God were completely shattered!

Yi Yun's muscles ruptured as the strike he just dealt was something his body could not withstand.

It was open!

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were delighted. Yi Yun's strike had opened up a spatial passage, and after the spatial storm dissipated, what welcomed Yi Yun and Lin Xintong was an independent space!

This space was filled with a thick, evil aura. It belonged to the Black-armored Demon God!

Yi Yun focused his eyes as a stalwart man, dressed in torn armor, was floating in the void. His arms were around his chest, and his eyes were shut. He was deep in sleep.

This was the Black-armored Demon God!

"It's him! Black-armored Demon God!"

Lin Xintong's pupils constricted and the frost Qi in her sword surged. The Black-armored Demon God was indeed deep in slumber, and even though they had torn the spatial barrier apart, he remained asleep.

Maybe he knew what was going on, but he could not wake up immediately.

Take advantage of his perilous situation!

Yi Yun had charged at the Black-armored Demon God, and at the same time, the Draco First True Gold avatar in his dantian flew

out. It wore a pale gold robe, and 999 flying sabers revolved around it. Thousand Snow Domain!

Yi Yun's actual body flicked his hands, as the Death Soulwood began to spin in front of his body. The Withering domain immediately caused the murderous aura in this space to wither and die out due to the Death Soulwood.

"Die!"

Yi Yun shouted. Just as Lin Xintong thought he was about to kill the sleeping Black-armored Demon God, Yi Yun and the Draco First True Gold avatar flew past the Black-armored Demon God's body.

"Oh?"

Lin Xintong was startled. But in a blink of an eye, Yi Yun and the Draco First True Gold avatar had flown a thousand feet away from the sleeping Black-armored Demon God. Here, the Thousand Snow Domain's 999 flying sabers condensed into one, slashing into emptiness with Withering Sword Intent!

Chapter 757: Killing The Demon God

"Bam!"

A terrifying explosion tore up space completely as Yi Yun used spatial dimension laws to transfer the damaging energy into a spatial rift.

"Roar——!"

A terrible roar echoed out of the spatial rift caused the alternate dimension to tremble.

In the void, the sleeping 'Black-armored Demon God' figure suddenly began to distort like a reflection on a water surface before it gradually disappeared!

"Phantom image?"

Lin Xintong was surprised, but she immediately understood that the sleeping Black-armored Demon God that she first saw was just an illusion. It could have even been a trap, used to attract attacks.

Once the Black-armored Demon God illusion was attacked, it might trigger some array restrictions, but Yi Yun had managed to see through all of this almost immediately. He had even found where the Black-armored Demon God was hiding. It was the place where Yi Yun and the Draco First True Gold avatar attacked!

The Black-armored Demon God would have never imagined that the sealed Yi Yun, who did not know any spatial dimension laws, would not only be able to tear apart the spatial barrier while he was sleeping but even precisely locate his true location!

Yi Yun could do this firstly because of the Purple Crystal's energy vision, and secondly, because of his connection with the evil energy. As it was sealed in the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea, Yi Yun knew its location very clearly.

Hence, even though the Black-armored Demon God's true body was hidden in a spatial rift, he failed to escape Yi Yun's fatal blow!

"Ah Ah Ah Ah!"

The Black-armored Demon God in the spatial rift roared crazily. His hair was disheveled and his eyes were blood red!

Yi Yun's pure Yang broken sword had already penetrated the Black-armored Demon God's chest. The Withering concepts had been injected, causing the Black-armored Demon God's organs to begin to lose their vitality!

The Black-armored Demon God's physical defenses were at their weakest while in slumber.

"You! You!"

The Black-armored Demon God spat out black blood as he

grabbed Yi Yun's pure Yang broken sword. "Pathetic life form, you want to kill me? I'll kill you!"

The Black-armored Demon God was forcefully awoken from his slumber. His broken soul was once again dealt a severe blow and his life was on the verge of collapse.

The Black-armored Demon God had extremely great vitality. He had been sealed by the Azure Yang Lord for tens of millions of years, having weakened through all those years. His seriously damaged vitality had also received numerous attacks from Yi Yun.

However, no matter how great his vitality was, he was put in the most terrible of situations. He was completely within the boundaries of death!

"Whew!"

An ice lotus bloomed in the void as Lin Xintong appeared while riding a frost wind. With the sword in her hand, she stabbed into the Black-armored Demon God's throat like a ghost!

This strike caused the Black-armored Demon God's life to collapse completely!

At the same time, Yi Yun triggered the evil energy that the Black-armored Demon God had suppressed. It began to wantonly devour the Black-armored Demon God's soul!

"Ah, ah, ah!"

The Black-armored Demon God roared in excruciating pain as he threw a punch at Yi Yun's heart. If it hit its target, Yi Yun's chest would definitely be penetrated.

Yi Yun flew backward and as he retreated, he threw the Death Soulwood in his hand.

"Whew!"

The Death Soulwood flew into the Black-armored Demon God's chest like a javelin, embedding itself in the hole left behind by the pure Yang broken sword!

Puah!

Blood dyed the Death Soulwood, but it was rapidly absorbed by the Death Soulwood. This divine piece of wood had previously been dyed by a Demon God's blood. It had absorbed it, resulting in its death. It embodied the concept of decline and withering. Back then, the ancient Demon God that died on the Death Soulwood was much stronger than the Black-armored Demon God.

The Death Soulwood was embedded in the Black-armored Demon God's chest like a nail in a monster. The Black-armored Demon God's life force was rapidly depleting.

His armor began to shatter, and his body began rupturing. Blood

kept on flowing!

"You... "

Just opening his mouth caused black blood to rush out. As the Black-armored Demon God looked at Yi Yun, his gaze looked like it wanted to penetrate Yi Yun.

"You want me dead, I want you to accompany me!"

The Black-armored Demon God enunciated each word bit by bit, as his teeth were stained with blood. At that moment, the Black-armored Demon God looked like a demon that had crawled out from Hell.

"Ah, ah, ah!"

The Black-armored Demon God roared as every inch of his muscles ruptured, causing chaotic energies to vent out of his body. These energies filled the alternate dimension, causing the spatial dimension forces to turn chaotic.

Ka Ka Ka!"

A visible crack appeared in space as it rapidly expanded.

Yi Yun's expression changed. This was...

"Collapse!"

The Black-armored Demon God roared as the spatial boundaries began to explode and shatter, causing a terrifying spatial storm to surge around freely!

"I'll make this alternate dimension completely explode. Let us be embroiled in the spatial turbulence at the boundaries of this Great World, forever drifting in it, experiencing eternal death!"

The Black-armored Demon God had already fallen into madness. As his energies were wantonly surging out, he revealed a ferocious and tragic laugh.

At the moment of his last laugh, the Black-armored Demon God's life was completely extinguished.

Boom!

With an explosion, the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea finally collapsed. The dissipating Black-armored Demon God's soul was devoured freely by the evil energy. The Black-armored Demon God's eyes turned dimmed as his body began to quickly lose its vitality.

This ancient Demon God that had existed for so long had finally been completely eliminated, dying at the hands of Yi Yun.

However, at that moment, the terrifying spatial storm began to

sweep at Yi Yun and Lin Xintong.

"Careful!"

Yi Yun's expression changed greatly as he grabbed Lin Xintong's hand, and held her by the waist. At that moment, Yi Yun was in a terrible situation. He injected the tiny Yuan Qi that was left in his body into the Dao Leaf, causing the Dao Leaf to shimmer. A transparent membrane of light enveloped him and Lin Xintong.

As the spatial storm came sweeping over, the membrane of light looked like a bubble in a storm. It looked like it would burst at any moment.

Yi Yun struggled to hold on, but his Yuan Qi had been greatly depleted. He could not control where to go in this spatial storm. He watched helplessly as this energy bubble was swept around by the spatial storm, floating in a haphazard fashion, it was beginning to enter deep into the spatial turbulence.

The deeper he went, the harder it was to return to the world where the Tian Yuan world and Divine Wilderness was.

Yi Yun was mortified. His insights into spatial dimension forces were just at the beginning stage. Although he could tear the spatial void, to return to the Tian Yuan world, he still needed more research.

But now, he and Lin Xintong had been thrown into the spatial

turbulence, and the deeper he was, the harder it was to find the way back. And with time, it would be as the Black-armored Demon God said, they would be lost in the spatial turbulence, floating in space for eternity till their deaths.

Seeing themselves drifting farther away, Yi Yun's heart turned cold. He found it very demanding to already support the energy membrane of light, let alone float upstream against the spatial storm.

Did the Heavens want me dead?

Yi Yun gritted his teeth. He was indignant, for he had just begun his life, so how could he die here!?

Chapter 758: Crazy Idea

As the storm raged on, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong began to drift deeper into its core. The membrane of light created by the Dao Leaf began to vibrate intensely, and it seemed like they would forever be lost in the void.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong held hands, and using their Yin and Yang energies, they maintained the membrane of light, preventing it from rupturing. However, if this carried on, it was equivalent to being sitting ducks.

Yi Yun was anxious. In this scenario with death assured, he could not think of any ways out.

What could he do? What?

Yi Yun's mind raced with thoughts, and at that moment, he suddenly saw a shadow flash past in the turbulent spatial storm!

Oh? That is...

Yi Yun's eyes flashed as he made out the shadow in the spatial storm clearly. It was actually a floating corpse... the dead Black-armored Demon God's corpse.

The Black-armored Demon God's soul sea had collapsed and it had been completely extinguished. However, his powerful body had managed to remain intact in the spatial storm.

Corpse... Black-armored Demon God's corpse...

Yi Yun lit up his mind in a flash of brilliance. Yes, the Demon God's corpse! The evil energy!

In the Black-armored Demon God's soul sea, there was the evil energy, and it was taking advantage of his shattered soul sea, wantonly devouring his spiritual energies.

The evil energy had an uncanny ability to grow. Previously, it had devoured the masked man's soul and many of the Yin specters in the Soul Tomb. It had absorbed all this soul energy to aid its growth!

The evil energy could not only devour soul energy, it could also control a soul unnoticed. Back then, the masked man from Blood Moon had been controlled by the evil energy, and it was eventually made into a puppet by Yi Yun.

With the masked man as a puppet, Yi Yun had even managed to read a portion of his memories. This allowed him to have a smooth experience during the battle in the Soul Tomb, allowing him to successfully crush Blood Moon's plan.

Controlling puppets! Reading memories!

A crazy idea suddenly developed in Yi Yun's mind. Since he could use the evil energy back then to make the masked man his puppet,

then why couldn't he do the same thing now? He could make the Black-armored Demon God his own puppet, right!?

The moment he had this idea, it began to take root in Yi Yun's mind, as he got obsessed with the idea!

Puppet! It was a Demon God puppet!

The Black-armored Demon God was indeed powerful, but no matter how powerful he was, he was already dead!

After his soul sea collapsed, his powerful soul could only be used as nourishment for the evil energy.

By absorbing the Demon God's soul, the evil energy could rapidly grow and even grow to the point of being able to control the Black-armored Demon God's body.

As for the Black-armored Demon God's body, it had been honed and it could be compared to a peerless enchanted object. However, without a soul supporting it, it was just a dead item. It was impossible to control it.

If he possessed such a Demon God puppet, then in the future, be it Yi Yun's strength or his nomological insights, they would take a big step forward.

In addition to the Draco First True Gold avatar, he would then have a puppet and an avatar. Together with himself, they would be

practically redoubtable!

Besides, the evil energy could obtain a portion of the original soul's memories through its devouring. The Black-armored Demon God had deep knowledge of spatial dimension laws. But of course, these nomological insights could not be exactly replicated into Yi Yun's brain through the evil energy, as the memories obtained through the evil energy were generally very vague.

But even so, they would give Yi Yun great inspiration and guidance.

The spatial dimension laws that Yi Yun understood at that moment were through trial and error. He lacked heritage, but with the Black-armored Demon God's memories, it was equivalent to having a teacher.

With the Black-armored Demon God's strength, leaving this void would not be a problem!

After all, this void was opened up by the Black-armored Demon God, to begin with!

If Yi Yun controlled the Black-armored Demon God, it was equivalent to holding the key to opening this space!

"We can go out!"

In the storm, Yi Yun said this anxiously as his eyes flickered with

excitement.

"Oh?" Lin Xintong was surprised. At that moment, Yi Yun had begun interfacing his spiritual energy with the Purple Crystal. His perception emanated, projecting itself onto the Black-armored Demon God's corpse.

The suppression brought by the Purple Crystal had long left a deep impression on the evil energy. Probably no matter how powerful the evil energy grew, it would not be able to defy the Purple Crystal's will.

It was a suppression that derived from the Origin of Laws!

"Come over here!"

Yi Yun waved his hand as the Black-armored Demon God's corpse began to rapidly approach them in the spatial storm. Finally, the corpse entered the membrane of light, allowing Yi Yun to retrieve it successfully.

Devour! Devour the Black-armored Demon God's soul!
Completely control this body!

Yi Yun issued an order to the evil energy through the Purple Crystal. His life and everything he held dear now lay with the evil energy. With the Black-armored Demon God puppet, Yi Yun could even forcefully break through the void!

All this while, Yi Yun had used the evil energy to do many things. But similarly, the evil energy also relied on Yi Yun greatly.

By following Yi Yun, it had devoured all the Yin specters in the Soul Tomb, and now, it could devour the Black-armored Demon God's soul, allowing it to grow rapidly.

It would take time for the evil energy to control the Black-armored Demon God's body. By now, the spatial storm was gradually weakening as Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had already drifted deep into the void.

With Lin Xintong's Jade Marrow Spiritual Energy, she nourished Yang with Yin, allowing Yi Yun to continuously maintain the light membrane through the Dao Leaf. The energy membrane looked like a gigantic, transparent egg in the void that enclosed Yi Yun and Lin Xintong in layers.

And the Demon God puppet underwent embryonic development in the gigantic egg...

Yi Yun believed that he could perfectly control the Demon God puppet in a few months time, at the most.

...

Time quickly went by, and in a blink of an eye, several months passed. As Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were refining the Demon God puppet, the Tian Yuan world was undergoing tumultuous changes!

Before the Black-armored Demon God entered his slumber, he had declared that he would back in twenty years, returning to the Tian Yuan world at his peak to slaughter all that lived under the heavens. Although the legendary human figures had intentionally concealed this matter to ensure stability, there were just too many people who knew of this matter. This news had proliferated in the Tian Yuan world!

Immediately, a sense of despair emanated throughout the Tian Yuan world!

The Black-armored Demon God's appearance had swept the Tian Yuan world in an indomitable fashion. In twenty years time, he had threatened to return in peak condition. When that happened, who could stop him?

Didn't that mean that everyone only had twenty years left in their lives?

The Sanctuary Island couple and some legendary human figures had announced news that Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had only been sucked into the alternate dimension, and they had not died. They could still return in twenty years to battle the Black-armored Demon God.

However, very few people believed their words!

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were strong, but they were still far weaker than the Black-armored Demon God. How was being sealed

with the Black-armored Demon God in an alternate dimension different from a mortal being locked in a cage with a tiger?

Was it even possible that they could survive? Without Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, there was no one who could stop the Black-armored Demon God!

And as people were feeling despair, a twist occurred. The Sovereign of the Eventide appeared, and he declared that he had found an escape route for all the warriors in the Tian Yuan world...

Chapter 759: Yi Yun Returns

In the world that the Tian Yuan world resided, no one from the Human race or the Desolate race had a chance of surviving the Black-armored Demon God's slaughter.

The so-called escape route was none other than the 12 Empyrean Heavens!

The legendary human figures of the Tian Yuan world had vaguely read records regarding the 12 Empyrean Heavens, but it appeared as a legend to them. Only when the Black-armored Demon God appeared did they learn new things, confirming the legend.

The legends said of the 12 Empyrean Heavens was a place with more resources, richer Heaven Earth Yuan Qi and a more brilliant world of martial arts. This was extremely alluring for the Tian Yuan world warriors!

The Sovereign of the Eventide claimed that whoever followed him could open up a passage to the 12 Empyrean Heavens with him. When the time came, he would use a mobile immortal residence to take these people away with him from the Tian Yuan world to the 12 Empyrean Heavens!

The moment this news came out, all the warriors in the Tian Yuan world were stunned.

A few felt hope appear in the midst of despair as they seemed to

be unexpectedly rescued from a dreary situation. They thought about following the Sovereign of the Eventide to the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

However, there were people who did not believe the Sovereign of the Eventide at all.

Opening a passage to the 12 Empyrean Heavens? Was that so easy?

Even though the Sovereign of the Eventide was the strongest person in the Tian Yuan world, with his strength and his handful of followers, he was still a great distance away from opening a passage to the 12 Empyrean Heavens!

As for his mobile enchanted treasure, it was a question if it could really take people to the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Even if they followed the Sovereign of the Eventide in order to head to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, it might all end up as a ruse.

Many Tian Yuan world warriors had lived for hundreds, if not thousands of years. They would not easily trust others, even if the person who said this was Sovereign of the Eventide, the person who had the highest authority in the Tian Yuan world.

However, there were a lot of warriors who chose to believe the Sovereign of the Eventide. They might have had their doubts, but they believed that no one would be a match for the Black-armored

Demon God in twenty years time. So at least, there would be hope by seeking refuge with the Sovereign of the Eventide and opening a path to the 12 Empyrean Heavens with him.

These people also knew that opening a path to the 12 Empyrean Heavens was extremely difficult. They might even turn into cannon fodder, but people could not just live on as sitting ducks. At least, it seemed that opening a passage was easier than killing the Black-armored Demon God.

Hence, as time went by, the number of Sovereign of the Eventide's followers increased. There was even a small number of legendary human figures who had wavered.

The 12 Empyrean Heavens was too mysterious to the Tian Yuan world warriors.

At that moment, in the remote mountains. Desolate race palace.

The meditating Sanctuary Island Lord had also recently received news regarding the Sovereign of the Eventide.

This news made him frown slightly.

To protect the Desolate race, the Sanctuary Island couple, as well as a couple of legendary human figures, who shared the same values as the couple, had decided to live permanently with the Desolate race. As such, the Sovereign of the Eventide would not be able to wreak havoc in the Desolate race, but for the Tian Yuan

world...

Without the Sanctuary Island couple and the legendary human figures, the Sovereign of the Eventide had no match in the Tian Yuan world. As the strongest person in the Tian Yuan world, it was easy for him to expand his power.

With the apocalypse approaching, people inevitably had a slavish mentality. Many of them would tend to seek refuge with the strongest person in the Tian Yuan world, the Sovereign of the Eventide. Besides, the Sovereign of the Eventide had indeed given a lot of people hope.

"Opening up the passage to the 12 Empyrean Heavens... What naivety. If it was that simple to open a path, it would have been opened up long ago!" The Sanctuary Island Lord said as he crushed a news jade slip.

The Sovereign of the Eventide had claimed to have found a secret spatial node, making it a hundred times easier to open up a passage, but the Sanctuary Island Lord refused to believe him.

Even if the Sovereign of the Eventide had really found a spatial node, his strength was likely insufficient to survive the long spatial storms before he arrived at the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Maybe it was for this reason that the Sovereign of the Eventide needed the God Advent Tower to protect him!

From the world where the Tian Yuan world resided in, nearly no human had traversed the distance to the 12 Empyrean Heavens. Therefore, no one knew how dangerous it was!

It was a question whether the Sovereign of the Eventide could mind himself, as for taking his followers? How could it be possible?

"Eventide is expanding his power. I suspect he is trying to stir up a war between the Humans and Desolate race... "

Behind the Sanctuary Island Lord, the former Desolate Queen walked over slowly. She had a heavy expression as she did not have an easy time recently.

With the Dark energy entering Jiang Xiaorou's body, it made her bloodline's energy extremely unstable. She did not know if Jiang Xiaorou would be able to hold on, and if so, how long.

As for the storm stirring the Tian Yuan world, the Sovereign of the Eventide had gathered a large number of minions, making the former Desolate Queen suspect that he was preparing for war.

If the Sovereign of the Eventide really was able to open up a passage from the Tian Yuan world to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, he did not need to consider the consequences of the Black-armored Demon God appearing again. He could let the Human race and Desolate race go to war for his goal, and none of this would affect him negatively.

"Eventide is no match for us." The Sanctuary Island Lord said indifferently. Even though he and the legendary Desolate race figures were injured and suffered a drop in cultivation realms, they had many experts!

The Sovereign of the Eventide had amassed a large following, but his followers were of average strength. There were very few legendary human figures who sought refuge with the Sovereign of the Eventide.

"Even if the mighty figures of the Human race believe that Eventide has the ability to open a path to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, they would not blindly follow him. If war breaks out, many legendary human figures would stand on the Desolate race's side."

Right and wrong could be inferred and reason existed. The legendary human figures could at least be able to understand the reason, the only problem was whether they would act in accordance with reason.

However, the former Desolate Queen shook her head at the Sanctuary Island Lord's words. "Eventide does not want to wipe us out, he only wants the Sacred Spirit's remains. For your esteemed race's legendary figures to stand on my Desolate race's side, I am extremely grateful, but... the legendary human figures would only protect my Desolate race only in times of danger. But for them to risk injury or even consume their lifespans to protect a Sacred Spirit's corpse doesn't make sense... "

The Sacred Spirit was the Desolate race's totem. The Desolate

race could give up their lives to protect a corpse because of their faith and as a form of reciprocation to the Sacred Spirit. But to the Human race, the Sacred Spirit was just a powerful desolate beast. Getting them to protect a desolate beast's corpse did not make sense. Furthermore, just years ago, the Sacred Spirit, who had protected the Desolate race, was an arch enemy of the Human race.

"I do not know what Eventide is planning on doing, but if Eventide attacks, it is because he has the absolute confidence. This is because he knows very clearly how much combat strength we have. It is impossible for him to wipe us out, but to take the Sacred Spirit's remains, he might still have the means to do so... "

The former Desolate Queen sighed while shaking her head.

As the former Desolate Queen and the Sanctuary Island Lord were discussing the situation in the Tian Yuan world, in the land towards the far north.

"Swish!"

With a crisp sound, space began ripping apart as a black-clothed youth and a white-dressed fairy slowly walked out of the spatial rift.

Seeing this cold and desolate land, Yi Yun exhaled. He was finally back!

Destroying the Black-armored Demon God and breaking through

the confines of space, they had walked out of the jaws of Death.
Now, everything had finally passed.

Chapter 760: Pagoda Refinement

"This is... the far north!"

Yi Yun had come here before. So with the place lingering with Yin Qi and filled with killing aura, he was able to recognize this place immediately.

The land of the far north was a long distance away from the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness. However, this distance could no longer deter Yi Yun, who had already grasped spatial dimension laws. He could reach the Divine Wilderness in a very short period of time.

"Zi Zi Zi!"

The spatial rift above Yi Yun began to emit black bolts of lightning as a stalwart, bare-chested man stepped out of the spatial rift. His muscles were sculpted like metal, and purple veins lined his muscles. It looked like a demonic totem.

After this stalwart man appeared, he stood respectfully behind Yi Yun. He was like a towering pagoda, emitting a fearsome and sinister gaze.

After subduing the Black Demon, making him his puppet, it was equivalent to Yi Yun having a super hitman. At the current stage, just this puppet alone had much greater combat strength than Yi Yun and his avatar combined!

Yi Yun was eager to try this puppet's combat strength.

And just as Yi Yun had this idea, he suddenly felt a prick in his soul sea. It was a sting that disappeared in a flash.

Yi Yun's expression sunk. The prick was a result of the God Advent Tower.

Over all this time, the person who had robbed the God Advent Tower had been trying to incessantly wipe away the imprint he had left in the God Advent Tower. And now... He finally managed to touch the imprint Yi Yun left behind in the constantly weakening defensive arrays in the God Advent Tower. Of course, this was still a long way from him being able to fully wipe away Yi Yun's imprint.

Yi Yun sneered. He was interested to see who dared to covet the God Advent Tower while he was sealed in the alternate dimension!

"Xintong, let's go. I want to see who it is."

As Yi Yun spoke, he held Lin Xintong's hand and began flying. Behind him, the Demon God puppet followed closely behind, just like it was Yi Yun's super bodyguard.

"Whew!"

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, along with the Demon God puppet charged out of the land of the far north!

Yi Yun's speed did not seem fast, but the space beneath Yi Yun began warping. It was really like he traveled five hundred kilometers a second!

...

At that moment, in the square in front of the Umbriferous Divine Palace, there were thousands of warriors gathered. These people were the followers of the Sovereign of the Eventide.

With the apocalypse impending, the Sovereign of the Eventide had become the messiah in the eyes of these people.

The thousands of warriors stood in a gigantic array. Their energies were constantly acquired by the array.

And in the core of the array, there was a six-storey pagoda the height of a person. It was floating there, with numerous blood-colored runes circling it.

These blood-colored runes were like leeches, absorbing the God Advent Tower's energy.

And the array beneath the pagoda was producing new runes constantly, adding it to the array formation.

At a certain moment.

"Peng!"

With an explosion, all the blood-colored runes in the air exploded, disappearing into uncountable black specks of energy.

The God Advent Tower was unharmed, but around the God Advent Tower, the Eventide Monks who were controlling the array had turned pale from the energy backlash. Those with weaker cultivation levels even lost all their blood and Qi, as their bodies jolted.

Buzz——

The gigantic array trembled violently before it finally dimmed.

The Sovereign of the Eventide looked at the infinitely sturdy God Advent Tower with a calm expression.

It was still a while before the Black-armored Demon God would appear again. He had plenty of patience and having gathered so many followers, using the array to wipe the imprint that Yi Yun left behind would be ten times faster at the very least.

He believed that in time soon to come, the God Advent Tower would be his.

"Senior Eventide, this pagoda is the enchanted treasure that will protect us on our voyage to the 12 Empyrean Heavens?" Amongst his many followers, some, who had just joined, asked.

This was the first time they saw the God Advent Tower while witnessing the pagoda's refinement process.

"This pagoda was left behind by Young Master Yi?" Someone else asked.

The news of the Desolate race losing the God Advent Tower had long proliferated, so all of them had caught wind of it.

"That's right!" The Sovereign of the Eventide admitted frankly. "This is indeed the God Advent Tower left behind by Yi Yun! You probably know that I took the God Advent Tower away from the Desolate race!"

"Yi Yun had battled the Black-armored Demon God and he was sealed in an alternate dimension by him. Now, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong are likely dead!"

"Yi Yun is a member of our race, so the God Advent Tower he left behind is wealth that belongs to the Human race. As such, it should be returned to the Human race! However... the Desolate race took it for themselves, and what right did they have to do so? I was only taking back something that belongs to the Human race. I have never concealed this intention of mine!" The Sovereign of the Eventide said it as a matter of fact.

His words stirred up a number of his passionate followers as they cheered him, but there were a considerable number of people who maintained their silence.

Seeing these silent people, the Sovereign of the Eventide sneered. Over the past few days, the number of the Sovereign of the Eventide's followers were rising dramatically, but many of these followers came only because of hope. They did not truly believe in him, nor were they loyal to him.

"Why? Do you expect that when the apocalypse begins, the Desolate race will protect you? We can only rely on ourselves." The Sovereign of the Eventide said coldly.

He was speaking to those followers who were still on the fence. He wanted to refine the God Advent Tower as soon as possible and use these people to steal the Sacred Spirit's corpse.

"Are Young Master Yi and Fairy Lin really dead?" A follower asked, unwilling to give up hope.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong enjoyed an extremely high reputation in the Tian Yuan world. Many people had heard of Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's tremendous strength and they hoped that the two were still alive and that there would come a day when they would defeat the Black-armored Demon God.

"Of course they are dead! The Black-armored Demon God possesses extraordinary strength and he is proficient in spatial

dimension laws. The spatial dimension seal that he had set up is indestructible to anyone! My understanding of spatial dimension laws can be said to be the best in the Tian Yuan world, but when I went to the place where the Black-armored Demon God set up the seal, I could not even find the location of the alternate dimension. Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's understanding of the spatial dimension laws are greatly inferior to mine, so what do you think their outcome would be?" The Sovereign of the Eventide retorted with a rhetorical question.

The follower who asked previously remained silent. Indeed, no matter how strong Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were, there was nothing that they could do in such a situation. Besides, their great power was only relative to the people from the Tian Yuan world. In front of the Black-armored Demon God, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong could only be described as puny.

"Such a pity... " Many people shook their heads and sighed. They were feeling sorry for Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's demise. If they were able to mature further, they would have been able to prevent the apocalypse.

"A dead genius is no longer a genius. When people practice martial arts, they have to rely on themselves. If all of you can go to the 12 Empyrean Heavens and obtain ancient heritage, cultivating peerless martial arts, how negligible would the Black-armored Demon God be?"

"But to take you along with me to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, I need to first see your value. In time to come, I will establish a powerful faction in the 12 Empyrean Heavens. And you today will

become a foundational cornerstone of this faction!"

Chapter 761: Evening Out Debts

The Sovereign of the Eventide's words were extremely provocative.

To establish a faction after going to the 12 Empyrean Heavens and obtaining heritage from the 12 Empyrean Heavens was extremely tempting to the Tian Yuan world warriors, especially the younger ones.

They also knew that the strength levels of the 12 Empyrean Heavens far exceeded that of the Tian Yuan world. It would certainly be extremely difficult when they first arrived in the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

However, they believed that the reason that the 12 Empyrean Heavens was powerful was that of its powerful heritage and rich resources. In the Tian Yuan world, they were limited by heritage and resources, destining them to mediocrity.

It was not because they were weak, it was because they were limited by external conditions.

As long as they were in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, they would be able to grow slowly and establish a small faction. By starting from scratch, it was still a possibility to develop it into something great.

"Today, I will take point here. The Umbriferous Divine Palace will be the place that I set off! In the next twenty years, I will conquer the Divine Wilderness Stage, so we can complete great

things! Your future will depend on your choice and your striving. Your hard work will be remembered by me.

"When the forces are built up in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, I will reward you accordingly. All of you envy Yi Yun and Lin Xintong? That's right, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong are powerful. But in the future, when you obtain the heritage of the 12 Empyrean Heavens, you would surpass them sooner or later. They are already dead, dying at the hands of the Black-armored Demon God who they couldn't resist against. A dead genius is no longer a genius."

"And when our faction is established, your children might be on par with Yi Yun in their twenties or thirties. Yi Yun and Lin Xintong are nothing at all!"

The Sovereign of the Eventide gave an impassioned speech, which roused the masses. Even the followers, who were still wavering, could not help but be engrossed in the future described by the Sovereign of the Eventide.

In times of despair, people needed beautiful fantasies, even if they knew that these fantasies might end up bubbles, bursting at any time.

However... for some reason, the audience were no longer excited. They stared blankly at the empty space above the Sovereign of the Eventide. Their eyes turned stiff as many people had expressions like they had seen a ghost in the day.

Astonishment, confusion, disbelief...

Oh!?

The followers' reaction made the Sovereign of the Eventide pause. Everyone's eyes were concentrated on a spot behind and above him. What had happened?

The Sovereign of the Eventide's heart missed a beat. Could it be that something had appeared behind him? With his powerful perception, how could something strange suddenly appear behind him without him knowing? His perception range allowed him to lock onto a small bug even a radius of ten thousand feet.

"What is it!?"

The Sovereign of the Eventide jerked his head back suddenly. In the sky behind him, three figures had appeared out of thin air... These three people seemed to be distorted in the void!

A black-clad youth was nonchalantly sitting on the void. One of his legs was outstretched, while the other leg was bent in front of him. His left arm was casually placed on his knee. In his right hand, he held a strange-shaped tree leaf that was slowly rotating. The leaf veins were shimmering with a charming luster.

And behind the black-clad youth was a white-dressed girl. She held a sword to her chest, and with her cold expression, she seemed to have an outstanding air to her.

Finally, there was a tall, dark-skinned man, who had muscles as firm as divine iron that made him look like a metallic tower. He stood behind Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, with his arms crossed in front of his chest. Only a silhouette could be seen as he looked fuzzy.

This stalwart man had a perfectly proportioned body, and although his muscles looked exaggerated, it did not give an endearing feeling. It was more of the beauty that came from the embodiment of absolute strength.

Upon seeing these three people, the Sovereign of the Eventide was completely dumbfounded. As a Sovereign, he was the strongest person in the Tian Yuan world and he had lived nearly a hundred thousand years. Now, because of these three people's sudden appearance, his lips were trembling, and his face turned as white as a sheet.

He failed to recover even after several seconds. He could hardly believe everything he saw in front of him.

Yi Yun! Lin Xintong! As well as... the one that gave him a suffocating feeling...

The Black-armored Demon God!

And at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God's aura was completely converged on himself. He was quietly following Yi Yun like he was an attendant to Yi Yun.

This... This...

Impossible! Impossible!

The Sovereign of the Eventide felt like his mind was crumbling. He could not believe what he was seeing at all.

"Black-armored Demon God! That is the Black-armored Demon God!?"

Amongst the crowd, someone suddenly yelled. Instantly, there was chaos throughout!

Many of them had never seen the Black-armored Demon God, as nearly everyone who saw the Black-armored Demon God had been killed. Wherever the Demon God passed, life would be extinguished!

However, there were still many people who had seen projection images of the Black-armored Demon God, so they were able to recognize him. And with the Demon God here, even though he had deliberately converged his aura, the pressure that came from the difference in life's natural order still caused their blood and Qi to boil, and their hearts stop beating.

"That black-clad youth is Yi Yun. And there's Lin Xintong as well! They... They are still alive, and furthermore, why are they together with the Black-armored Demon God!?"

People could not believe the scene in front of them. Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's return was already unbelievable. What made people wonder if they were dreaming the Black-armored Demon God behind Yi Yun and Lin Xintong.

Weren't they archenemies?

At that moment, the sitting Yi Yun gently put down the Dao Leaf in his hand. Without looking back, he said to the Black-armored Demon God, "Black Demon Puppet, go!"

With a simple thought from Yi Yun, the Black-armored Demon God moved. He turned around, and his eyes emitted a divine beam that exploded like lightning, tearing the void apart!

His aura also emanated as a result. Whoever came into contact with the Black-armored Demon God's gaze felt a pressure press down on them. The warriors present felt that their blood was in chaos as their faces turned white. They nearly knelt down to the ground. As for those with weaker cultivation levels, they felt like their soul seas were collapsing!

It was too terrifying. It was definitely the Black-armored Demon God. Only the Black-armored Demon God could push their minds so close to collapse with a single look.

And at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God moved. His body transformed into a black flash of lightning, appearing instantly in front of an Eventide Monk.

This Eventide Monk was presiding over the array formation, and he was a slave of the Sovereign of the Eventide. His cultivation level had reached the Yuan Opening realm. However, at the instant the Black-armored Demon God moved in front of him, the pressure that followed seemed to envelop him like a storm. Under this pressure, the monk began to bleed from all his seven orifices while his pupils lost focus. His strength could not bear the frontal brunt of the Black-armored Demon God's pressure.

The Black-armored Demon God put his hand out and grabbed the Eventide Monk's neck before flying upwards, like an eagle catching mice.

The Black-armored Demon God flew towards Yi Yun and threw the Eventide Monk in front of him.

This Eventide Monk had unfocused eyes, and his soul sea already collapsed. With only a few breaths left, it was clear that he would not live.

Chapter 762: A Piercing Lance Strike

This... This...

When the warriors in front of the Umbriferous Divine Palace saw this scene, they were all overcome with fear.

It was not in awe of the Black-armored Demon God using his aura to disperse a Yuan Opening realm expert's soul sea, but that Yi Yun could so casually order the Black-armored Demon God like he was his war slave.

"Just now... Just now... " A legendary human figures, who had lived more than ten thousand years, said with a stutter through his quivering lips.

Yi Yun had called him the... Black Demon Puppet!

Puppet?

Could the stalwart man be Yi Yun's puppet!?

However... this stalwart man's aura and his suppressive feeling made everyone certain that he was definitely the Black-armored Demon God!

Even if he wasn't, he was definitely a terrifying existence not much different from the Black-armored Demon God!

Such an existence was causally ordered around by Yi Yun?

Black Demon Puppet... Black-armored Demon God...

Could it be...?

A legendary Tian Yuan world figure suddenly realized a crazy possibility. That was... Yi Yun had managed to refine the Black-armored Demon God into his puppet!

After some peerless figures died, it was possible for them to be refined into puppets.

When he proposed this idea, all the warriors present were flabbergasted.

How was it possible that Yi Yun had killed the Black-armored Demon God and then refined him into a puppet!?

They could no longer think carefully as Yi Yun and the Black-armored Demon God's appearance placed a huge pressure on them. With their minds oppressed, it was difficult for them to have any thoughts.

Many of them, especially the older freaks that had lived more than ten thousand years, were now breaking out into a cold sweat!

Although they admired Yi Yun and marveled the battle of cosmic proportions that Yi Yun had with the Black-armored Demon God, they had sought refuge under the Sovereign of the Eventide for their survival and future!

They knew deep, down in their hearts, what sort of person the Sovereign of the Eventide was. The legendary human figures knew that his claim of Yi Yun being human, and how that meant that the God Advent Tower belonged to the Human race was something absolutely not in line with Yi Yun's will.

With the Sovereign of the Eventide treating Yi Yun as an enemy, then by following him, it was equivalent to betraying Yi Yun!

What sort of outcome would it be, having betrayed Yi Yun?

They did not dare to think any farther. Maybe the younger ones would be better off. They were young and unaware of the truth, but for those of the Yuan Opening realm, or even those old freaks that had reached half-step into the Heaven Ascension realm, they were in for trouble.

Yi Yun ignored these people. He only coldly stared at the Eventide Monk in front of him. In fact, Yi Yun had arrived here a long time ago. He too had heard the Sovereign of the Eventide's passionate speech. From that, he learned that the Sovereign of the Eventide had attacked the Desolate race and had stolen the God Advent Tower.

After the battle in the remote mountains, all the legendary

Desolate race figures were injured and they had suffered a drop in cultivation realms. However, the Sovereign of the Eventide had been absent in battle, allowing him to perfectly preserve his strength. And it seemed that the Sovereign of the Eventide's strength had increased compared to their initial meeting at the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium.

Under these circumstances, Yi Yun was very worried that the Sovereign of the Eventide had done something irreparable to the Desolate race.

Yi Yun grabbed the Eventide Monk with one hand, and he directly searched his soul!

The art of soul searching only allowed one to obtain vague information. For example, it was impossible to obtain any nomological heritage through this method.

However, for Yi Yun, that was already enough!

Instantly, whatever the Sovereign of the Eventide did to the Desolate race, including his attack on Jiang Xiaorou and using her as a threat, had been seen by Yi Yun.

Yi Yun's face sank all of a sudden. Murderous intent boiled around him as he locked onto the Sovereign of the Eventide with a cold gaze!

At that instant, people felt that Yi Yun was like a primordial

divine beast. No one could stop him from killing anyone!

"You... are... so... deserving... of... death... !"

Yi Yun articulated his sentence word after word, embodying actual killing intent. He locked onto every part of the Sovereign of the Eventide's body.

The Sovereign of the Eventide felt all the energy in his meridians retarded in their flow. He felt fear, a stifling fear.

In his long life, this was the first time that he had experienced so much fear. He knew that he was a life form not on the same level as Yi Yun.

And at that moment, the Black-armored Demon God stretched out his arm and swiped it across the void.

Crackle!

The void was ripped apart by the Black-armored Demon God as numerous lightning gathering around the spatial rift. A terrifying spatial storm began to sweep up.

A long lance that had black lightning winding around it flew out of the spatial rift, and into the Black-armored Demon God's hand!

It was the Black-armored Demon God's weapon. Back in his battle

with Yi Yun, the Black-armored Demon God had thrown this weapon, dropping it in the Tian Yuan world. Finally, when the Black-armored Demon God entered his slumber, the black lance had disappeared into the void.

Now, with the Black-armored Demon God returning, a casual stroke to rip the void apart allowed him to retrieve his weapon.

With the lance in hand, the Black-armored Demon God's gaze locked onto the Sovereign of the Eventide!

"Sou!"

The Black-armored Demon God moved. Like a tornado touching down, he charged at the Sovereign of the Eventide!

The terrifying aura restricted the Sovereign of the Eventide's body. He faced the direct assault from the Black-armored Demon God with a pale face. His strength was being repressed, preventing him from using even 20% of his energy. And even if he could use all his strength, he was in no way a match for the Black-armored Demon God!

"Peng! Peng! Peng!"

With the explosion of blood and flesh, the lance's suppression caused several Eventide Monks beside the Sovereign of the Eventide to turn into a mist of blood!

A single strike by the Black-armored Demon God was something that no one could withstand! Even Yi Yun had to use the Dao Leaf's strength, or he would not have been able to withstand his attack.

The Sovereign of the Eventide roared as he bit his tongue, spitting out a mouthful of blood essence. At the risk of exploding his meridians, he finally broke through the restrictions of the Black-armored Demon God's aura, allowing him to use the strength in his dantian.

He suddenly threw out a pale gold seal, slamming it at the Black-armored Demon God!

"Ka-cha!"

The pale gold seal, which had been tempered numerous times while being kept in the Sovereign of the Eventide's dantian, had shattered. In front of the Black-armored Demon God's lance, it was like loess that could not withstand a single strike!

The Sovereign of the Eventide's facial features distorted as he spat out fresh blood. The attack that he burned his blood essence for had failed to hinder the Black-armored Demon God.

"Puah!"

The black lance did not lose momentum, piercing the Sovereign of the Eventide's chest directly!

The Sovereign of the Eventide was dangling on the Black-armored Demon God's lance after having been pierced!

He did not die, but he was grabbing desperately at the black lance's body while trembling incessantly.

The Sovereign of the Eventide, who had a tall built, only reached the Black-armored Demon God's chest. As the Black-armored Demon God stood in front of the Umbriferous Divine Palace, he lifted the Sovereign of the Eventide up with his lance.

At that moment, the Black-armored Demon God's body was burning with black flames. He looked like an invincible evil demon that emerged from hell!

Upon seeing this scene, the people around could not help but tremble. The Sovereign of the Eventide, whose strength stood at the peak of the Tian Yuan world, had been in high spirits, announcing his dream of establishing a faction in the 12 Empyrean Heavens. But now, he was being dangled like a dead dog by the Black-armored Demon God on his lance. Resistance was futile.

That was the Black-armored Demon God, a terrifying existence that far exceeded the Tian Yuan world's strength!

As for Yi Yun... He had killed the Black-armored Demon God and even refined the Black-armored Demon God into his puppet. Then, what sort of extent had Yi Yun's strength reached?

Chapter 763: Annihilating The Umbriferous Divine Palace

Everyone shuddered in fear as they watched on, and Yi Yun gave the Sovereign of the Eventide a nonchalant glance. At that moment, the Sovereign of the Eventide's pupils were lacking in will and he was foaming at the mouth. He was trying his best to look at Yi Yun, but his vision was turning blurry.

"You... you... "

The Sovereign of the Eventide made an effort to open his mouth, but whatever he said was said in a staccato manner. As his lung had been pierced, it made it difficult for him to speak a word.

Yi Yun gave a cold sneer and said without any expression, "Destroy this place."

Upon receiving the order, the Black-armored Demon God suddenly took a big step forward. Looking at the Umbriferous Divine Palace, he suddenly struck out with his lance.

The black lance was brandished around, with the Sovereign of the Eventide pinned onto it, like a dancing black flood dragon. The void was cut through and every stroke of the lance caused a spatial storm!

"Boom!"

The entire Umbriferous Divine Palace collapsed. The terrifying power had razed the Umbriferous Divine Palace to the ground, and even the gravel that flew up was turned into dust by the spatial storms, subsequently disappearing.

The Sovereign of the Eventide's divine palace, that he had painstakingly built, was annihilated in a split moment.

However, the Sovereign of the Eventide was not yet dead. His body was covered in blood, his meridians were severed and his body was convulsing. The former strongest person in the Tian Yuan world now no longer looked human.

One reason why the Sovereign of the Eventide remained alive was that he had a strong vitality, and the second reason was that Yi Yun did not want him dead so soon.

He was human scum. While the Desolate race was desperately fighting off the Black-armored Demon God, and even many legendary human figures had made important sacrifices, he had turtled up. Only when the calamity of the Black-armored Demon God was temporarily put on hold did he appear once again. He even wanted to use the resources in the Tian Yuan world to escape to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, and by employing despicable means, he had used Darkness energy to nearly take Jiang Xiaorou's life.

Yi Yun felt that it was too cheap to kill such a person directly.

"Eventide's cronies, kill them all!"

Yi Yun gave another order. The Eventide Monks, as well as the direct subordinates of the Sovereign of the Eventide, felt their hearts turn cold when they heard Yi Yun's announcement.

Some wanted to plead, while others tried to escape. There were even some Eventide Monks who wanted to put up a fight.

However, the Black-armored Demon God moved too fast. Before the Sovereign of the Eventide's cronies could even react, more than a hundred black energy arrows shot out from the Black-armored Demon God, piercing their soul seas directly!

The energy arrows were imbued with the Black-armored Demon God's spiritual pressure. As these people's soul seas were directly shattered, they seemed to have their souls extracted instantly. They quickly went limp like rotten pieces of meat.

In just a few seconds, Yi Yun's two lines had destroyed the entire Umbriferous Divine Palace!

It was the strongest faction in the Tian Yuan world, and it was also the most mysterious faction of them all. But it was now, all gone.

And at that moment, there were many followers, who had come to the Sovereign of the Eventide to seek refuge, standing in the vicinities of the Umbriferous Divine Palace ruins. These followers were covered in sweat and their faces were pale.

The Black-armored Demon God was too powerful. The entire Umbriferous Divine Palace, with all its mighty figures, including the Sovereign of the Eventide, had been destroyed almost instantly!

The terrifying Black-armored Demon God, as well as the yet to make a move, but definitely more powerful, Yi Yun!

In fact, regardless of Yi Yun's strength, it made no difference to them. Destroying them was just a thought away!

A short moment ago, Yi Yun's simple sentence of 'destroy this place' made them think that they were about to die!

However, the Black-armored Demon God had only destroyed the Umbriferous Divine Palace and the direct cronies of the Sovereign of the Eventide. They still had their lives for the time being, but it did not seem permanent.

Now, Yi Yun cast his gaze towards these people.

Everyone was distraught as they shook in fear. The double pressure from Yi Yun and the Black-armored Demon God caused them to nearly fall to their knees.

There were more than ten thousand warriors present. Yi Yun knew that a majority of these people had blindly followed the Sovereign of the Eventide. He knew that faced with the despair of the Black-armored Demon God appearing once again, they had no

choice but to rely on the Sovereign of the Eventide, hoping that they could save their skin during this calamity.

However... Even so, they were accomplices of the Sovereign of the Eventide, so they were still guilty!

"All of you can be spared from death, but there is no sparing a punishment!" Yi Yun's cold voice resounded everywhere.

With a thought, Yi Yun waved his hands, causing more than ten thousand golden runes to appear out of his hands. These golden runes were Yi Yun's energy mark formed from his pure Yang energy.

These marks flew towards the warriors present and they descended on their faces, with one person per mark.

Following that, the pure Yang energy exploded!

"Ah, ah, ah!"

Some people cried out in pain, as their faces were burnt by the pure Yang energy, leaving behind a scar.

The marks burned by pure Yang energy seemed to be like brand marks in the mortal world, in which a mark was left behind on their faces using a molten piece of iron.

With Yi Yun's comprehension of pure Yang laws, there was no one else in the Tian Yuan world who could match him. It was impossible to wipe away this mark, or even use disguise techniques to hide it.

Unless Yi Yun allowed removal, the marks would follow them for life.

To warriors who placed great importance in honor, this was definitely a lifelong disgrace!

It was easy to guess that with Yi Yun's return, and the threat of the Black-armored Demon God removed, it was time for him to establish a new order. These people would be looked down upon by others because of the marks on their faces.

Regardless of the case, they had managed to have their lives spared.

"You can't be spared a punishment. By leaving the brands behind, it is to warn you. In the future, I will leave the Tian Yuan world, and the method of removing the brand will be left to the former Desolate Queen. If you were to do good, rendering good service, she can remove your brands!"

By passing the method behind the brand to the Desolate race, it was also a form of deterrence to these people.

At that moment, Yi Yun waved his hand.

"Boom!"

The God Advent Tower began to tremble and it burst out of the array's confines. Numerous runic patterns shattered as the God Advent Tower returned to Yi Yun before being put in his dantian.

Following that, the Black-armored Demon God also waved his hand to summon his black lance. At that moment, the Sovereign of the Eventide, who was in a deplorable state, was still hanging on the lance with scarcely any breath left. He looked utterly wretched.

The Black-armored Demon God flew up and he used his lance to lift the Sovereign of the Eventide up. Yi Yun planned on taking the Sovereign of the Eventide to the Desolate race, so he could redeem himself with his life in front of Jiang Xiaorou.

"Let's go!"

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong transformed into streams of light, while the Black-armored Demon God followed closely behind.

They streaked across the skies, using spatial dimension laws to shorten the distance. In seconds, they had traversed hundreds of kilometers.

Seeing Yi Yun and company come and go so quickly, the warriors in front of the Umbriferous Divine Palace ruins were still lost in

shock.

They had survived... Yi Yun did not kill them.

As they touched the brands on their faces, an excruciating pain reminded them that everything that just happened was not a dream.

Yi Yun was not dead. He has returned!

Not only was he not dead, his strength had also improved tremendously. People previously even had hope that Yi Yun did not die, allowing him to devote himself to cultivation so that he could kill the Black-armored Demon God in the future. But the current situation was that he killed the Black-armored Demon God in the alternate dimension, and even refined the Black-armored Demon God into his puppet!

The calamity in twenty years naturally no longer existed. They need not worry anymore, but... they were now burdened with a stigma.

However, this was of their own choice, so there was no one to blame.

Chapter 764: Returning To The Desolate Race

Divine Wilderness, in the remote mountains.

Ever since the Sanctuary Island couple and a number of legendary human figures had settled in the remote mountains, more and more mighty human figures came to the remote mountains through a passage built through the Divine Wilderness.

This place had become the front line command post in the allied war against the Black-armored Demon God.

They knew that in twenty years time, the Black-armored Demon God would appear again, so the Human and Desolate race certainly could not sit idle.

At that moment in time, the sun had yet to rise. The remote mountains were covered in clouds, as endless mist slowly rose up through the night, blanketing the mountains and valleys.

Under this mist, there was a palace and immortal abodes that spread for more than a fifty kilometers!

It was a residence built for warriors.

There was nothing in the remote mountains to begin with, but through the combined efforts of the mighty Human and Desolate

race figures, a series of buildings in the palace compound with arrays had sprung up in a few short months!

With these arrays, the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi in a radius of tens of thousands of kilometers was gathered towards the remote mountains, supporting the cultivation of warriors!

Not only that, the Desolate race had rebuilt their most defensive array, with the Divine Bone Altar at its core. This array enveloped the entire remote mountains. The moment that this array was set up, it began to accumulate energy. As long as an enemy came attacking, the array would be activated, releasing all the energy that it had previously accumulated.

Of course, against the Black-armored Demon God, it was hard to tell how effective the array would be.

There were many warriors, and there were many arrays. To allow warriors to cultivate daily and to power these arrays would naturally consume a lot of resources. Hence, there would be a group of high-level Desolate Heaven Masters in the remote mountains who would refine all sorts of relics on a daily basis, giving them to the allied Desolate race and Human race army.

At the break of dawn, the mist was suddenly dispersed by the cries of warriors. In front of the palace compound, the aura from the Human race and Desolate race warriors' cultivation swept up like a strong wind, dispersing all the clouds in a fifty kilometer radius.

As the clouds dispersed, the scene in the remote mountains could clearly be seen. More than ten thousand array flags were inserted into the ground of the Divine Wilderness. Each array flag was engraved with runic patterns, and as the strong winds blew the flags, they created a strong, fluttering sound.

For the weak to fight the strong, they could only rely on arrays to gather all their strength, a tactic that took advantage of their numbers so they could resist the strong.

"Ha! Ha!"

Earth-shaking roars echoed in the valley as the Human and Desolate race warriors were relying on their individual arrays to engage in an intense opposing combat exercise!

Instantly, all sorts of divine beams flashed as energy storms surged wantonly. The entire remote mountains began trembling!

Activating such large arrays expended a lot of energy and large quantities of relics. But in the face of the destruction of the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness, the various human race factions and the Desolate race couldn't selfishly hid their possessions any longer. All sorts of valuable resources that were accumulated over millions of years were taken out without any delay and they were provided to the warriors.

"Weak! Too weak! What are all of you doing? Ten arrays burned up more than ten thousand relics in an instance. Look at the attack that all of you had just launched, the Yuan Qi efficiency was less

than half!"

An azure-clothed youth hovered high in the air, as he watched the intense battle below. The azure-clothed youth was none other than Shepherd Boy, who was responsible for the daily training of the Human and Desolate race warriors.

In recent days, Shepherd Boy enjoyed extremely high prestige, even amongst the Human race warriors. Although the Human race was unfriendly to the Desolate race, they too admired the strong. With his talent and powerful strength, Shepherd Boy had won over the human elites' respect.

At that moment, the floating Shepherd Boy suddenly realized something as he moved downwards and landed on a mountain peak.

On the mountain peak, there was a palace standing on it. At that moment, in front of the palace doors stood a red-dressed girl who looked pale. She was Jiang Xiaorou.

Ever since the Sovereign of the Eventide's Darkness energy was planted in her soul sea, Jiang Xiaorou had endured the erosion of her life force by this energy.

The feeling of having her soul sea eroded was excruciating, and yet, Jiang Xiaorou had endured the pain for nearly a year.

In the past year, Jiang Xiaorou had suffered all sorts of torture.

The Sanctuary Island couple were helpless against this Darkness energy, and they initially believed that Jiang Xiaorou's life force would be slowly expended, making her gradually turn weak to the point of being bedridden.

But unexpectedly, Jiang Xiaorou had managed to survive through it. Not only that, her bloodline and life force was constantly in a struggle against the Dark energy.

At that moment, Jiang Xiaorou's cultivation level had been repressed by the Dark energy, so she did not experience any growth over the past year. But the power in Jiang Xiaorou's blood, as well as her soul, was slowly strengthening. The Dark energy did not take down Jiang Xiaorou. If the Dark energy planted by the Sovereign of the Eventide was a rock and Jiang Xiaorou was a weed, then she was being pressed down by a rock. However, her life remained as firm and tenacious as ever, growing through the cracks in the rock and maturing with great difficulty.

"It's the Desolate race's Queen!"

Many of the human warriors, who were cultivating in the remote mountains, also saw Jiang Xiaorou.

They were deeply impressed by Jiang Xiaorou. They had heard of the Darkness mark planted in her. A frail girl like Jiang Xiaorou had managed to endure an attack from a peak middle-stage Heaven Ascension realm figure, and her life force was even being constantly honed and strengthened due to the presence of this energy. It could be said to be a miracle.

Jiang Xiaorou had created a miracle, so was it possible that another miracle would happen to them in the battle against the Black-armored Demon God in twenty years time?

Carry on practicing!

Even though they knew that the Black-armored Demon God was powerful, and they knew that their battle against the Black-armored Demon God was like an egg striking a rock, they still had to do their best!

Maybe, many of them would turn to ash in a second during the actual battle, despite their twenty years of hard work, endured through sweat and tears, or they might not even be qualified to touch the Black-armored Demon God's weapon, but they wanted to devote all their lives for that instant.

Furthermore, they also knew that a traitor—Sovereign of the Eventide—had appeared from the Human race. At that moment, he was gathering followers en masse, and a war might break out before the Black-armored Demon God appeared.

With an indomitable enemy before them, it was extremely tragic for there to be infighting amongst the Human race...

Twenty years... Their destiny would be decided in these twenty years. They all had to do their best, and it might only be a slim hope. But they knew that if they didn't do so, there wouldn't be a trace of hope at all.

"Practice again!" Shepherd Boy shouted.

Every practice using the arrays was a huge expenditure, so they had to cherish every opportunity to practice with the arrays. If not, no matter how much accumulated resources the Human and Desolate race had, it would not be able to withstand such splurging!

Just as Shepherd Boy said those words, and the Human and Desolate race warriors were gathering their energies, two extremely thick pillars of Yuan Qi shot up into the sky. Suddenly, a blackish-red beam of light appeared along the horizon. This beam of light was incredibly fast, and even with Shepherd Boy's deep and profound cultivation level, he did not discover it any earlier than the other younger warriors.

The black beam of light arrived at the Human and Desolate race's training ground in a blink of an eye!

Boom Boom Boom! Energy exploded as space warped. People could barely make out that the black beam of light was actually the flight of three people. Their boundless aura had torn apart the void, and the two large Yuan Qi pillars of light had broken as a result of their powerful aura!

All the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was instantly drained from the Human and Desolate race arrays by the people's flight in a split second!

This was the Heaven Earth energy gathered through large arrays built by tens of thousands of Human and Desolate race elites. Yet, it could not withstand the impact of the people's aura!

Furthermore, this was just the aura from their flight, and not an aura from combat!

Who... are these people?

Shepherd Boy's face changed as the Human and Desolate race elites prepared to stand their ground against a powerful foe. For there to be such a powerful existence, there was only one person they could think of... Black-armored Demon God!

However, wasn't the Black-armored Demon God only going to appear again in about nineteen years time?

The people held their breaths as they intently looked up in the sky. And when they saw the figures of these people, they were alarmed. All of their expressions were twisted in ways more complex than the runic patterns on those array flags.

The tallest amongst the three figures was most eye-catching. He was a stalwart man, holding a lance and he was barebacked. Wasn't he... the Black-armored Demon God!?

"Black-armored Demon God!?"

The Human and Desolate race warriors looked on in shock.

Although they had already honed their minds to embrace death all this while, they still could not bear the sudden appearance of the Black-armored Demon God!

Facing the Black-armored Demon God, who had attacked them about a year ago and whose powerful aura from his flight was enough to break the energy pillar accumulated by the large arrays, their confidence crumbled, even if they were determined to fight to the death! It was such a terrifying enemy, whose power had far exceeded their imaginations!

But very quickly, something even more surprising happened.

In front of the Black-armored Demon God, there was a black-clad youth and a white-dressed girl.

Upon seeing these two people, everyone was shocked beyond words. Their minds went from despair to utter shock as they experienced mental fluctuations... Aren't the two of them Yi Yun and Lin Xintong?

They are still alive? Furthermore... why are they with the Black-armored Demon God!?

Chapter 765: Everything Is Over

Lin Xintong, Yi Yun, as well as the Black-armored Demon God! Furthermore... dangling on the Black-armored Demon God's lance was a half-dead middle-aged man. After scrutinizing the man's look, everyone was stunned. Isn't that... the Sovereign of the Eventide?

The Sovereign of the Eventide was the strongest warrior in the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness! In recent times, the Human and Desolate race's greatest enemy was the Black-armored Demon God, but the Black-armored Demon God had yet to appear, so they were wary of the Sovereign of the Eventide only. He wanted to use all the resources in the entire world to escape to the 12 Empyrean Heavens. He was like a venomous snake that lurked in the dark, threatening to bite them at any time.

But now, the Sovereign of the Eventide dangling on the Black-armored Demon God's lance...

What... the hell... happened?

Had the Black-armored Demon God controlled Yi Yun and Lin Xintong, then kill the Sovereign of the Eventide?

The Human and Desolate race warriors were momentarily at a loss. Even Shepherd Boy, who was the Commander, was shocked.

He could clearly tell that the scene in front of him did not look like Yi Yun had been enslaved by the Black-armored Demon God.

On the contrary, it looked like Yi Yun had enslaved the Black-armored Demon God because he was following Yi Yun.

The Black-armored Demon God had been subdued? Was that even possible?

The allied force's array had its Yuan Qi columns broken as a result of Yi Yun and the Black-armored Demon God's appearance. At that moment, the desolate bone relics were burning crazily in the array, but no one could care for them.

"Phew! Phew! Phew!

At that moment, more than twenty beams of light flew into the sky from all corners of the remote mountains.

The Sanctuary Island couple, the former Desolate Queen, as well as the legendary human and Desolate race figures, had all been stirred.

When the Black-armored Demon God came flying towards the remote mountains, with the terrifying pressure, as well as the momentum that drained the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi dry, how could they not have discovered the sudden change?

More than twenty Human and Desolate race Empyrean Kings were scattered everywhere in the sky with Yi Yun, who was clad in black and had chiselled facial features, in the middle. From top to bottom, there was a majestic and aggressive aura that lingered

around him, causing apprehension in the people around him.

Beside Yi Yun was Lin Xintong in her snow-white dress, as well as the Black-armored Demon God, who was dangling the Sovereign of the Eventide on his lance!

The stalwart but horrific Demon God seemed to appear extremely respectful to Yi Yun.

"Sanctuary Island Lord, Your Majesty, it's been a while." Yi Yun casually cupped his fists and greeted them.

The Sanctuary Island Lord opened his mouth, unsure of what to say.

He pointed at the Black-armored Demon God and said, "That... is the Black-armored Demon God!?"

"Yes." Yi Yun nodded his head, and said, "I was sealed in an alternate dimension and I was at the end of the rope. But in the final moment, I happened to gain some insights into spatial dimension laws by chance, allowing me to break the spatial barrier open. I then killed the Black-armored Demon God, and then refined his body into a Black Demon puppet. After all this, I returned to the Divine Wilderness."

"As for the Sovereign of the Eventide, I have learned of the sins that he has committed in the past year. So I captured him, bringing him here so that he can repent for his sins."

Yi Yun mentioned what happened casually, but when his words entered the ears of others, they were all dumbfounded.

Sealed into an alternate dimension, gaining some insights into the spatial dimension laws 'by chance'!?

Spatial dimension laws were already extremely difficult to learn or master. Few people in the entire Tian Yuan world could do it. Furthermore, Yi Yun did not know any spatial dimension laws in the past, preventing him from being able to escape the alternate dimension. Yet, he had managed to gain some insights into the spatial dimension laws by himself, returning to the Divine Wilderness. This method of gaining insight into spatial dimension laws sounded like child's play!

As for killing the Black-armored Demon God, refining his body into a Black Demon puppet... that rendered the legendary human and Desolate race figures even more speechless. They had been cultivating arduously for the Black-armored Demon God here, day in and day out. They were already determined to fight to the death. But on Yi Yun's side... he had already killed the Black-armored Demon God, and he even refined him into a puppet!

As for finally dangling the Sovereign of the Eventide on the lance, that was considered nothing. With Yi Yun having the strength to kill the Black-armored Demon God, dangling a hundred Sovereign of the Eventides was nothing difficult, what more one!?

"Young Master Yi, you really are..." The Sanctuary Island Lord

attempted to say something, but he stopped himself midway a few times. He was completely at a loss how to express the feelings he harbored.

"Sanctuary Island Lord, Your Majesty, the Sovereign of the Eventide shall be left to you."

As Yi Yun said that, the Black-armored Demon God swiped his lance, while the Sovereign of the Eventide let out a painful grunt. The wounds that sported black blood had been torn open once again as his body flew off the lance's tip.

Being removed from a lance that was about the thickness of a baby's wrist was excruciatingly painful. The Sovereign of the Eventide spat out blood and there was a tragic smile on his pale face. His dantian had been shattered by Yi Yun, and his cultivation was crippled. He was only left hanging on his last breath.

All he wished now was death, but Yi Yun deliberately left him alive.

"Eventide!" The Sanctuary Island Lord sighed.

For a mighty figure of a generation to come to such an end, he found it extremely regrettable.

He had the intention to give the Sovereign of the Eventide a quick death. But the way that the former Desolate Queen stared at the Sovereign of the Eventide, there was still a deep sense of hatred

in her.

Even though the Sovereign of the Eventide's outcome was currently so miserable, it could not resolve the hate that the former Desolate Queen had for him. Jiang Xiaorou had nearly lost her life because of him.

The former Desolate Queen waved her hand, sending dozens of seals to infuse themselves into the Sovereign of the Eventide's body.

These seals repressed the vitality of the Sovereign of the Eventide, but they also prevented his death temporarily.

"Throw him into the dungeons!"

The former Desolate Queen directly threw the Sovereign of the Eventide downwards.

And at that moment, Yi Yun scanned the crowd and he saw a red-dressed figure standing on one of the tall mountains...

"Yun-er!" A crisp voice echoed.

Standing on a cliff, Jiang Xiaorou looked at Yi Yun with eyes brimming with tears.

Yi Yun had disappeared for a year, and during this time, Jiang

Xiaorou constantly worried about him. Yi Yun had been sealed in an alternate dimension, with slim chances of survival. Even the Sanctuary Island couple, who said that Yi Yun would definitely return, did not believe their own words deep down.

As for Jiang Xiaorou, she was enduring the devouring of her life force from the Darkness energy, while waiting for Yi Yun's return.

It was like she had returned to more than a decade ago, during their last few moments in the Cloud Wilderness. Yi Yun had gone to the Tao tribal clan to participate in the Jin Long Wei's selection. As for Jiang Xiaorou, she had no choice but to hide deep in the mountains, afraid that the Lian tribal clan would look for her. She spent every day in a tree house in the mountains, waiting for Yi Yun's return.

She even remembered that scene on that day so many years ago, where Yi Yun returned while riding a Jin Long Wei mount, dressed in a flying fish robe.

And because of his return, everything had changed.

"Sis Xiaorou... "

Yi Yun's figure flashed and he had already landed on the cliff, standing in front of Jiang Xiaorou...

It was over. At least in the world where the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness was, everything was over.

Yi Yun held Jiang Xiaorou's hand. As the rays of the sun shone down on the remote mountains, it illuminated Jiang Xiaorou's pale skin like dancing golden pixies.

The bit of cinnabar in the middle of her eyebrows bathed in the sunlight and it looked like a blooming red plum...

Yi Yun sensed that Jiang Xiaorou's life force had not been weakened by the Darkness energy, and was relieved.

"Sis Xiaorou, I'll help you extract the Darkness energy."

With the Purple Crystal Origins, even if Yi Yun did not know the Laws of Darkness, it was still possible for him to do such a trivial thing.

However, Jiang Xiaorou shook her head as she softly said, "There's no need. I will slowly make it disappear."

Chapter 766: Legendary Figures Convention

"Make it disappear?"

Yi Yun was momentarily surprised, but only then did he realize that although the Darkness energy lurking in Jiang Xiaorou's body was constantly eating away at her life force, Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline was also being stimulated by this external force, and it slowly experienced an awakening.

Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline was powerful, so powerful that even the Black-armored Demon God coveted it. However, in the Tian Yuan world, due to a lack of heritage, Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline failed to produce any heaven-defying effects.

But now, due to this Darkness energy, Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline was beginning to develop a portion of its miraculous effects.

There was such a thing?

Yi Yun had originally been worried about Jiang Xiaorou. But now, due to the catalytic properties of the Darkness energy, it could be said that it was a blessing in disguise for Jiang Xiaorou.

In such a situation, there was indeed no need for him to do anything. If he allowed Jiang Xiaorou to use her own strength to swallow the Darkness bit by bit, it could be an opportunity for her.

Only Jiang Xiaorou could turn this catastrophe into an

opportunity. If an ordinary person had been implanted with the Darkness energy, their life force would have been drained.

"Alright, Sis Xiaorou. If there is come a day when you don't feel right, be sure to tell me."

With the Purple Crystal Origins, Yi Yun could monitor the Darkness energy in Jiang Xiaorou's body, so he was not worried.

Jiang Xiaorou nodded and whispered, "Okay."

At that moment, Yi Yun suddenly thought of something as he called out to the Sanctuary Island Lord.

"Island Lord Ying!"

"Is there something you want from me, Young Master Yi?"

In front of Yi Yun, the Sanctuary Island Lord spoke respectfully. Yi Yun had defeated the Black-armored Demon God nearly single-handedly, relieving the calamity of the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness. This feat made him worthy of receiving the respect and gratitude of every warrior.

"I want to call upon every legendary figure in the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness to have a convention. The venue shall be here in the remote mountains. I'll trouble Island Lord Ying on informing everyone."

Years ago, after Blood Moon was destroyed by Sovereign of the Eventide, he had held a convention at Greatsword Mountain, establishing the Tian Yuan Elder Consortium, in a bid to establish a new order in the Tian Yuan world.

Now, Yi Yun was holding a convention in the remote mountains, and this convention would not only be limited to the legendary human figures, the legendary Desolate race figures would also be attending.

For both the mighty figures of the Human and Desolate race to attend such a meeting, it was unprecedented.

"Alright!" The Sanctuary Island Lord agreed immediately. "I'll immediately begin to pass on the news."

After the Sanctuary Island Lord bade farewell, in a couple of hours, he and other legendary human figures used various transmission methods to inform the rest of the Tian Yuan world that Yi Yun had subdued the Black-armored Demon God, as well as how he handled the Sovereign of the Eventide.

In fact, previously when Yi Yun arrived at the Umbriferous Divine Palace, and destroyed it completely, there were already followers of the Sovereign of the Eventide who had spread the news of Yi Yun subduing the Black-armored Demon God.

However, as Yi Yun had grasped spatial dimension laws, his speed was too fast. Flying from the Tian Yuan world to the remote

mountains just took an extremely short period of time. As such, the news had yet to proliferate.

Now, with both sides were spreading the news, with one faction spreading the news to ten, and ten to a hundred. Very quickly, the entire Tian Yuan world was shaken.

The Black-armored Demon God was dead!

The Sovereign of the Eventide, who wanted to escape to the 12 Empyrean Heavens and had caused strife, had been killed!

The Sovereign of the Eventide was nothing much, but the Black-armored Demon God was a knife that hung over their heads. The death sentence in twenty years meant a single path of death. Yet now, it had been shattered by Yi Yun.

Not only that, Yi Yun was even controlling the Black-armored Demon God. It was equivalent to subduing that knife and then using for himself!

Yi Yun's strength already made him the strongest person in this world. Even Heaven Ascension realm experts were no match for Yi Yun.

Now, Yi Yun had even gained control of the Black-armored Demon God. This Black-armored Demon God puppet might even be more powerful than Yi Yun.

There was also the equally powerful Lin Xintong, who followed closely behind Yi Yun. Yi Yun's wishes were Lin Xintong's wishes. There was also no need to doubt Lin Xintong's strength.

And there was the Desolate Queen Jiang Xiaorou from the Desolate race, she was Yi Yun's elder sister, and the Desolate race looked up to Yi Yun for directions.

All these levels of relations made Yi Yun the absolute ruler of this world. Flipping his hand revealed clouds! Laying his hands brought rain!

Regardless of which superfaction it was, a simple word from Yi Yun and it would be destroyed in an instant. There was even no need for Yi Yun to do it himself.

As such, the large factions that previously had feuds with Yi Yun, such as the Shentu family clan, the Li Fire Sect, and the Totem Mystic Clan, were all trembling in fright!

Yet now, Yi Yun had called for an assembly of the Tian Yuan world and Desolate race legendary figures in the remote mountains. He had requested that all perfect Yuan Opening realm, half-step Heaven Ascension, and even Heaven Ascension realm warriors to participate in it!

Who would dare not to come to such a convention?

After the Black-armored Demon God was subdued, Yi Yun was

already the sovereign of this world. Compared to the ancient Great Empress tens of millions of years ago, he was in no way worse!

Furthermore, Yi Yun was still extremely young. What sort of achievements would he receive in the future? It was unimaginable!

There was no doubt that in less than ten years, he would make a breakthrough in his realm. And then, even if he wanted to destroy the entire Tian Yuan world, it would probably wouldn't be difficult, let alone one faction!

In that case, the remaining legendary figures of the Li Fire Sect and the Shentu family clan felt like the legendary figure convention in the remote mountains was like an execution ground. However, they still rushed to the remote mountains, and they did not dare to delay one bit!

Ignoring these few factions, even those factions who had no grudges with Yi Yun were having butterflies in their stomach.

A month later, the remote mountains.

After the Black-armored Demon God's ravaging, a large number of Tian Yuan world and Divine Wilderness legendary figures had died, especially when it came to the Tian Yuan world, less than half were left.

There were only slightly more than twenty people at the Heaven Ascension realm. As for the half-step Heaven Ascension realm,

there were about thirty. The Heaven Ascension realm was a threshold that many people had a bottleneck just before it, unable to make that final step past it. However, even so, they had been given the title of Empyreal King.

Below half-step Heaven Ascension, there were quite a number of perfect Yuan Opening realm warriors. They numbered more than two hundred, and adding all of them up, the number of legendary human figures that could come to the remote mountains numbered less than three hundred.

These three hundred people had used the teleportation arrays that the Desolate race set up beforehand to arrive in the remote mountains.

The venue of the convention was in the Desolate race Palace.

Now, these three hundred people were gathered in the external perimeter of the Desolate race Palace. This group of people was the people who controlled the entire Tian Yuan world's order. If they joined forces, they were in control of more than 90% of the Tian Yuan world's forces.

But now, all these important figures stood outside the Desolate race Palace in a respectful manner. They did not even dare to breathe out loud.

Residing in the Desolate race Palace, Yi Yun have free reign on deciding their lives and deaths. Not only that, the Black-armored Demon God's aura leaked out of the Desolate race Palace faintly.

Even though the Demon God had repressed his strength, the immense pressure that came about from the difference in life's natural order caused them to feel breathless.

"Young Master Yi summons all of you in!"

At that moment, a legendary Desolate race figure walked out of the gates of the palace, inviting the legendary human figures, just like an Emperor summoning his retinue.

Chapter 767: New Divine City

The legendary human figures entered the Desolate race Palace one by one.

At that moment, the elders from the Shentu family clan and Li Fire Sect were all trembling in fear, and they had extremely ugly expressions.

Shentu family clan's head, Shentu Patriarch was already dead, so the ones joining this meeting were only ordinary Shentu Elders.

As for the Li Fire Sect's Grand Elder, who was an ugly old man, he was still alive. He was truly being very careful at that moment. He would take every step gingerly, afraid that he might shatter a brick tile on the ground, and when he opened a door, he was worried that he would break the handle.

The reason why he was so careful was seemingly because he was afraid that Yi Yun would casually come up with an excuse to kill him. Of course, he also knew that even without an excuse, Yi Yun could destroy him in one strike, and no one would champion his oppression.

At this occasion, with Yi Yun's strength, he could completely rule over everything.

Even though he was extremely reluctant, he still had to meet Yi Yun. When the final door to the hall was open, the legendary human figures entered a vast hall that was hundreds of feet wide.

They saw Yi Yun sitting high at the seat of honor. Beside him was Lin Xintong, and behind him stood a man with squirming muscles, who looked like a gatekeeper that protected Yi Yun.

Black-armored Demon God!

Everyone held their breaths as this stalwart man was the Black-armored Demon God.

Now with Yi Yun sitting, while the Black-armored Demon God stood behind him, like some lackey, it was naturally because Yi Yun had refined him into a puppet.

Although they already knew about it, to truly witness it with their own eyes was shocking.

More than a year ago, just seeing this Demon God was like seeing Death. Everyone was panic and they would try to scatter in all directions.

A year later, the Black-armored Demon God had been subdued by Yi Yun, but they still trembled when seeing him and they felt the pressure.

This was like a mortal seeing someone else bring a ferocious tiger around, but this tiger was completely unleashed. It was hard for the mortal not to be afraid while sharing the same room with the tiger.

Surrounding Yi Yun and Lin Xintong were the legendary Desolate race figures. There was a big and long table in the middle of the hall. Those who could sit around the table were the Desolate race equivalent of Heaven Ascension realm figures, as for the other Yuan Opening realm equivalent warriors, they could only sit on the smaller side tables.

Shepherd Boy, the former Desolate Queen and Jiang Xiaorou were all sitting at the main table. At this convention, all the important figures of this world had gathered!

Although Yi Yun was a junior, many legendary human figures still bowed to Yi Yun.

"Our greetings to Young Master Yi."

Many legendary human figures cupped their fists. In the world of warriors, the strong enjoyed the prestige, rather than one's age.

"Sit."

Yi Yun waved his hand very frankly, as all the legendary human figures sat down.

As a form of respect for Yi Yun and due to the pressure at the venue, many legendary human figures only sat on a third of their chairs. They maintained their bodies in an upright position.

"Young Master Yi sure is a talented young man. Back when the Black-armored Demon God appeared, none of our lives were guaranteed. All the heritage in the Tian Yuan world was also threatened with destruction. However, not only has Young Master Yi defused the crisis, he has even subdued the Black-armored Demon God. It is truly impressive."

"For Young Master Yi to be able to free himself from the sealed space, that truly is an astonishing feat. All life under the heavens has to thank Young Master Yi. Young Master Yi has saved the entire Tian Yuan world, as well as the Divine Wilderness."

The legendary human figures took turns to flatter him.

Most of this flattery was heartfelt. Yi Yun's subduing of the Black-armored Demon God had allowed everyone to escape this calamity.

Although the stress of sharing a room with Yi Yun was not insignificant, they were similarly very grateful to Yi Yun.

"The Black-armored Demon God was also my enemy. He wanted to kill me, and kill the people around me, so I naturally have to engage in a life and death battle with him. There is no need to thank me," Yi Yun said lightly in a very calm tone. "Today, I called upon all of you here to discuss a few matters... "

"Please speak, Young Master Yi! We will definitely do our best."

The leaders of a few surviving top factions immediately answered. With Yi Yun's present position, was there a need to discuss with something that he commanded? That was practically a holy decree from heaven. Who would dare to defy it?

Yi Yun said, "The Human race and the Desolate race have been engaged in fighting for tens of millions of years. I do not wish to see this carry on any longer. For this matter, I have already talked to the Desolate race about it, and I have received the Desolate Queen's agreement."

"I plan on building a divine city on the boundaries of the Divine Wilderness. I will leave some heritage in the city. Be it young elites from the Human race or the Desolate race, they are free to enter this divine city for training. Those with excellent results will receive rewards in terms of resources. If you want to nurture your future generations, you can send the young geniuses of your clans or factions to this Divine City. Of course, the treasury in the divine city has to be provided by each and every one of you, as a form of reward for the future generations."

The divine city that Yi Yun wanted to establish was a replica of the Tai Ah Divine City from before. Of course, compared to the Tai Ah Divine City, this new divine city would be several hundred times more powerful! Be it the resources, rewards, heritage or teachers, they were things that the Tai Ah Divine City could not match at all.

Yi Yun planned on providing the heritage that he had gathered over the years. A lot of it was from the collection in the God Advent Tower, and most of them came from the 12 Empyrean

Heavens!

Of course, core heritage like the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra', or the Azure Yang Lord's sword techniques, Yi Yun would not pass them down. He only left behind the heritage that was of little value to him. The effects of learning them wasn't too much, and it was a waste of time. However, these heritages were much better than the original heritage in the Tian Yuan world!

As for rewards like relics, pills, weapons, Yi Yun did not plan on providing them. They were to be provided by the large factions in the Tian Yuan world.

By throwing this out there, which faction wouldn't dare to bleed themselves dry to fulfill it? If Yi Yun was dissatisfied, their factions could very well be finished.

Besides, with this Divine City, it could nurture stronger talents in this world, and secondly, it allowed the Human and Desolate race elites to cultivate in this city. They could mix with one another, and no longer behave like how fire and water did not mix.

The heads of the various large factions all expressed their utmost support. From their looks, it was like these people wanted to rush to the boundary of the Divine Wilderness to build the city this very moment.

Yi Yun nodded and then said, "There is a second thing."

As Yi Yun spoke, his gaze nonchalantly swept over the elders of the Shentu family clan and the Li Fire Sect.

Just this glance made the elders turn pale, as their heart beats stagnated.

They felt like they were sitting on pins and needles. They felt like Yi Yun's gaze was like a god's sword of punishment that was piercing them. They simply wished that they could become a rock or a pile of dog shit. At least in that case, Yi Yun would not focus on them.

"Shentu family clan... Li Fire Sect... Totem Mystic Clan... " Yi Yun paused after saying this as he looked at the corresponding elders.

The elders from these named factions turned pale in the face. What was to come has come. Never in their wildest dreams would the Yi Yun, who they had added insult to injury ten years ago, had grown so fast. In a blink of an eye, he had reached the point where he dominated their lives and deaths!

Yi Yun did not speak, he just watched this group of people. The group of elders were sweating profusely. They did not know how Yi Yun wanted to dispose of them, and at that moment, every second felt like a year!

Chapter 768: Shentu Family Clan's Outcome

"Young... Young Master Yi... " A timid Shentu family clan Elder almost rolled out of his seat. With what the Shentu family clan had done to Yi Yun, it would be no surprise if Yi Yun decided on completely wiping them out.

Yi Yun coldly glanced at the Shentu Elder who spoke. He was never a person who rewarded injury with kindness. These factions had kicked him while he was down, with the Shentu family clan and the Li Fire Sect being the worst. Of course, as Yi Yun was strong enough, he did not suffer any major losses. But what if he wasn't strong enough? Then, his outcome would definitely be tragic.

Furthermore, Yi Yun wanted to head to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, so he did not wish to see any factions that had a grudge against him left in the Tian Yuan world.

Even though those people might be completely trivial to him, Yi Yun also wanted to put an end to the possibility that they would be able to stir any waves in the future.

"Your family clans and sects, from today onwards, dissolve them!"

With this said, every legendary figure widened their mouths. A simple sentence had dissolved five top ranked Tian Yuan world factions!

If this sentence was said during ordinary times and by any other person, it would have been a joke. The Sovereign of the Eventide could not have done it. Even if the Sovereign of the Eventide had said it together with the Sanctuary Island couple, no one would have heeded them.

However, Yi Yun had said it. In one breath, he was dissolving five top ranked factions, but no one dared to treat his words as a joke. There was no need to mention dissolving the five factions, if he really wanted to wipe them all out, he did not even need to move his hand to do so!

Amongst these factions, the most ancient one, the Totem Mystic Race, had already existed for millions of years. But now, this faction was probably going to become history in the Tian Yuan world!

"Young... Young Master Yi... " A Li Fire Sect Elder's voice trembled. A simple word from Yi Yun and his sect would no longer exist. It was too aggrieving!

"What? You don't agree with it?"

As Yi Yun spoke, he looked coldly at the Li Fire Sect Elder who just spoke. Just this glance was enough to make the Li Fire Sect Elder shudder. He had no doubt that a single thought of Yi Yun was enough to reduce him to ash.

"If... If we were to dissolve our factions and clans, then our disciples... all of us, where do we go... "

Yi Yun only declared that these factions were to be dissolved, but he did not wish for there to be a slaughtering. Although these factions had kicked him while he was down, many of the disciples of these factions were actually innocent. Those members of the upper echelons that made those decisions would be dealt with by the Desolate race through a trial. As for the junior disciples, they were guilty to begin with.

"Joining other factions would do. I will let the Lin family take a portion. It shall be the same with the accumulated resources of your sect as well."

Yi Yun did not stand on ceremony. After these factions were dissolved, he planned on splitting their resources to the other factions. In this case, the few factions that were dissolved would gradually be assimilated by the other factions!

Of course, the Lin family would receive the largest slice of the pie. But if it took it too much, the Lin family would not be able to digest it. With too many external personnel joining, it would inevitably cause instability.

When Yi Yun said this, the Elders from the other factions were secretly pleased.

By dissolving five top factions in one go, it would be a huge pie. And now, Yi Yun was splitting the pie, letting everyone have a bite.

After all, there were only about 20–30 top ranking factions in the

Tian Yuan world to begin with. After the Black-armored Demon God had wrecked havoc, some of these top ranked factions completely collapsed, while some were reduced to being second tier factions. Now, Yi Yun was removing five, so there were only slightly more than a dozen top ranked factions left in the Tian Yuan world. The landscape had completely changed.

In addition to Yi Yun taking a large portion of heritage out to establish the new Divine City, which allowed all family clans and other factions to send their young elites in for training, this was a good opportunity to rezone territory in the Tian Yuan world.

By grasping this opportunity, there was a possibility for them to become the second largest faction in the Tian Yuan world. Of course, the title of the largest faction would be left for the Lin family. With Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's support, even if the Lin family lay down and did nothing, they would definitely be the largest family clan in the Tian Yuan world.

...

The mighty figures who participated in this legendary figure convention had already made guesses as to what would happen before the convention began. This convention would most likely change the future situation of the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness.

Thinking through the entire convention, it only took about ten minutes. A few simple words from Yi Yun was enough to be fully implemented due to his authority.

In the next hundred years, the five named factions would slowly dissolve and would be divided. The young disciples of those factions would be absorbed and assimilated by other factions. Gradually, they too would lose their sense of belonging to their original factions, and they would be fully integrated into other family clans or factions, becoming a member of that family or faction.

Of course, that would be the epilogue.

At that moment, after the legendary figure convention, Yi Yun went to the inner sanctums of the Desolate race Palace.

Lin Xintong, Jiang Xiaorou and the former Desolate Queen were waiting there.

The calamity that the Tian Yuan world faced had finally subsided. The Black-armored Demon God had been subdued, while the Sovereign of the Eventide was dead. The factions that had a grudge with Yi Yun were dealt with. For Yi Yun and the Desolate race, this entire world could be said to be peaceful.

The former Desolate Queen had a feeling that she could heave a sigh of relief. However, when she looked at Jiang Xiaorou's expression and then at Yi Yun, she knew that it was time for their separation.

"You plan on going to the 12 Empyrean Heavens?" The former Desolate Queen suddenly asked Yi Yun.

The Tian Yuan world was only a world that was used as a seal. It was equivalent to a container that sealed a Demon God. A sealed container was still a closed off world, even if the Azure Yang Lord had opened up a small opening tens of millions of years ago.

If Yi Yun wanted to grow stronger, he had to leave and see what the exterior world was like.

The 12 Empyrean Heavens had a unique allure for the Tian Yuan world warriors.

Actually, even the former Desolate Queen wanted to go to the 12 Empyrean Heavens to take a look. She wanted to see what sort of level true mighty figures and true brilliant heritage would be like. She hoped to see dazzling martial arts civilizations.

And also... the former Desolate Queen had the tiny, tiny hope of finding Jiang Xiaorou's father.

Having been separated from Jiang Xiaorou's father for so many years, the former Desolate Queen did not even know if he was dead or alive. She wanted to look for him, but she knew that with her potential mostly spent, it was very difficult for her to make any leaps in cultivation level, even if she were to go to the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

In the Tian Yuan world, she was a sovereign that ruled the Divine Wilderness, but in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, she was a small fry. She might even be killed instantly by others. In the vast 12

Empyrean Heavens, trying to find a person was equivalent to searching for a needle in a haystack!

And there was too many things that she needed to do in the Tian Yuan world. She had her mission that she needed to guard.

In her youth, she had been headstrong once. Now, she had passed that stage...

She still chose to silently protect the Divine Wilderness, and the members of the Desolate race. For the people who had spilled their blood on the wilderness, she could not abandon them...

"I indeed want to go to the 12 Empyrean Heavens." Yi Yun nodded. "Your Majesty, may I take a look at the traces that Sis Xiaorou's father left behind when he returned to the 12 Empyrean Heavens?"

Jiang Xiaorou's father had fled to this world with serious injuries.

His origins were a mystery, but he gave Jiang Xiaorou an unparalleled bloodline. However, his background was something that even the former Desolate Queen knew little about.

Chapter 769: Departure

Originally, Yi Yun was of the impression that when Jiang Xiaorou's father left the Tian Yuan world, he would leave behind a complex and powerful teleportation array. He planned on using the teleportation array to find spatial nodes. Using the spatial nodes, he could cross the void to arrive in the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

But when he arrived at the spot where Jiang Xiaorou's father had left the Tian Yuan world, there was nothing there.

It was a hidden valley and in the valley, there was a thin layer of lingering mist. The Heaven Earth Yuan Qi around the area was not rich, and the only difference was that there was a bit of disorder in the spatial dimensional forces in the vicinity.

Spatial dimension disorder... meant that there could be a spatial dimensional channel in the area that had been sealed. With Yi Yun's present understanding of spatial dimension laws, he felt like he could easily tear the void apart to enter the turbulence of space, and following that, find the spatial node.

However, having read a portion of the Black-armored Demon God's memories, Yi Yun knew that traveling through spatial nodes was extremely difficult.

He had to make adequate preparations so that he would not get lost in the spatial turbulence.

Space travel was easier said than done. As for the Sovereign of the Eventide, Yi Yun did not believe that the Sovereign of the Eventide had the ability to reach the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

The Tian Yuan world's warriors did not understand a thing about the 12 Empyrean Heavens' spatial turbulence. The Sovereign of the Eventide's best outcome was probably reaching a smaller world, relatively close to the Tian Yuan world, but it would be beneath the 12 Empyrean Heavens. If he was unlucky, he might end up getting lost in the spatial turbulence, unable to find a way out forever.

Yi Yun wasn't in a hurry. He entered reclusive training in the valley, and as he meditated over the spatial dimensional laws, Lin Xintong joined him in meditation. They began making the final preparations for their trip to the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Now, Yi Yun's nomological insights were solid enough, the only thing lacking was his cultivation level. However, with solid laws, the improvement of cultivation level was just a matter of time.

Seasons passed as Yi Yun spent a long time in the valley.

Not far from the valley, on the boundary of the Divine Wilderness, a magnificent divine city was erected.

The walls of this divine city were already 300–400 kilometers long.

The various major factions of the Tian Yuan world established divisions in the Divine City, while the former Desolate Queen used Yi Yun's name, calling the city "Cloud (Yun) City"!

The heritage provided by Yi Yun, was all sealed in Cloud City's treasury. Other than that, the resources provided by the major human factions, as well as the Desolate race, were also placed in Cloud City's treasury.

The city became a holy land that every human and Desolate race genius longed for.

Many young elites would compete intensely just to receive the qualification to enter Cloud City. However, entering Cloud City was too difficult. Even geniuses from major factions, who gained the qualification to take Cloud City's entrance exams, were eliminated in large numbers later on. The remaining could only become Cloud City's normal cultivators.

Above normal cultivators, there were core cultivators, and the number of people who could become core cultivators numbered not more than ten annually. These ten people could enjoy the best resources and they were able to learn top heritage techniques.

The intensity of the competition when only ten people were chosen from the entire Desolate race and Human race was easy to imagine.

At that moment, in the vast Desolate Lands, a simply-clad girl and a youth, dressed in beast hide, were heading towards Cloud

City.

There was a no fly-zone with radius of 500 kilometers around Cloud City. Everyone, regardless of them being Empyrean Kings or royalty, had to walk.

The beast hide-clad boy and girl were in a crowd and they looked inconspicuous.

However, if Yi Yun was here, he would have been able to recognize the two of them. They were the brother-sister duo that Yi Yun had first encountered in Heaven Martial City after coming out of seclusion from the God Advent Tower.

The elder sister's name was Ah Yu, and the younger brother's name was Ah Niu.

Back then, they took an invaluable World Stone to the Li Fire Sect, hoping to sell it. They were nearly scammed by the Li Fire Sect, before Yi Yun bought the World Stone from them. Hence, a conflict broke out with the Li Fire Sect.

After Yi Yun leveled a Li Fire Sect store, the conflict escalated, but it allowed Yi Yun to join the Heavenly Dao Union.

The World Stone was used when Yi Yun broke through to the perfect Dao Seed realm.

As for the siblings, they went to the Lin family to cultivate with

Yi Yun's recommendation.

Now, they were headed for Cloud City to participate in the city entrance exams!

They also knew that the Jiang Yidao, who recommended them to the Lin family, was actually Yi Yun, the one who subdued the Black-armored Demon God and killed the Sovereign of the Eventide!

They had met a figure that far surpassed the confines of this world, and he had even given them an opportunity. In retrospect, it all seemed like a dream.

Although they knew Yi Yun, Ah Niu could not use their relationship with Yi Yun to enter the Divine City, so he could only attempt the entrance exams.

Cloud City had been recruiting cultivators for the past few days. As such, it was packed outside Cloud City. The people who dared to come were elites from all corners of the world, and the chances of passing amongst these elites was one in ten thousand. Against these people, Ah Niu felt the pressure, but it also made the fighting spirit in him burn.

He wanted to use his own strength to enter Cloud City!

The Cloud City entrance exams had five rounds. Most people would be eliminated in the first round. People, who reached the

second round, were already pretty impressive. Only those who passed the third round could enter Cloud City, becoming ordinary disciples. Those who passed the fourth round were made elite disciples. As for the fifth round, in the three years of Cloud City's establishment, not a single person had managed to pass it.

"Passing the fourth round allows you to study laws with Empyrean Kings and enjoy all sorts of resources. I wonder what is it like to pass the fifth round. Is there a possibility of becoming Young Master Yi and Fairy Lin's disciple?"

At the city gates, Ah Niu heard a youth beside him speaking. His expression looked like he was in reverie, as though he was fantasizing a beauty scene. If one could become Yi Yun's disciple, it wouldn't be trifling matter.

However, at that moment, someone dampened his enthusiasm by saying, "Stop dreaming. Let's not even mention the fifth round, you can already count your blessings if you were to pass the second round. Furthermore, Young Master Yi has been meditating over laws in recent years, apparently to make the final preparations to head to the 12 Empyrean Heavens. The 12 Empyrean Heavens is something that even Fairy Jiang is temporarily unable to go. You expect Young Master Yi to take us in as disciples? Do you think he will take us to the 12 Empyrean Heavens? How is it possible!?"

Many people scoffed. Becoming Yi Yun's disciple was impossible. However, it was rumored that passing the fifth round would give them the chance to learn top techniques left behind by Yi Yun, including a Dao map that Yi Yun wrote himself, as well as his insights. That was already extremely impressive.

Phew—

Hearing the conversations of these people, Ah Niu took a deep breath as he clenched his elder sister's hand tightly. "Sis, I must enter Cloud City!"

He was also considered a person that Yi Yun had given pointers to. If he could not enter Cloud City even with that, then he would be too useless.

Just as Ah Niu was having such thoughts—

In the distant horizon, they suddenly saw a golden divine beam of light shoot up into the sky!

This divine beam of light was extremely thick, like a pillar that reached into the heavens!

In the beam of light, there were phantom images of a faint golden bird and a purple nine-headed hydra. They were dancing around with blue lightning bolts flashing around them. Every lightning bolt was like a god's whip, producing an overpowering scene!

This is...

The young disciples, who were waiting to take the entrance exams around Cloud City, were all amazed. The divine beam came

from the valley where Yi Yun was in seclusion. It was only several hundred kilometers away from Cloud City.

"It's Young Master Yi! Young Master Yi is..."

Ah Yu and Ah Niu looked at each other in the eyes before they saw the sky being torn apart by this beam of light. A black, gigantic swirling vortex opened up in the sky, and it looked like it had devoured the sun.

The vortex swirled slowly as the beam shot deep into the vortex. It was as though it led to another world, extremely deep and terrifying!

Was this the opening of a passage to the 12 Empyrean Heavens?

Everyone stared intently as they saw a faint tiny pagoda slowly spinning, and along with the golden beam of light, it flew into the vortex.

In less than a moment, the tiny pagoda was devoured by the vortex.

Lightning flashed as spatial storms churned. The clouds in the sky had been swept away, and the terrifying energy turbulence shook the hearts of people. Despite them being so far, they still found it hard to breathe as their hearts stagnated.

This was the pressure that came from the power of Heaven and

Earth, as well as the immense energy consumed when Yi Yun opened the spatial node.

This situation lasted for nearly a minute before the divine beam gradually weakened, turning thinner and thinner.

Following that, the vortex also slowly disappeared. The blue bolts of lightning sank into the vortex and it soon subsided.

Finally, only a thin beam of light was left, blurred in between the Heavens and Earth. It lasted for fifteen minutes before it slowly disappeared. Following that, calm was restored, as if nothing had ever happened.

"Young Master Yi... Has Young Master Yi left...?" Someone asked in a daze.

They had all heard that Yi Yun was apparently heading to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, but as to when, none of them knew.

And today, the sudden tearing of space and Yi Yun's traveling to the 12 Empyrean Heavens happened all too suddenly. Yi Yun, having subdued the Black-armored Demon God and being equal to the ancient Great Empress, had left this world, headed for a even more vast world.

People thought about Yi Yun's legendary life. It was truly like a fantastic dream.

At that moment, hundreds of kilometers away, a girl in a long red dress stood on a tall mountain, holding a bone staff in her hand. She remained silent after seeing the spatial vortex disappear in the sky.

Beside the girl, the former Desolate Queen, dressed in white, sighed as she said softly, "It's time to go back Rou'er. Now is not the time. In time, you can also head there... "

"Alright... "

Jiang Xiaorou nodded her head gently, as she looked away...

Chapter 770: Trip Filled With Extreme Bliss

The distance between the Tian Yuan world and the 12 Empyrean Heavens was beyond imagination. If one flew there directly, even 2–3 million years would not have been enough.

Through spatial nodes, distant spaces could be connected through spatial channels. As such, the distance would be shortened by a factor of 100,000. However, it would still take a long period of time to fly.

In the spatial turbulence, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong could not constantly rely on the God Advent Tower, despite having it.

This was because the moment that the God Advent Tower was summoned, its large size made it experience greater impacts from the spatial storms in the spatial turbulence. This would result in the rapid energy depletion of the God Advent Tower's arrays.

Besides, in the spatial storms, trying to recharge the energy of the God Advent Tower's arrays was not easy.

For the past few years, in order to prepare for his journey to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, Yi Yun had amassed large quantities of pills and desolate bone relics. While flying in the spatial turbulence, they would spend most of their time outside the God Advent Tower, using their own understanding of spatial dimension laws to shuttle through space.

Yi Yun's insights into spatial dimension laws were naturally

better than Lin Xintong's. Holding her hand, he took up a spot in front of her, and together, they were like fishes that swam against the water flow. Lin Xintong followed Yi Yun. Although her nomological insights were slightly inferior, she just needed to handle the pockets of the spatial turbulence that Yi Yun missed out, so it was something that she could handle.

Whenever their Yuan Qi was greatly depleted, they would summon the God Advent Tower and rest in it for a while to restore their stamina.

Along the way, Yi Yun managed to see many worlds through the mazes in the spatial turbulence.

The worlds were of all sorts of sizes. Some were like the Tian Yuan world, a floating continent, while there were some that were round planets!

The smaller planets were about the size of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, while the larger ones were several times larger than the world that the Tian Yuan world and Divine Wilderness resided in. They were massive giant planets hidden in endless space. Just a look at them was shocking!

Yi Yun knew that in these worlds, there was life — martial civilizations, sects and family clans. There were top geniuses and mighty figures, who were bestowed with the titles of Sages and Emperors!

Their martial arts civilization might be inferior to the Tian Yuan

world, or they might even far exceed the Tian Yuan world!

Upon thinking of this, Yi Yun had mixed feelings. The universe was large, far beyond the imagination of anyone. Just the Tian Yuan world alone was inconspicuous if placed in the various Great Worlds.

And above these worlds, there was the more brilliant 12 Empyrean Heavens. That was where true martial art heritage was vibrant. Even a corner of the 12 Empyrean Heavens was more terrifying than the Tian Yuan world.

"Yi Yun, I feel like I'm a frog in a well. Just by looking at these worlds, all of them are so magnificent and brilliant, especially those giant planets. Touring them wouldn't be a waste of time, however, there are so many worlds... Even spending one's entire life to travel through these places would be like a drop in the ocean..." Lin Xintong sighed gently.

In the spatial turbulence, they could enter any of those worlds if they saw them. They just needed to open a spatial rift to do so. Back then, the Sovereign of the Eventide probably planned on using these worlds as springboards. He could recover his stamina in these worlds as he flew to the 12 Empyrean Heavens. Of course, that would take him an extremely long period of time.

Yi Yun said, "Xintong, we do not need to travel to every world. We just need to conquer the most magnificent world."

Yi Yun's voice was filled with an indescribable feeling of

confidence that slightly stunned Lin Xintong.

Conquer?

Yi Yun's idea of conquering was to conquer the most magnificent world, giving them the freedom to traverse the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Instantly, Lin Xintong felt infinite lofty enthusiasm. After all, a warrior's life was a fight against fate. She wanted to go to a bigger world, to gain control of her fate.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong shuttled through the spatial turbulence while cultivating along the way.

Traveling through the spatial turbulence was itself a form of training. By bearing the impact of the spatial turbulence, they could strengthen their cultivation levels. Searching for a path through the complex spatial turbulence allowed them to improve their nomological understanding.

And while resting in the God Advent Tower, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong would engage in dual cultivation of the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra'.

With the passage of time, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's accumulation in laws and cultivation level finally allowed them to master the second stage of the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra', formally reaching the third stage.

This was a qualitative leap forward.

At the third stage, they could begin a complete integration as man and woman, the harmony of Yin and Yang.

To perfectly combine the long accumulated Nine Yang Spiritual Energy and extremely pure Jade Marrow Spiritual Energy, it needed Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's body to become one, which was also true dual cultivation.

In the dark God Advent Tower, Yi Yun's muscular body and Lin Xintong's soft and white body were buried opposite each other, their limbs entwined like they were joined in an embrace.

Their feelings for each other had reached a point where everything was natural.

Lin Xintong's body was bathed in sweat, her wet hair clinging to her forehead. While duo cultivating the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra', the pure Yang energy would enter her body, causing her pure Yin body to feel an intense heat. This intense heat made her white porcelain body turn ruddy.

While engaging in dual cultivation, Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's cultivation levels soared like a mountainous torrent, rising at a rapid pace!

From the Tian Yuan world to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, the

journey was long and felt endless. While immersed in the double joy of sex and the improvement in strength, they found it irresistible.

Even the pure Lin Xintong could not remain indifferent under such pleasure. The excitement her body gave to her was indescribable.

Time slowly passed. What was an otherwise lifeless travel through the spatial turbulence was a trip filled with bliss and a strange debauchery for Yi Yun and Lin Xintong. They traveled through space, hand in hand, watching the wonders of worlds that numbered in their thousands, enjoying the life of an immortal couple.

With that, five years passed.

Yi Yun and Lin Xintong's cultivation level had risen to the late stages of the Yuan Opening realm. With their strength greatly boosted, it instilled greater confidence in themselves for their travel to the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

However, the two of them never expected that after their strengths were greatly enhanced, a danger would befall them!

It was a black hole that suddenly appeared!

Black holes, which were hidden in empty space, were extremely terrifying objects as Yi Yun was unable to detect them.

When he felt his body being pulled in by an invisible force, as they were being dragged deep into an abyss, and how the golden pure Yang Yuan Qi beam he shot out disappeared strangely, Yi Yun broke out into cold sweat.

Under extreme distortions of space, black holes were formed. They could swallow up and distort light, preventing one from seeing them with the naked eye. Approaching them, without realizing their presence, meant facing great danger.

Chapter 771: Spirit Cruiser

"Xintong!"

The black hole's gravitational strength was too strong, and it sucked them in silently. Yi Yun immediately grabbed Lin Xintong's hand!

Lin Xintong's understanding of spatial dimension laws was weaker than Yi Yun, so it was naturally impossible for her to resist the black hole's gravitational pull.

Now, they were truly at the end of the rope. Hiding inside the God Advent Tower led to a dead end as well, as they would be sucked into the black hole, along with the God Advent Tower.

"Yi Yun, let's try to move backward again!" Lin Xintong turned anxious. At that moment, she could only inject all her Yuan Qi into Yi Yun's body. By combining their strengths, they could use Yi Yun's understanding of spatial dimension laws to break free from the bondage of the black hole.

With their lives on the line, Yi Yun's mind churned quickly. They were like swimming in rapids, and behind them was a waterfall. The water flow was too fast, so regardless of how they swam, they were only sliding backward.

If this went on, it would be disastrous! Yi Yun clenched his fists. In about half a minute, they would be completely be locked onto by the black hole, and their deaths would be ensured!

But what if... he tore the void?

Yi Yun's mind lit up with a flash of brilliance. They were still in the midst of the spatial dimensional turbulence, but the space here could still be torn open. However, in the vicinity of the black hole, due to the severe distortion of space, Yi Yun had no way of predicting what would happen when he teared the space open.

But at that moment, he no longer had time to consider any of the his options. He could only try his luck.

"Xintong, give me your strength... all of it!" Yi Yun shouted. Without any hesitation, Lin Xintong immediately circulated the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra'. All her Yuan Qi surged into Yi Yun's body like a torrential flood!

Yi Yun felt his dantian swell instantly, as though it was going to explode.

"Xiao!"

The Golden Crow and Nine Neonate's phantom image appeared behind Yi Yun's body simultaneously. At the same time, the Black-armored Demon God and the Draco First True Gold avatar were summoned by Yi Yun as well.

In a combination of avatar, puppet, along with all of Lin Xintong and Yi Yun's strength, Yi Yun threw out the God Advent Tower!

Suppress!

The God Advent Tower struck the void. This was Yi Yun's strongest attack!

Ka Ka Ka!

The space in the vicinity of the black hole contained greater amounts of energy. If this was the Tian Yuan world, Yi Yun's strike would have caused the space to collapse. But now, it only resulted in tiny fractures and they were even quickly mending themselves.

"Demon God puppet!"

Yi Yun roared. The Demon God puppet, which had already spent a great deal of energy in the previous strike, struck the void with its lance in hand like a meteor bombardment!

Ka-cha!

The fractures expanded once again. However, they did not completely crack open. Yi Yun's pupils constricted. And at that split second, he bit the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood essence and burned it.

Suppress it again!

The God Advent Tower's second strike was augmented by the strength that Yi Yun obtained by burning his blood essence.

Time was too tight. In that short time window, be it Yi Yun, the Draco First True Gold avatar or the Demon God puppet, they had used a strength that their bodies could not withstand.

Boom!

Space finally completely shattered. Endless spatial storms swept up as Yi Yun held onto Lin Xintong's hand. Using all their strength, they charged into the spatial turbulence!

As to what there was behind the spatial turbulence, Yi Yun did not know. But it was definitely better than falling into a black hole.

Yi Yun clenched his teeth while enduring the storm's engulfment. He felt like his body was about to crack apart, while he put his Draco avatar and the Demon God puppet away.

The Draco avatar moved through Yi Yun's will. If Yi Yun's consciousness turned dull, he would not be able to move himself easily. So the Draco First True Gold avatar would naturally be useless as well.

As for the Demon God puppet, its body was extremely strong. Despite the impact from before, it could still move freely. But Yi Yun could not let the Demon God puppet stay by his side.

The thing controlling the Demon God puppet was actually the evil energy. In an extremely weakened state, he would not be able to control the evil energy. He needed to keep the Demon God puppet in his dantian, sealing the evil energy in the Purple Crystal. Only then would it be safe.

Yi Yun desperately held onto Lin Xintong's soft hand, as he felt like he was a leaf, drifting in the storm.

The storm grew in intensity, while Yi Yun's energy quickly depleted. He had just burned a large quantity of his blood essence. Being weak in both blood and Qi, it was very difficult for him to withstand the terrifying forces.

As his consciousness turned blurry, Yi Yun bit his tongue, using the pain to keep him awake. However... he still was unable to fight against the powers of the universe...

...

...

After an unknown period of time, as though he had a lengthy dream, Yi Yun opened his heavy eyelids with great difficulty. He felt like his eyelids were as heavy as lead, making it extremely difficult for him to open them fully.

His vision was still in a blur. He felt like he was still drifting through the void, and his body felt weightless.

In his stupor, he suddenly thought of something. His eyes opened up widely immediately as he broke out into cold sweat.

His hand was empty!

"Xintong! Xintong!"

Yi Yun subconsciously stretched his hand out to grab something, but all he caught was nothingness. Lin Xintong, who he was desperately holding onto before going unconscious, had disappeared!

Yi Yun turned his neck with great difficulty to survey the surroundings. However, he saw nothing as far as his vision could go. It was just black nothingness. There was nothing at all. He had been separated from Lin Xintong!

After being swept into the spatial turbulence, the both of them lost consciousness, and they must have been separated by the chaotic spatial dimensional forces.

How was he going to search for Lin Xintong in this vast emptiness?

And his body was now in a wretched state. Not only were his organs ruptured, many of his meridians had been severed. His body's energy was nearly completely depleted.

It was difficult for him to fly, let alone talk about Void Tearing.

This endless sea of stars made distances between every world extremely far. In Yi Yun's situation, trying to cross this sea of stars to another world was nearly impossible.

With this thought in mind, Yi Yun's heart turned cold. Now, trying to extricate himself from this spatial maze was a huge problem, let alone find Lin Xintong.

Yi Yun felt hatred. These hidden black holes in space were relatively few in the endless void, yet he had the bad luck to encounter one.

Being pulled into the black hole's gravitational pull was something that he could do nothing about. Even warriors from the 12 Empyrean Heavens would be lost in it if they were not careful, let alone him!

Having been separated from Lin Xintong, and his body severely injured due to the spatial turbulence, he floated in the void without any form of resistance. The only thing that still had its strength conserved was the Demon God puppet, but Yi Yun did not dare to summon it easily so as to prevent him losing control of the evil energy.

At that moment, the only thing Yi Yun could do was rely on the Purple Crystal to absorb the minute amounts of Yuan Qi in the void, supplementing his exhausted energy.

But tragically, Yi Yun's meridians and pores were like a sieve, making him lose 99% of the energy he absorbed into his body.

Trying to keep this energy required mending his meridians. But to mend his meridians, he needed even more energy. This made him fall into a vicious cycle. If this went on, Yi Yun did not know when he would be able to mend his body.

He had to find an area with rich Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, and slowly nurse himself back to health. However, where was he to find such a place?

Just as Yi Yun felt like he was at the end of the rope... he suddenly saw a red beam of light shoot at him. He could tell that it was a spirit cruiser.

Chapter 772: Emblem Of Fire

Spirit cruisers were commonly seen in the 12 Empyrean Heavens. After all, not every warrior was proficient in spatial dimension laws or had the ability to do Void Transference.

If they needed to make long-distance space travel, they could only rely on spirit cruisers, using the arrays in the spirit cruiser to tear the void.

Yi Yun found it incredulous that he would encounter a spirit cruiser. He vaguely felt that he had stepped into the 12 Empyrean Heavens. The number of warriors in the 12 Empyrean Heavens numbered like the number of grains of sand in the Ganges river. But when it came to the space around the 12 Empyrean Heavens, the number of spirit cruisers were extremely few in number. He found it hard to believe that he had encountered a spirit cruiser as he reached the end of the rope.

And at that moment, the spirit cruiser had taken the initiative to fly towards Yi Yun. The spirit cruiser released an intangible energy that enveloped Yi Yun, slowly pulling Yi Yun towards itself...

At such a close distance, Yi Yun was able to see the spirit cruiser in its entirety. It was the shape of a shuttle, and it was light gray in color. In the middle of the spirit cruiser, there was a striking fiery red emblem. It was a burning flame.

That was probably the emblem of the faction that owns the spirit cruiser...

Yi Yun did not resist, allowing the energy to pull him towards the spirit cruiser.

In his present situation, resistance was futile. He did not know what sort of people were on the spirit cruiser, but he would take things one step at a time.

In the spirit cruiser, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was a lot more richer and Yi Yun was isolated behind a light curtain. His mind was in a trance-like state, and he looked like he was in a coma.

But in fact, Yi Yun's perception was using the Purple Crystal's vision to pass through the light curtain, as he radiated it everywhere.

Vaguely, Yi Yun began to hear someone discussing something.

Their language was different to the Tian Yuan world's, but it was quite similar to the language used by the Azure Yang Lord tens of millions of years ago.

Yi Yun had to use the fluctuations in their mental processes to barely understand the context of their conversation.

"Where did this young man come from?" A middle-aged man asked with a deep voice as he looked at Yi Yun who was bound by a light curtain.

"Just now, space around the Hundred Wraiths black hole tore apart, causing a small spatial storm. We came to investigate the situation and found this person. He was severely injured, so we saved him. It's unknown if he was injured by the spatial storm..."

Replying to the middle-aged man was a girl dressed in purple clothes. Her voice was clear and pleasant to the ears.

The middle-aged man shook his head and said, "This young man's cultivation level is only at the Yuan Opening realm. If he were to be swept up into that sort of storm, he would have long been dead. You wouldn't even see his corpse, let alone save him. He is probably a drifter in space. Maybe his spirit cruiser malfunctioned and he was lucky enough to be saved by you. Also... Fengling, you are just too kind. It's best not to save strangers like him by bringing them onto the spirit cruiser. You have no idea what sort of person he is. Our mission is to patrol the Hundred Wraiths black hole. The spatial node it seals is connected to a sealed world, a world that is one of routes of retreat for our Luo clan. It's especially important now, so remember our mission."

The middle-aged man glanced at the purple-dressed girl with a deep, meaningful look before he turned around and left.

"Sorry, I will be careful next time." The girl nodded. She took a glance at Yi Yun, and after confirming that he was still unconscious, she left.

Yi Yun was still immersed in white light. He felt empty-headed, and was slowly recovering his strength in his half-awakened state. He opened his eyes a few times and he saw the warriors on the

spirit cruiser. Many of them wore a flame mark on their right breasts.

The Luo clan and that purple-dressed girl...

Recalling the middle-aged man's words, he figured that the black hole he had encountered was probably called the Hundred Wraiths black hole, and it sealed a spatial node.

The middle-aged man had even said that the spatial node connected to a sealed world.

Without a doubt, the 'sealed world' was the world where the Tian Yuan world resided. Due to the existence of the eternal whirlpool, it was indeed a sealed world.

Yi Yun had used a spatial node from the Tian Yuan world to travel to where he was. According to the Azure Yang Lord's memories, the world where the Tian Yuan world resided, was a vessel used to seal a Demon God. The number of spatial nodes connected to the 12 Empyrean Heavens were extremely few in number. There might only be one or two.

That was to say that by using this fixed spatial node to travel to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, it would always take him to a particular region in the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

And the Luo clan they were mentioning...

Yi Yun recalled this name, as he could not help but make some connections.

Tens of millions of years ago, the Tian Yuan world's seal was released because of the Azure Yang Lord. With that, one or two spatial nodes appeared. Then naturally, people from the 12 Empyrean Heavens could use those spatial nodes to travel to the Tian Yuan world.

However, as there were very few spatial node, the number of 12 Empyrean Heavens warriors, who went to the Tian Yuan world, were extremely few in number.

And thinking back to the strange girl he met in the Tai Ah Divine City...

That Luo Huo'er, she couldn't be from the Luo clan, right?

However, upon careful thought, it did not seem like a coincidence. As there were only one or two spatial nodes, the spatial node linked two fixed spots, this region in the 12 Empyrean Heavens and the Tian Yuan World.

If this fixed exit was in the Luo clan, then it was not surprising that the Luo clan would use the hidden Tian Yuan world as a route of retreat.

Back then, when Yi Yun separated from the elvish girl, she had indeed said that she had come to the Tian Yuan world to seek

refuge.

In the Tai Ah Divine City, she was a mystery for she never displayed her true strength.

The Tai Ah Divine City had three rolls of honor, the Heaven, Earth and Man. She was only ranked first in personal wealth, on the Man roll of honor.

As for the Earth roll of honor which ranked people's battle rankings, as well as the Heaven ranking, which ranked the killing of desolate beasts, she had never appeared on them.

People guessed that Luo Huo'er had extraordinary strength, but she never showed it. She only brought a little maidservant named Dong'er with her, fooling around all day in the Tai Ah Divine City.

Although she looked as though she did nothing decent, the Tai Ah Divine City Elders treated her well, because of her mysterious and powerful background.

Her identity was a mystery, and even the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord did not know who she was. The person, who had introduced her into the Tai Ah Divine City, was extremely powerful and he seemed like a big shot.

But now to think of it, this so-called 'big shot' was probably a steward sent from the Luo clan to the Tian Yuan world.

It was very normal for a super clan, who used a hidden world as a form of retreat, to arrange for a steward to pave the way.

When the family clan was in trouble, and with their survival at stake, the family's children could hide in this small lower realm and remain incognito. As such, they would be naturally safe.

If their family clan was destroyed, then their family's descendants could still pass on their heritage. This was the role of the Tian Yuan world in the grand scheme of things.

When the Desolate race invaded the Tai Ah Divine City, the Luo clan did not do a thing. They chose to leave.

It was then when Yi Yun separated from Luo Huo'er.

The beast horde that Shepherd Boy led to invade the city would have been trivial for the Luo clan. If they acted, they could have destroyed all the desolate beasts, but they did not choose to do so. This was probably because they were facing enemies that were pursuing them.

By recklessly showing power from the 12 Empyrean Heavens, they would greatly increase the risk of being discovered by their enemies. Hence, the family clan had ordered for them to leave the Tai Ah Divine City while keeping a low profile.

Chapter 773: Thousand Fey

The spirit cruiser shuttled through the cosmos, but although it traveled at a high speed, in the vast cosmos, it felt as though it was not moving. It was like a dead branch floating in water in an extremely quiet fashion.

Yi Yun had already arrived in this spirit cruiser for several hours. When he woke up again, he realized he was sleeping on a soft depression. Below him was a thick mat. It was unknown which spirit beast's feathers the mat was made of. It was extremely soft, and he was covered in a cotton quilt which was very warm.

At that moment, Yi Yun was already fully awake, but was only extremely weak. Having consumed his blood essence and then using power his body could not withstand, he had received a energy backlash. Following that, after entering the spatial storms, most of his meridians were severed, so his present situation was truly wretched.

If an ordinary warrior were in Yi Yun's situation, it would be a question if they could even recover from those injuries. It was very likely to cause lingering problems in the future, affecting their martial paths.

However, Yi Yun had the Purple Crystal Origins, allowing him to constantly absorb Heaven Earth Yuan Qi to repair his body. Furthermore, his body was a perfect Yang body, so he was not afraid that he could not join his meridians back up. He did not need to worry about this at all.

The only problem was Yi Yun having to spend a period of time being weak.

Inside Yi Yun's dantian, the injuries the Draco First True Gold avatar and Demon God puppet received were much lighter, especially the Demon God puppet with a strong vitality. It nearly did not lose any of its combat strength. Yi Yun estimated that once he recovered 30–40% of his strength, he would be able to control the evil energy. Then, he would be able to summon the Demon God puppet, and not be afraid of losing control of it. This way, he would have the means to protect himself.

Now, Yi Yun was only worried about Lin Xintong. Having been caught up in the spatial vortex, it was unknown where Lin Xintong had gone.

"Eh, you have awakened?"

At that moment, a girl about 13–14 years of age with a round face walked into Yi Yun's resting room. Her skin was white and she had rosy cheeks. She looked very cute.

The girl made a pot of tea after entering the room. Her dressing looked like she was a maidservant, but of course, that pot of tea was not prepared for Yi Yun.

"Yes, I have woken up...Thank you for saving me."

Yi Yun said sincerely. If not for this spirit cruiser, he would

probably be floating in space for 7–8 years, slowly recovering his injuries by absorbing minute amounts of Heaven Earth Yuan Qi.

Although 7–8 years was considered a very short period of time for Yi Yun's lifespan, but time was very precious in the first half of Yi Yun's martial path.

Warriors had long lifespans, easily a hundred thousand years or a million years. However, they could only improve their cultivation realms fastest in their youth, when their life's potential was at its fullest.

Many warriors would do it in one go and rush to the highest cultivation realm they could. Once their potential was exhausted at a particular realm, or if they encountered a bottleneck, then they would be stuck in that realm. In the hundreds of thousands of years in the future, their cultivation level realm would, at best, improve by one full realm. Unless they encountered a stunning opportunity, nothing surprising would happen.

The 7–8 years was not something Yi Yun could afford wasting.

Upon hearing Yi Yun's words, the maidservant began to giggle. "The way you speak sounds so funny."

The maidservant felt as though she had discovered a new continent. Having arrived in the 12 Empyrean Heavens for the first time, Yi Yun did not know the 12 Empyrean Heavens's language well. He could only use the memories of what the Azure Yang Lord used back in the Great Empress mystic realm; hence, the sentences

he said were broken and sounded weird. But because of that, he was made fun of by this maidservant who still had a young child-like heart.

"If you want to thank, thank my Missus. She was the one who saved you," The maidservant said, but suddenly thought of something, before carrying on. "My name is Tao'er. Stay here and rest. Our spirit cruiser will probably take another 4-5 days before returning."

Seeing the maidservant carry the teapot away, Yi Yun hurriedly called out to her to stop her. "That...Miss Tao'er, I wonder where your Missus is. I want to meet her and thank her in person."

Having been saved by others, meeting them personally to thank them was courtesy, besides the crux of the issue was...Yi Yun wanted to gather news about Lin Xintong.

After Yi Yun and Lin Xintong attained the third stage of the 'Great Empress Heart Sutra', Yi Yun and Lin Xintong had already begun developing a vague sense of telepathy between themselves. At distances very close to each other, they could vaguely sense each other's presence.

But now, Yi Yun could not sense her at all. Without a doubt, Lin Xintong was not on the spirit cruiser.

But even so, Yi Yun wanted to ask the Missus the maidservant talked about. He wanted to hold on to the unlikely hope of being able to find Lin Xintong's whereabouts.

"That isn't necessary." The maidservant nonchalantly waved her hand. "To speak the truth, our Missus might have saved you, but it's just a trivial matter for her. She wouldn't put her mind on it. My Missus is busily cultivating, and has many important things to do. I believe our Missus will not have the time to meet you."

After the maidservant said with a giggle, she turned around and left.

Seeing the door close, Yi Yun sighed. Indeed, in his present state, he was like a refugee. He was injured from top to bottom. Tao'er's Missus saved him only out of the kindness in her heart. As for thinking highly of him, that was impossible.

It was a question whether he would be able to meet the Missus while the spirit cruiser was out on a mission for 4-5 days. And even if he met her, she would most likely not help him find Lin Xintong.

"Xintong...nothing must happen to you."

Lin Xintong's nomological insight might be inferior to his, but her cultivation level was similar to his. Since he was fine passing through the spatial turbulence, Lin Xintong should be fine...

Yi Yun tried to console himself, and began to meditate. He was severely wounded, so he needed to take the opportunity to recuperate.

The spirit cruiser sailed through the cosmos, and the Luo clan seemed to be carrying out a mission. There were people entering and exiting the spirit cruiser on a daily basis.

After all, in the territory of others, Yi Yun did not probe what they were doing. He only stayed in the room, as if he had been forgotten. In the next few days, only Tao'er would occasionally appear in his room, to retrieve something or bring Yi Yun some spirit food.

As time went by, Yi Yun became rather familiar with the maidservant.

Although Tao'er was a 14-15 year old maidservant, she was already at the peak of the Purple Blood realm and was about to break through into the Yuan Foundation realm. Compared to the young elites in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, she was already nearly a grade above them.

The maidservant wasn't a scheming person. She told Yi Yun many things, and from their conversations, Yi Yun slowly had a general idea of the 12 Empyrean Heavens, or at least, he knew which of the 12 Empyrean Heavens he was in.

Back when Yi Yun planned on heading to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, he wanted to go to the Yang God Empyrean Heaven the most.

The Yang God Empyrean Heaven was the hometown of the Azure Yang Lord, where he rose up, becoming one of the 72 Divine Lords

of the Yang God Empyrean Heaven. Finally after being betrayed by his beloved woman, he lost his position as Divine Lord. He was then severely injured, affecting his cultivation level greatly. It could be said that he was left with nothing.

The Yang God Empyrean Heaven buried the Azure Yang Lord's ambitions, and made him obsess over it. Even though the Azure Yang Lord met the ancient Great Empress, and fell in love with her, he never got rid of the obsession regarding the Yang God Empyrean Heaven. Only at his death, did he see through it all.

However, when the Azure Yang Lord slightly opened up the Tian Yuan world's seal, revealing one or two spatial nodes. This spatial node linked not to the Yang God Empyrean Heaven, but the—

Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven!

Chapter 774: Luo Clan, Fire Cloud State!

Ten Thousand Fey!

Yi Yun took a deep breath. Yi Yun had roughly read through information regarding the 12 Empyrean Heavens from the records left behind by the Azure Yang Lord.

The Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven was given this name because the rulers were from members of the Fey race.

There was a lot of Fey race of different forms. Their species numbered in the thousands, with all sorts of bloodlines!

And the Fey race was a race that valued bloodlines the most. The ones with strong bloodlines were born to be kings! The ones with weaker bloodlines were born to be mediocre, or even be tagged as slaves.

Yi Yun recalled that Jiang Xiaorou's father was likely from the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. After all, the Tian Yuan world's spatial node led to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven.

Or it should be said that Jiang Xiaorou's father was a member of the Fey race in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven!

And it was because of this that he left such a powerful bloodline for Jiang Xiaorou.

"I wonder which exact race Jiang Xiaorou's father is..." Yi Yun muttered to himself. Jiang Xiaorou was born in a lower realm, and without the Fey race's inheritance, she could not develop the power of her bloodline. Instead, it should be said that Jiang Xiaorou's blood line was in a sleeping state, and it was yet to be awoken. Compared to the long lifespans of the Fey race, the present Jiang Xiaorou was probably an infant.

Even though Jiang Xiaorou was so weak, her worshiping at the divine bone altar caused the Sacred Spirit that defended the Desolate race to descend, personally approving of Jiang Xiaorou.

In fact, the Sacred Spirit which protected the Desolate race was a Fey beast from the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

In the battle with the Black-armored Demon God, only Jiang Xiaorou could withstand the possession of the Sacred Spirit.

Finally, Jiang Xiaorou's bloodline was coveted by the Black-armored Demon God. He lay a mark on Jiang Xiaorou's body so as to obtain her bloodline.

If Jiang Xiaorou's father was said to be a member of the Fey race, then everything could be explained.

After Yi Yun thought of this, he subconsciously looked at Tao'er and he could not help but size her up.

A fourteen-year-old girl could be said to be like a lotus bud, looking exquisite and cute.

Being suddenly sized up by Yi Yun, Tao'er's face blushed as she fell into panic. "You... why are you looking at me this way?"

Yi Yun smiled. "Sorry, it was a rash action on my part. I was actually suddenly thinking about Miss Tao'er's name. Are you related to the peach (tao) tree?"

In the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, plants could become Fey. For example, peach trees were plants that could very easily cultivate into a Fey.

Peach trees were spiritual. In the mortal world, there were thousand-year-old peach trees that were used to ward off evil spirits.

Besides, in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, many peach trees could absorb the spiritual energies of the Heaven and Earth, transforming into young girls.

In response to Yi Yun's question, Tao'er spat out her tongue and said softly, "No. I'm human and my natural talent is very ordinary."

"I see..." Yun'er nodded. He noticed that Tao'er's face looked slightly lost. The position that humans had in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven was quite awkward.

The Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven was ruled by the Fey race, and the Fey race were born with powerful bloodlines, so they had an advantage over the Human race. Furthermore, with the number of humans in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven being fewer in number, they were naturally disadvantaged.

Hence, humans did not enjoy a good status in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, for example Tao'er. She was not only human, her talent was also not outstanding. Under normal circumstances, she would not be able to lead a good life. For Tao'er to become a maidservant of a large clan was already a pretty good outcome.

...

Yi Yun traveled in the spirit cruiser until it began to make its return voyage. Suddenly, the Missus who saved Yi Yun appeared in Yi Yun's room.

This Missus looked like she was 16–17 years old. But of course for warriors, when they broke through to a very high cultivation realm at a young age, they could maintain their 16–17-year-old appearances for several years, so appearance could not be used as a reference for age. Even Yi Yun himself looked like a 16–17-year-old youth.

The girl was dressed in a purple dress. Her eyebrows were smoky, and her eyes were like water. She looked like she had a special kind of temperament.

Was she a member of the Fey race?

From the purple-dressed girl's body, Yi Yun could sense an aura different to humans.

In the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, the Human and Fey race could coexist peacefully, however, most of the powerful figures in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven were from the Fey race.

"Thank you to this lady for saving this lowly one. I wonder what this lady's name is?"

Yi Yun cupped his fists and he thanked the purple-dressed girl from the bottom of his heart.

"Luo Fengling." The purple-dressed girl answered tersely and simply. "You come from a lower realm?"

Yi Yun's proficiency in the language of the 12 Empyrean Heavens was not well-practiced, so it was easy to tell.

Yi Yun nodded in admission.

"From which lower realm? Roughly where is the spatial node?" The purple-dressed girl asked again.

Hearing the purple-dressed girl inquire, Yi Yun hesitated slightly. He decided to hide the matter that he came from the Tian Yuan world.

Previously, he had heard the purple-dressed girl say that the world that the Tian Yuan world resided in was an important route of retreat for the Luo clan, mainly because the Tian Yuan world was hidden and difficult to be discovered.

Even if the route of retreat was not considered highly confidential, the Luo clan naturally did not want too many people to know. After all, they seemed to be at war with an unknown faction. In the intense battle in the past, even Luo Huo'er, a direct descendant had been evacuated to the lower realm, indicating how powerful their opponent was.

Under such circumstances, if Luo Fengling knew that he came from the Tian Yuan world, then to prevent information from leaking, what if she put him under house arrest?

Now, Yi Yun was seriously injured, and had no way to protect himself.

"Miss Luo, this lowly one comes from an obscure small planet. The planet's martial civilization is limited, and as there's lacking heritage in spatial dimension laws, this lowly one isn't proficient in it. While traveling to the 12 Empyrean Heavens, this lowly one encountered a spatial storm, losing my way. If you want to ask me where the spatial node is, this lowly one does not know really know." Yi Yun lied.

Luo Fengling nodded. Yi Yun was clearly a inconsequential warrior from the lower realm. Luo Fengling did not care much about he said, so she naturally did not have the mind to doubt him.

As for Yi Yun coming from the Tian Yuan world, Luo Fengling did not think of it. She did not believe that Yi Yun could pass through the Hundred Wraiths black hole's Tian Yuan world spatial node.

"What's your name?" Luo Fengling asked again.

"Yi Yun."

"Alright, Yi Yun. My Luo clan is currently enrolling foreign races as disciples. Previously, my Luo clan experienced a massive war and suffered heavy casualties, so it is in need of revitalizing its strength."

"I am attached to the Luo clan's Fire Cloud State! The Fire Cloud State disciples came out venturing actually to search for non-Luo surname bearing disciples with superior qualifications to get them to join the Fire Cloud State!"

"You just came from a lower realm to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, and since you do not know your way or anyone, be it heritage or resources, it would be difficult for you to obtain them. Joining a large faction is a good choice."

"In my opinion, for you to single-handedly have the ability to come from a lower realm to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven means that your cultivation foundation is considered acceptable. Your body was nearly in shambles, yet your life force hung on. Furthermore, in the past few days, you have actually recovered greatly, surprising me. If you wish, you can join my Fire Cloud State and become an external disciple!"

"However, I need to warn you that although my Luo clan beat our opponents in the previous war, we only forced them into retreat. It is unknown when they would make a comeback. When that happens, you might be involved in the war, and your life might be left up to fate. You have to consider carefully if you want to join my Luo clan's Fire Cloud State."

Chapter 775: Mt. Fengling

After all the missions were completed, the Fire Cloud State's spirit cruiser shot out a beam of light, tearing the void open. Following that, the spirit cruiser entered the spatial vortex and completely disappeared.

The spirit cruiser was a massive object. Back when Yi Yun was sucked into the spirit cruiser, he estimated that it was dozens of kilometers long.

It was unknown how many refining masters were needed to produce such a massive spirit cruiser. Furthermore, the cost was definitely extremely exaggerated. And for such a massive spirit cruiser to tear space in one strike to do spatial transference, that required vast amounts of energy. The relics that provided this energy was also a huge expense.

These thoughts flashed past Yi Yun's mind. Having first arrived in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, he could only use certain external objects to roughly estimate the gap between the factions in the 12 Empyrean Heavens and the Tian Yuan world.

Yi Yun eventually opted to join the Luo clan as it was very beneficial for him. His body was in a terrible condition, so he needed a large faction's protection to slowly recover his Yuan Qi.

Boom!

Space was torn open as the spirit cruiser successfully completing

its Void Transference.

Through the cruiser's window, all he saw was an endless red sea of clouds. He had previously heard Tao'er introduce this sea of clouds to him. It was said that this mass of clouds had existed for hundreds of millions of years and it had never dissipated before. The name of the Fire Cloud State was because of the rolling red clouds.

There was a giant planet floating in the midst of the endless red sea of clouds

The planet was blue in color, and about 80% of the planet's surface was ocean. There was a dark red continent in the middle and it was the so-called Fire Cloud State.

The Fire Cloud State actually occupied a planet. All the seas on this planet, including the red clouds surrounding it was the territory of the Fire Cloud State.

As Yi Yun looked at this planet, it looked about a few thousand kilometers in diameter, roughly the same size as his home planet, Earth. In the vicinity of the planet, there were a large number of Fey beasts shuttling through the sea of clouds.

Perhaps due to the vast size of the world, these Fey beasts were much larger than the desolate beasts that Yi Yun encountered in the Divine Wilderness.

Yi Yun saw a golden fish about 500 kilometers long. Its shape was that of a fish, but it had dragon whiskers near its mouth. Every time it opened its mouth, it would suck and expel red clouds, like a volcano eruption. However, this was just its breathing.

Other than that, there were feathered creatures with colorful feathers. They were gigantic pythons with single horns that resembled either dragons or snakes. The dragon horses that pulled spirit boats were endless in number.

In comparison, although the spirit cruiser Yi Yun was massive in size, it appeared inconspicuous when placed in such a backdrop.

The spirit cruiser began to slow down. The closer they were to the Fire Cloud State, the more amazed Yi Yun became. Although he had heard Tao'er describe this to him, it was more shocking to see it for himself.

Compared to the Tian Yuan world and the Divine Wilderness, the Fire Cloud State was so much more flourishing.

The Fire Cloud State could not be considered big, as it was much smaller than the Tian Yuan world. However, in the Fire Cloud State, there were all sorts of floating immortal mountains, immortal palaces, spirit statues, spirit cruisers, etc. They seemed endless and it was a dazzling sight.

And the experts here were barely countable.

In the Tian Yuan world, Heaven Ascension realm warriors were already a dominating force. But in the Fire Cloud State, they were considered nothing much.

As Yi Yun rode on the spirit cruiser, it went straight to the middle of the Fire Cloud State.

There were endless immortal mountains here, and each immortal mountain was nearly ten kilometers high. Such tall immortal mountains had immense weight, but through the support of arrays, they were floating mid air. Such acts were impossible in the lower realms.

After the spirit cruiser flew past an immortal mountain, Yi Yun, together with Tao'er and Luo Fengling, took a small spirit boat that was deployed from the mothership, finally landing on the top of that mountain.

This immortal mountain was one that belonged to Luo Fengling.

Over the days, Yi Yun had learned from Tao'er that Luo Fengling was an influential figure amongst the younger generation in the Fire Cloud State.

Luo Fengling was from the Fire Cloud State's Heaven Fire Hall, which gathered all the top talent amongst the younger disciples in the Fire Cloud State.

Of course, there were quite a number of such geniuses,

numbering more than a hundred. Luo Fengling was one of them, and her position amongst the hundred or so elites was above average.

Luo Fengling's advantage would be her young age. She was about Yi Yun's age.

Now, Luo Fengling was at the perfect-Yuan Opening realm, higher than Yi Yun by a minor realm. She still had a long way to go and she had a promising future.

And for the older core disciples in the Heaven Fire Hall, their ages ranged in the hundreds. For warriors in the 12 Empyrean Heavens with long lifespans, they were still considered juniors despite being a few hundred years old.

When Yi Yun disembarked the spirit cruiser, accompanying him were three other young disciples, two man and a woman. They wore different clothes and they had different cultivation levels. These three people were the new disciples the spirit cruiser had recruited from the various smaller worlds.

Back then, the spirit cruiser had gathered about a hundred people, but only three of them were chosen by Luo Fengling. Including Yi Yun, there were four prospective disciples.

"The mountain beneath your feet is called Mt. Fengling and it was named after me. From today onwards, the four of you will be my followers!" Luo Fengling spoke simply. "I'll first introduce myself. I'm Luo Fengling, a disciple of the Fire Cloud State's

Heaven Fire Hall!"

"Amongst the younger generation in the Fire Cloud State, there are two halls, namely the Heaven Fire Hall and the Earth Fire Hall. To put it plainly, the Heaven Fire Hall are personal disciples!"

"Every Heaven Fire Hall disciple has a mountain for themselves. The entire Fire Cloud State has a total of 108 Heaven Fire mountains, which also mean 108 Heaven Fire Hall disciples. The number is fixed so only after the loss of one would they be replaced!"

"Every Heaven Fire Hall disciple can recruit external disciples as stewards. When comparing steward disciples to other external disciples, it is easier for them to obtain resources from the Fire Cloud State's Luo clan. At the same time, they have to do some miscellaneous chores."

As Luo Fengling spoke, the steward disciples exchanged glances and nodded.

The Heaven Fire Hall disciples were elites of the Fire Cloud State's younger generation. The elite's main task was to cultivate, and with them in charge of a mountain, there were definitely many chores to handle.

On a mountain, there was all sorts of chores like resource allocation, the feeding of Fey beasts and the planting of herbs that needed people manning them. These matters naturally could not be done by the Heaven Fire Hall disciple themselves, so there was a

need for people to serve these Heaven Fire Hall disciples.

That was the job of steward disciples.

In fact, steward disciples was a great job. They could follow a Heaven Fire Hall disciple, and at times, obtain resources that the Heaven Fire Hall disciple did not use. That itself was a great benefit for them, so many ordinary disciples yearned to become steward disciples.

"On Mt. Fengling, there will be many chores. But similarly, there will be greater opportunities. As long as you dedicate yourselves to cultivation, I will not treat you badly. In the future, if you display good cultivation talent, I would nominate you into the Earth Fire Hall. When you enter the Earth Fire Hall, you will be considered a true disciple of the Luo clan! Are all of you agreeable to that?"

As Luo Fengling said, she scanned the four.

There was nothing disagreeable about this matter. The other three yearned it greatly and even Yi Yun nodded his head slightly. His priority was to heal his injuries, and he did not mind where he was as long as it was safe. As a steward disciple, he would be inconspicuous so his safety would not be a problem. Mt Fengling was considered expedient.

Chapter 776: Green-Eyed

Yi Yun and the other three people agreed and chose to stay on Mt. Fengling. Luo Fengling was not surprised with their choice, as without any exaggeration, it was a good deal that numerous people dreamed of, so how could they refuse her offer?

At that moment, Luo Fengling suddenly glanced at Yi Yun. "You cultivate in pure Yang laws, right?"

Yi Yun had a perfect Yang body, but as he had suffered severe injuries, leaving most of his meridians severed, his pure Yang body was not obvious. But even so, Luo Fengling could sense Yi Yun's attainment in pure Yang laws, hence, motivating her question.

After all, the Luo clan focused on fire elemental laws, which had its similarities with pure Yang laws.

"Yes," Yi Yun nodded.

"Alright! Although I'm in charge of Mt. Fengling, I do not really deal with the chores at all. I need to enter reclusive cultivation to prepare for the Luo Divine Hall's test. A typical reclusive cultivation of mine would be a year or two, so there will be many matters on Mt. Fengling that will be your responsibility. Yi Yun, since you are proficient in pure Yang laws, you should have some sense of fire-elemental materials. I'll put you in charge of the procurement of materials and the management of Mt. Fengling's material storehouse.

"As for Sun Lie, Dong Hu and Bai Wei, you will be in charge of rearing the Fey beasts. On Mt. Fengling, there are many Fey beasts, and they need to be let out to pasture and fed on a daily basis. This shall be your responsibility!"

Luo Fengling nonchalantly gave them instructions and she was about to enter seclusion!

Yi Yun did not mind Luo Fengling's order, but he was slightly surprised by the 'Luo Divine Hall' that Luo Fengling mentioned.

Make preparations for the Luo Divine Hall's test?

Fire Cloud State had two halls that took in young disciples—Heaven Fire Hall and Earth Fire Hall.

The Heaven Fire Hall was already considered the highest, as for the Earth Fire Hall, even though it was a secondary, those in it were still official disciples. In comparison, Yi Yun would just be an exterior disciple, and considered titular. Only by being outstanding would he be promoted to the Earth Fire Hall.

Clearly, the Luo Divine Hall was on a much higher level than the Heaven Fire Hall or Earth Fire Hall.

Yi Yun could not help but ask, "May I know what is the Luo Divine Hall test that Senior Luo mentioned?"

"Oh?" Luo Fengling's eyebrows knitted slightly. Typical exterior

disciples would hold their breaths when they saw her, and during any interaction, they would only receive instructions and not dare probe further. She did not expect Yi Yun to ask a question that had nothing to do with what she had instructed. Furthermore, from his appearance, he did not seem to fear her.

Luo Fengling answered Yi Yun, "The Heaven Fire Hall is where the most elite disciples from the Fire Cloud State gather. As for the Luo Divine Hall, it is the place where the top geniuses of the entire Luo clan gather. The Luo clan is extremely massive, and my Fire Cloud State is just one of the 196 states of the Luo clan. And above the 196 states, there is the Luo Divine Empyrean Capital occupied by the Luo clan's royalty! This Luo Divine Hall is in the Empyrean Capital, a sacred land all disciples from the various states look forward to!"

When Luo Fengling said those words, she revealed a trace of longing. Entering the Luo Divine Hall was always Luo Fengling's dream.

Yi Yun was secretly horrified hearing this. 196 states? Along with the Luo clan's royalty... how massive was it!?

With so many states, and with each state having at least a hundred personal disciples, the competition was clearly immense.

Then Luo Huo'er... Could she be in the Empyrean Capital?

Yi Yun did not know Luo Huo'er's actual identity in the Luo clan. According to what she said, the faction she was in was facing a

disaster. As a direct descendant, she had been specially given protection and had been evacuated to the Tian Yuan world. Then, Luo Huo'er's identity had to be something special.

Just the number of disciples in the peripheral 196 states was a massive number, so it was unlikely for the Luo clan to give all of them special protection.

However, Yi Yun could not ask Luo Fengling about Luo Huo'er. He could not explain how he knew of Luo Huo'er, and if it involved anything confidential, he might encounter trouble.

After Luo Fengling finished speaking, she ignored Yi Yun. She was in a rush for time, eager to begin her reclusive cultivation in a chamber.

"This seclusion of mine would take at least a few months. If you encounter any problems in your cultivation, you can ask me after I'm done with my seclusion to which I'll answer you. Right, this relic is for you. It is good for healing your wounds!"

As Luo Fengling spoke, she flicked her finger, sending a crystalline relic towards Yi Yun which he caught.

The relic was warm and moist to the touch. Before Yi Yun had the chance to look at it, Luo Fengling had already disappeared.

And after Luo Fengling left, Sun Lie, Dong Hu and Bai Wei cast their gazes at Yi Yun simultaneously.

Their gazes had a malevolent hint in them.

Yi Yun's job was to manage the material storehouse. The materials collected by Mt. Fengling were naturally very valuable, so while managing all of this, some less important materials would be of immense value for them.

The advantages of being in charge of the material storehouse as well as procurement was obvious.

It was definitely a gravy train.

As for them, their main task was to feed the Fey beasts!

Feeding the Fey beasts, letting them out on the pasture and cleaning the beast pens was hard work. Other than hard work, there was no benefit to it.

The differences between the jobs were huge!

Furthermore, Luo Fengling had even thrown a relic at Yi Yun for him to treat his wounds.

Looking at the relic in Yi Yun's hand, the crystalline relic exuded a warm glow like jade. It was definitely a relic of superior grade.

This was a relic refined by the Luo clan, so even if Luo Fengling

did not mind it, its value was immense for them.

After all, in the 12 Empyrean Heavens, there were a lot of mortals as well as warriors who lived in the lower echelons. They were born in the 12 Empyrean Heavens and with their ordinary backgrounds, they could not receive much resources. The competition they faced was greater than those faced in the lower realm, and at times, they were even worse off than the lower realm warriors!

They were naturally envious when they saw Yi Yun getting such a good job and having a relic in hand!

"I say, Kid! You come from the lower realms, right?" Just from listening to Yi Yun speak, they could roughly guess that Yi Yun was not an original resident of the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Yi Yun glanced at the person speaking. His eyes were slender and he had dark skin, he looked like the kind of person who refused to suffer any losses. His name was Sun Lie.

Yi Yun did not respond and he could not be bothered with such people.

Sun Lie chuckled and licked his lips, "Kid, it's useless even if you don't admit it. You probably came to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven just recently. The lower realms you come from is a land of savages. The strength of warriors there are negligible. Being able to come to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven makes you a general amongst dwarves."

With him saying this, one of the youths beside him, who had a stocky build, roared with laughter. His name was Dong Hu.

"Kid, why are you so seriously injured? Were you beaten the moment you came to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven? Hehe! The Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven isn't like your hometown. In your hometown, you can walk anyway you like. But in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, you have to crawl. Being too arrogant will get you beaten, just like your present situation."

"However, getting beaten is a good thing. At least, it will open your eyes. The environment we grew up in is not something you can imagine. So Kid, let this young lord take a look at that relic in your hand."

Chapter 777: Establishing Authority

Dong Hu was eyeing the relic in Yi Yun's hand. He was not afraid of the injured Yi Yun. Even if Yi Yun was not injured, he was not afraid of him since he had three people on his side. Furthermore, Dong Hu had grown up in a Fey race tribal clan that was located in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. Although the clan's bloodline was average, members of the Fey race had naturally stronger bodies than humans, what more Yi Yun who came from a lower realm.

As for whether this matter would result in Luo Fengling's unhappiness, Dong Hu was not worried.

A person like Luo Fengling was dedicated to cultivation. She came out of seclusion once every one or two years, and what she pursued was her entry into the Luo Divine Hall, becoming a powerful figure in the Luo clan. Compared to Luo Fengling's martial path, the matters between them, the steward disciples, were completely trivial, so why would she care about it?

Even if Luo Fengling came out of seclusion, they might not even be able to meet her. And even if they met her, it was impossible for Yi Yun to complain to her. Has it ever occurred where a court maiden complains to the emperor after a fight amongst court maidens?

There were always competing interests between disciples in a sect, it was extremely common. Dong Hu even wanted to take a slice of Yi Yun's pie — the responsibility over the procurement of fire-elemental materials — in a bid to obtain some benefits.

"Kid, it's your first time here in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. Since you do not know your way around or don't know anyone, you will be easily bullied. If not for that, you would not have been beaten up badly. I propose that you follow me and become my subordinate. I'll promise your protection." Dong Hu said with a chuckle. If this kid fell for it, he could help him feed the Fey beasts and leave the good procurement job for himself. He naturally did not mind protecting Yi Yun in that case.

In a faction like the Fire Cloud State, being alone was not easy. Taking in some minions allowed him to slowly prosper.

"Be your subordinate?"

Yi Yun played with the relic in his hand. In fact, Yi Yun did not care too much for the relic that Luo Fengling gave to him. If he was an ordinary late-stage Yuan Opening realm warrior, he would have cured most of his wounds by using this relic.

However, be it in terms of cultivation technique or nomological insights, including his Yuan foundation or Dao Seed, they were incomparable to an ordinary warrior's.

The more powerful a warrior was, the stronger their vitality was, so it was more difficult for them to suffer injuries. Correspondingly, once they were injured, the cost of recovery was also greater.

Such a relic could not have much effect on the heavy injuries that

Yi Yun had suffered.

Yi Yun's recovery mainly relied on the Purple Crystal. For the past few days, he had relied on the Purple Crystal to heal himself on the spirit cruiser, so he had already recovered a bit of his strength.

Although he had recovered a bit of his strength, Yi Yun could not use Yuan Qi to do battle. This was because the moment he used it, his meridians would be activated, causing a relapse of his old injuries. He might get a thrilling experience by using a move or two, but Yi Yun would have to pay a greater price after that, so it was not worth it.

Although Yi Yun did not care about the relic, he did not plan on giving it to these villains.

"Your name is Dong Hu (Winter Tiger), I guess you were a tiger that gained sentience?" Yi Yun rebutted, causing Dong Hu's face to stiffen. Immediately following that, his expression turned ugly.

The Fey race was split into three major categories — Heaven Fey, Earth Fey and Ancient Fey.

The Heaven Fey was the nobility of the Fey race. There were very few Heaven Fey in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, so they typically established large family clans, large sects or kingdoms.

For example, the Luo clan was a Heaven Fey.

All Heaven Fey species had a long history. Noble blood flowed in their bodies which could be traced to primordial powerful figures of the Fey race. However, the richness in their bloodline differed considerably amongst offspring from different families.

If one's bloodline was rich enough, they could awaken the powers of the primordial Fey race as they matured. This would then be no trifling matter.

The Heaven Fey were a higher level of existence in the Fey race. Their appearances tended to resemble humans. The babies they gave birth to were in the shape of human infants, so other than the difference in bloodline, they looked almost identical. Only very few members with sufficiently powerful bloodlines could transform into an Ancient Fey. That would be their final combat form.

The second Fey race species was the Earth Fey, a species far inferior to the Heaven Fey.

They were actually originally beasts or plants. After experiencing a sufficiently long period of growth by absorbing the essence of the Heaven and Earth, they could suddenly achieve sentience one day. Slowly, they could cultivate in the Dao, eventually taking on human form.

They had equivalent intelligence as humans and they were considered half-human and half-Fey.

As Earth Fey bred, their numbers grew greatly, slowly resulting in the Earth Fey species.

The born offspring of Earth Fey would usually have beast-like characteristics. For example, the infants would have fangs, claws, fur, tails, etc. By slowly cultivating, they would completely transform.

Members of the Earth Fey had an innate inferiority complex when facing members of the Heaven Fey.

But compared to humans, they would have an innate sense of superiority.

The bodies of Earth Fey species were significantly stronger than human bodies, but... their perception was inferior to humans. To put it bluntly, their intellect was worse than humans, so in terms of the creation of heritage, learning cultivation techniques or matters regarding nomological insights, they were inferior to humans.

The final third race, the Ancient Fey, were actually ancestors of the Heaven Fey species. They came into being from the condensation of Heaven and Earth essence right at the beginning of the Universe's formation. They were the first lives in the Universe, and they were an existence that were close natural gods.

The Ancient Fey had interesting legends to them. For example, Fey race legends speak of ancient Fey dragons or Bai Ze.

They could also produce offspring, but their ability to reproduce was dismal. The Ancient Fey were originally few in number, so as time went on, they turned nearly extinct.

Hence, when talking about the Fey race in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, only the Heaven and Earth Fey were typically mentioned.

The Fire Cloud State's Heaven Fire Hall and Earth Fire Hall's classification also came from a result of the Heaven and Earth Fey.

Dong Hu's family clan belonged to an Earth Fey species. Furthermore, his ancestor was a tiger, who lived tens of thousands of years ago and achieved the Dao.

This was not supposed to be a history worth flaunting, and not only did Yi Yun allude to Dong Hu's humble origins, he even used the words 'tiger that gained sentience' instead of 'tiger achieving the Dao'.

This was implying that they as members of the Fey race, they were analogous to the spirits found in supernatural novels written by humans, so there was no way he could tolerate this.

Dong Hu was infuriated, while the girl named Bai Wei beside him began to chuckle. As she laughed at Dong Hu's origins, she put on a look as though she was watching a good show, anticipating how Yi Yun would put an end to this matter.

Was Yi Yun not afraid of death? Why did he dare to offend Dong Hu and Sun Lie despite being so seriously injured? In the Luo clan, battles between disciples were usually intense.

Dong Hu gave a nasty look after he was mocked by Bai Wei. As he looked at Yi Yun, he said ferociously, "You lowly human, you even come from a lower realm. You have no right to mock my ancestor. This is the first time I, Dong Hu, have come to the Fire Cloud State. I have all this power but with no way to show for it. Today, I shall use you to establish my authority!"

As Dong Hu spoke, he grabbed at Yi Yun. His body was large and muscular, and the hair on his body was extremely thick. He looked just like a tiger!

The Earth Fey species may have poor perception, but their physiques far exceeded humans'. Especially with Dong Hu's ancestor being a tiger that achieved the Dao, his physical strength was extremely terrifying!

As he watched Dong Hu charge at him, Yi Yun retreated and in an instant, he took five steps back.

Although Yi Yun had recovered slightly, he did not dare to freely fight with others because it might cause his old injuries to relapse.

Against Dong Hu's claw, Yi Yun circulated energy to his dantian. "Whew!"

A beam of light shot out of Yi Yun's dantian, straight at Dong Hu!

This beam of light was Yi Yun's Draco First True Gold avatar.

Yi Yun himself was injured so he could not fight, but he had recovered a minimal amount of strength. He could already barely use the Draco First True Gold avatar. As for the more powerful Demon God puppet, Yi Yun was afraid that he would lose control of the evil energy, so he did not summon it out.

As for Dong Hu and company recognizing the Draco First True Gold avatar, it was something that he did not need to worry about. If it was a Draco First True Gold in its most primordial state, there might be some well-learned members of the Fey race in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven who could recognize it. However, Yi Yun's Draco First True Gold had already metamorphosed into a body of flesh and blood. In addition to the Azure Yang Lord's refinement for tens of millions of years, even if weaker mighty members of the Fey race saw it, they might not be able to recognize the material of the avatar.

In a blink of an eye, Dong Hu did not even manage to make out the beam of light, but he did not lose his offensive momentum.

"Bam!"

Dong Hu's claw grabbed at the Draco First True Gold avatar's chest, but before he could feel triumphant, he felt like he had grabbed a divine piece of metal. The force from his claw could not

tear apart the Draco First True Gold avatar's defenses.

"What is this?"

Dong Hu was alarmed. At that moment, the Draco First True Gold avatar punched Dong Hu straight in the face.

No matter how powerful Dong Hu's body was, he was inferior to a divine material like Draco First True Gold. This punch resulted in a horrifying cracking sound.

Dong Hu's vision turned black as his legs went limp. The immense momentum caused the tiles beneath him to crack, as he sunk into the ground.

"Oh? Such a hard head?"

Yi Yun was also slightly surprised. He believed that the Draco First True Gold avatar could smash Dong Hu's skull to pieces with that punch. Even if the Fey race possessed a strong vitality, he would have to be bedridden for a month or two. He never expected that in that punch, the Draco First True Gold avatar felt an immense resistance. Dong Hu's head could definitely be used as a hammer.

But even so, Dong Hu was in a daze from being hit by the punch and his mind was momentarily vacant.

The Draco First True Gold avatar leaped up at that moment and

jumped right in front of Dong Hu, sending a flying kick at him!

This kick landed on Dong Hu's face!

The Draco First True Gold avatar's leg was too hard, so it smashed Dong Hu's nose bridge in. Like a sandbag, Dong Hu's massive body was sent flying by the Draco First True Gold avatar with a kick. But suddenly, the Draco First True Gold avatar grabbed the flying Dong Hu's ankle and smashed him down into the ground!

"Boom!"

There was a resounding explosion as Dong Hu's entire body was smashed into the ground. Many of his joints were broken, and he suffered ruptured organs and severed meridians. His injuries were probably not much lighter than Yi Yun's.

"Ah, ah, ah!"

Dong Hu screamed in the pile of rubble. Sun Lie and Bai Wei, who were watching by the sidelines, turned pale. They did not expect the sudden turn of events. The severely injured Yi Yun's dantian, who looked as though he was at Death's doorstep, had suddenly produced a malignant star that flew out of his dantian, brutally beating Dong Hu in the process.

"What is this thing? Is it a puppet or what?"

Chapter 778: Avatar? Puppet?

"What... is this thing... ?"

After being brutally slammed to the ground by the Draco First True Gold avatar, Dong Hu's back was being held down under the Draco First True Gold avatar's foot, causing him to spew blood out of his mouth.

Bai Wei and Sun Lie's eyes were staring straight at the Draco First True Gold avatar that had suddenly appeared. He looked exactly like Yi Yun, with the only difference being the pale gold robe he wore. His skin looked like it had a metallic texture to it, somewhat different from Yi Yun's.

"Avatar?"

Bai Wei's tiny mouth opened as she found it extremely astonishing.

"How can it be an avatar? It has to be a puppet." Sun Lie said with an ashen face.

There were many similarities between avatars and puppets, for example, they could both be used to kill enemies. There were also many puppets that were manufactured to look extremely lifelike, and there were unsurprising cases where it would look identical to its master.

An avatar could also look exactly identical to the original body, but there were two essential differences between avatars and puppets.

The first difference was strength and growth potential. A avatar's strength was largely determined by one's true body. Their nomological insights were identical, and the avatar could grow, cultivating like the true body. In contrast, the moment a puppet was refined, its strength would be fixed. At best, there could be some slight modifications in the future.

The second difference was the difference in importance between an avatar and a puppet. An avatar's soul sea had a soul split from the warrior's original body. As for a puppet, it had a spiritual imprint at best.

The loss of an avatar would deal a major blow to the original body's soul sea, and it might even affect the person's future success.

As for the loss of a puppet, it was actually just the lost of a treasure. With sufficient wealth, it was considered nothing.

Sun Lie believed that Yi Yun had summoned a puppet, mainly because an avatar, which had the ability to grow, required extremely valuable materials. It was difficult to find them, and it was extremely difficult to refine one!

The more valuable the materials, the longer it would take to refine an avatar. Typically, it needed a mighty senior to spend a

long period of time to refine an avatar.

As for Yi Yun's Draco First True Gold avatar, it was refined by the Azure Yang Lord personally. After the Azure Yang Lord died, it had been refined in the God Advent Tower's arrays for tens of millions of years!

Sun Lie absolutely refused to believe that such a precious item would come into the possession of a warrior from the lower realm.

Furthermore, the strength of the Draco First True Gold avatar was too powerful, so Sun Lie could not accept that it was a junior's avatar.

"Puppet? Even if it's a puppet, it's so powerful!"

As Bai Wei rolled her eyes, she looked at the Draco First True Gold avatar with intense jealousy, she coveted it greatly!

She had looked down on Yi Yun from the very beginning. Although her ancestor was a white peony that achieved its Dao, she felt a sense of superiority when she saw humans in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, especially humans from the lower realm. She thought of them as bumpkins with poor backgrounds.

Now, she was stunned to suddenly see a bumpkin nonchalantly produce a powerful puppet that was refined with superior techniques.

There were such good things in the lower realm? To refine such a puppet would definitely consume a lot of resources, yet this bumpkin had managed to obtain it.

It was a true waste of a treasure for a bumpkin to possess such a good item. Why wasn't it hers?

Bai Wei felt an imbalance in her mind, she was even thinking of means to obtain this puppet.

At that moment, Dong Hu was still screaming on the ground. Having been beaten down to the ground by a human, he gnashed his teeth because it was too shameful.

"Little bastard, don't you fall into my hands... " Dong Hu's mouth was full of blood and his nose had collapsed in, but he still squeezed out those malicious words from the gaps in his teeth.

The tiger species was a very aggressive species, they were the kind who would refuse to take a soft stance, even if they were beaten to a pulp.

"Oh?"

Yi Yun raised his foot and ruthlessly stepped on Dong Hu's neck, preventing him from producing another sound.

"Gee, this ground sure is hard."

As Yi Yun stepped on Dong Hu, he began to comment on the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's ground.

Yi Yun could tell that Mt. Fengling did not augment itself with too many arrays, yet this mountain was extremely firm. It was much firmer than the Tian Yuan world. If not, the Draco First True Gold avatar's nonchalant throw would have definitely sent Dong Hu deep underground, and not just cause a human-shaped crater.

Other than that, the space here was more stable. A move that could tear through the void in the Tian Yuan world was not even able to distort space here.

Under such circumstances, if the battle between Heaven Ascension realm warriors was considered, they could cause the world to tremble while fighting in the lower realm, bringing chaos to their universe.

But in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, their battle would appear plain. It wouldn't differ much from a battle between Yuan Foundation realm warriors.

"A large world born out of the chaos during the beginning of the Universe is indeed different." Yi Yun said with amazement, but the strength in his foot did not loosen at all.

"It ends here!" Sun Lie spoke out. The species he belonged to had relations with Dong Hu's species, so the two knew each other. "Kid, what are you doing? By brutally beating a fellow disciple, aren't you afraid of being punished by the Fire Cloud State?"

The competition between Fire Cloud State disciples was intense, but if someone publicly killed a fellow disciple, it was a serious crime.

Sun Lie put forward the idea of a possible lashback in order to threaten Yi Yun, but Yi Yun took no such nonsense. While still stepping on Dong Hu's neck, he said, "I have to stop because you say so? Who do you think you are!? Previously, when Dong Hu wanted to make a move on an injured me, you were standing by the side, deriving pleasure as though you were watching a show. Now, you suddenly thought of the Fire Cloud State's rules? What a joke."

As Yi Yun spoke, he finally lifted his foot. "Alright, since you want to stop me, then you can take his place to lie down here!"

Towards Sun Lie and Bai Wei, Yi Yun had no plans on letting them off. They were no different to Dong Hu, the only difference was that Dong Hu had acted first.

The Draco First True Gold avatar began walking towards Sun Lie and Bai Wei.

The duo's expressions immediately turned ugly. They had witnessed the abilities of the Draco First True Gold avatar, and

since they were on Dong Hu's level, they were definitely no match for the Draco First True Gold avatar.

"Human, don't you think that you can do anything you want because of a puppet. You were lucky to find a puppet in an ancient ruin, but a puppet can't grow. In time to come, it will have to be abandoned!"

"The tides will change, now that you have offended all of us, when your puppet can't keep up with our strength, you will suffer a miserable end!" Sun Lie threatened Yi Yun, hoping that this method could scare Yi Yun off. However, Yi Yun only sneered and nonchalantly said to the Draco First True Gold avatar, "Beat him down."

"Boom!"

The ground behind the Draco First True Gold avatar exploded, as he transformed into a pale gold beam of light and charged at Sun Lie!

The Draco First True Gold avatar was extremely fast, so it instantly appeared in front of Sun Lie!

Sun Lie's pupil's constricted. With a flip of his right hand, a large saber had appeared. An intense flame burned on the blade as he slashed at the Draco First True Gold avatar. He also cultivated fire-elemental laws, and it was this reason that made it easier for him to enter Fire Cloud State!

"Die!" Sun Lie roared, but the Draco First True Gold avatar only lifted its right arm.

"Dang!"

An arm directly blocked Sun Lie's blade!

Chapter 779: Beating Into Submission

Sun Lie was also from a Fey race that was known for its strength. However, his saber strike that used all his strength had failed to even lacerate the Draco First True Gold avatar's body of flesh.

Even the Black-armored Demon God had previously failed to take down the Draco First True Gold avatar, so what more Sun Lie?

"You!"

Sun Lie was alarmed and at that moment, the Draco First True Gold avatar had sent a punch straight into Sun Lie's abdomen. With a quivering jerk, Sun Lie's body bent like a shrimp.

The gastric juices in Sun Lie's stomach spewed out from the blow, it was an excruciating pain.

"Little bastard!" Sun Lie cursed. Despite being beaten into such a wretched state, he refused to concede defeat. It was completely unacceptable for members from the Fey race species that enjoyed a strong sense of racial superiority to submit to a human from the lower realm.

Hearing Sun Lie's invective, Yi Yun, who was standing far away, pricked up his eyebrow. This sort of person just needed to be beaten into submission.

Yi Yun stood motionless while the Draco First True Gold avatar

began giving Sun Lie a brutal beating.

Although Sun Lie resisted, he was no match for the Draco First True Gold avatar. The saber in his hand was forcefully taken away by the Draco First True Gold avatar, and with a wipe from the avatar's pale gold palm, pure Yang Yuan Qi devoured all the flames on the saber!

"Bam! Bam! Bam!"

The Draco First True Gold avatar sent out numerous punches, each one striking at Sun Lie's abdomen. In a matter of seconds, Sun Lie went from spewing out gastric juices to spewing out blood.

With another strike from an elbow into Sun Lie's back, Sun Lie felt as though his spine had fractured as he went limp and crashed to the ground.

The Draco First True Gold avatar grabbed Sun Lie's ankle and with a throw, flung him on Dong Hu's back.

Bam!

Dong Hu let out a tragic scream as he and Sun Lie were piled together in a heap.

The Draco First True Gold avatar placed his foot on Sun Lie's back as Sun Lie's body jerked abruptly. The blood spewing out of his mouth was like a fish blowing bubbles. Dong Hu, who was

below him, suffered likewise. He felt that the Draco First True Gold avatar's foot was about to break both their backs.

At that moment, the Draco First True Gold avatar made a flip with his hand, and retrieved a lance of unknown origin. He did not use the lance head, but the lance pole to smash the two of them at the same time!

Although Fire Cloud State banned the killing of fellow disciples, it was a gray area when it came to beating each other to a near cripple.

Having sustained serious injuries, they would have to recuperate for a year or so, definitely affecting their future cultivation.

This way, their ambitions and aspirations would become bursting bubbles. There was no need to talk about entering the Earth Fire Hall, they might even be kicked out because of poor performance.

"Stop... Stop beating... "

Dong Hu groaned. Sun Lie's body was also twitching all over, he was no longer bold enough to keep up with his invectives.

At that moment, Yi Yun only waved his hand, making the Draco First True Gold avatar stop.

Following that, Yi Yun looked at Bai Wei.

Bai Wei immediately turned pale, "I... I'm not saying anything at all. What do you want? As a man, even if redress has to be sought for any grievance, are you not even going to spare women?"

"Women?" Yi Yun gave a scornful laugh, "You are only a spirit monster. Even if you were really a woman, I will never hesitate to act against any provocations directed at me. But there was one thing you said right, I will seek redress for any grievance!"

As Yi Yun spoke, the Draco First True Gold avatar briskly arrived in front of Bai Wei and sent a slap at her!

Bai Wei screamed. The Draco First True Gold avatar's slap was extremely fast, so even if Bai Wei could not block it, with her strength, she could have at least reacted and fought back.

However, she did not do so. Sun Lie and Dong Hu, who were stronger than her, had been beaten up brutally because of their resistance.

With a loud slap, Bai Wei was sent flying by the Draco First True Gold avatar!

Bai Wei slammed heavily into the ground. Her face swelled up, but compared to Dong Hu and Sun Lie, her injuries were the lightest.

However, Bai Wei felt immense humiliation from being slapped

by Yi Yun.

With a hand covering her face, she groaned while lying on the ground. She could not do anything to Yi Yun because the puppet was too terrifying.

If she could steal the puppet, then she would obtain a power boost to her combat power. As for that human, he would be nothing at all, allowing her to knead him as she wished.

Bai Wei could not help but have such thoughts.

Yi Yun looked indifferently at Bai Wei, Sun Lie and Dong Hu.

He knew that although they verbally appeared to submit to him, they still hated him deeply in their hearts. However, with the Fire Cloud State's rules, Yi Yun could not really kill the three of them because he would end up suffering heavy punishment.

Yi Yun did not take the matter of having a grudge with the fellow three disciples to heart.

The Fire Cloud State was just an expedient place for Yi Yun to recuperate from his wounds. As for Dong Hu and company, they were trivial to him. They were all at the Yuan Opening realm, and were not much different from Yi Yun. Compared to Tian Yuan world warriors at the same level, Bai Wei, Dong Hu and Sun Lie were indeed much stronger, but the gap between the trio and Yi Yun was too great.

Although Yi Yun came from the Tian Yuan world, he not only had the Purple Crystal, but he had also entered the Great Empress mystic realm and the Pure Yang Sword Palace, obtaining the top heritage from the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

And the three Fey race members in front of him were just Earth Fey from the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. It was not incorrect to label them as low class Fey race.

Regardless of the number of geniuses in the 12 Empyrean Heavens or the number of experts there were, a few Earth Fey members that came from remote tribal clans would just be demolished by Yi Yun as the gap between them was too great.

When Yi Yun recovered from his injuries, the three of them would not even be worth mentioning.

With a thought, the Draco First True Gold avatar transformed into a stream of light and disappeared into his dantian.

After taking a glance at the trio, Yi Yun turned around and left.

Yi Yun did not plan on staying in the Fire Cloud State for long. He remembered the kindness that Luo Fengling showed him by saving him. In the future, when he left the Fire Cloud State, he would look for an opportunity to repay her kindness.

However... since it was the Luo clan, Yi Yun was also planning on

going to the royal capital.

The Luo clan could be said to be a big clan, but it had established its own nation. Firstly, Yi Yun wanted to see Luo Huo'er, and secondly, if possible, Yi Yun wanted to find Jiang Xiaorou's father.

Various factors seemed to indicate that Jiang Xiaorou's father was in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. Jiang Xiaorou had grown up alone and she had suffered all her life. If he could help Jiang Xiaorou find her father, it would fulfill a wish of Yi Yun's.

...

The next morning, moments after dawn, Mt. Fengling was still covered with a dense fog.

Yi Yun was dressed in azure-colored clothes, looking clean and simple. He sat cross-legged in the valley, enjoying the tranquility of the early morning in the mountains as well as expiring Heaven Earth Yuan Qi.

Mt. Fengling was considered an excellent spiritual ground. Recuperating here allowed him to obtain double the results with half the effort.

The relic Luo Fengling gave Yi Yun had already been eaten by him. What surprised Yi Yun was that the relic's effect was much better than he expected.

The moment the relic entered his abdomen, it transformed into a warm flow that flowed to his every limb. Despite his meridians being severed, the energy in the relic could strangely flow along them.

Chapter 780: Recovery Relic

Damaged meridians were very difficult for warriors to fix. The reason was that repairing the damage required the absorption of energy, but with the meridians severed, the pathways for energy flow were also severed. This resulted in a vicious cycle. Hence, warriors would typically take a long time to recover from their severed meridians. It could even affect their future cultivation. If their meridians were severed and their dantian destroyed, then it was almost equivalent to having their cultivation crippled. They would then return back to being a mortal.

With this recovery relic, it nearly halved the time Yi Yun needed to recover, pleasantly surprising Yi Yun.

"Luo Fengling's relic has helped me quite a bit... "

Yi Yun murmured to himself, but he knew that as a steward disciple of the Fire Cloud State, Luo Fengling would not have given him a very precious relic. The best relics were, of course, kept for Luo Fengling herself.

But even so, this relic's effects gave him a surprise.

"It probably has to do with the difference in materials used for relic refinement in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven... "

Yi Yun knew very well that when comparing the Tian Yuan world to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, other than the difference in Desolate Heaven technique heritage, the main

difference would be the great difference in the materials used in the Desolate Heaven technique.

The Desolate beasts found in the Tian Yuan world were on a completely different level compared to the Fey beasts that lurked in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's mountains and lakes.

For example, the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit was a Fey beast that came from the 12 Empyrean Heavens. It had grown up in the lower realm, which was an inhibition to its natural talent. But even so, it had become the guardian of the Desolate race. All the primordial true spirits and primordial strains in the Divine Wilderness were subservient to the Sacred Spirit!

It had lived for tens of millions of years and even after being killed by the Black-armored Demon God, its corpse was coveted by the Sovereign of the Eventide. He wanted to steal it to increase his own cultivation realm, indicating how valuable the Sacred Spirit's corpse was.

However, if the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit was placed in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, it would not have been anything spectacular.

Many Fey beasts in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven were hundreds or even thousands of times stronger than the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit!

What sort of results would happen when these Fey beast's Fey bones or Fey cores were refined into relics? Even without any

refinement, just grinding the Fey bones to powder and eating them might have wonderful effects!

As the best cook could not produce anything without grains, even the relics left behind by the ancient Great Empress in the Great Empress mystic realm were refined using the bones of desolate beasts in the Divine Wilderness. Similarly, they were incomparable to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's relics.

Hence, although Yi Yun obtained a large number of relics from the God Advent Tower, their main usage was to maintain the God Advent Tower's arrays.

"The Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's Fey bone materials sure are impressive. Speaking about that, isn't it my job to be in charge of the material storehouse? No wonder this job was coveted by Bai Wei, Dong Hu, and company. If one isn't honest, it is indeed easy to reap a lot of benefits."

With this thought in mind, Yi Yun walked towards the material storehouse.

In fact, the top materials stored in Mt. Fengling were carried by Luo Fengling personally. Whatever was stored in the material storehouse were just common materials.

These materials were rich in variety, and the material storehouse had a dedicated accounts book. The procurement of every material and warehousing were well-documented in it.

As Yi Yun walked to the material storehouse, he suddenly caught a whiff of a faint aromatic fragrance of relics. This gave him a thought as he traced the fragrant smell of the relic.

Yi Yun came to an elegant little courtyard, and in it, there was a 14–15-year-old girl refining relics.

Tao'er?

Yi Yun was slightly surprised. The person refining relics was Luo Fengling's maidservant, Tao'er.

The relic-refinement process could not be disturbed, so Yi Yun stood in his spot and watched silently.

At that moment, Tao'er was in full concentration. Her tiny face was glowing red, and her forehead was covered in beads of sweat.

Beside Tao'er, there was a tiny red cauldron that was spinning.

In the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, the relic-refining tools used were slightly different to the Tian Yuan world. In the Tian Yuan world, they used disk arrays, but here, the main tool was a relic cauldron.

On the surface of the tiny cauldron, there were runic engravings that looked simple as they glowed with different intensities. All the materials were placed inside the cauldron, and by surrounding it with Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, the materials were repeatedly refined.

Yi Yun could not help but open his Purple Crystal's energy vision.

Be it the Tian Yuan world or the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's Desolate Heaven technique, as a Desolate Heaven Master, the most important thing was energy control.

And in his energy vision, Yi Yun could clearly see every detail in Tao'er's control of energy.

However, Tao'er was only a Desolate Heaven apprentice, and she was only a beginner. She learned the most superficial Desolate Heaven techniques, So be it her hand seals or energy control, she was only very average.

The Fey bones and herbs in the cauldron were also the most common of materials. All of this could be seen just from the energy flow they emitted.

But even so, Tao'er was extremely careful with her every move. It could even be said that she was trembling with fear. More beads of sweat oozed out of the pores on her face, but despite being extremely meticulous, the Yuan Qi blob in the cauldron was beginning to spin out of control.

Yi Yun could see everything clearly through his energy vision; hence, despite him not knowing the hand seals of the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, he could tell through the Purple Crystal that Tao'er had made many mistakes with her hand seals.

Indeed, moments later, with a 'Peng' explosion, all the materials in Tao'er's cauldron went up in smoke. The Fey bones were shattered and the bone ash flew out.

Thankfully, they were all low-level materials, so the explosion was not very powerful. It just blackened Tao'er's little face and disheveled her hair.

"I failed the refinement again. I failed the refinement again." Tao'er did not care about her disheveled hair as she looked completely frustrated and depressed. "Tao'er, can you be any dumber!? How many times have you failed?"

Looking at the material dreg in front of her and the toppled cauldron, tears could not help but well up in her eyes.

As a human, she was easily marginalized and despised in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven.

Most resources were controlled by the Fey race in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. If a human wanted to gain success in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, they had to put in greater amounts of effort.

However, Tao'er's talent was not good enough to gain special attention from the major factions for nurturing. She was just a maidservant, but because of her kind heart, she had been taken in by Luo Fengling. However, she could not rely on Luo Fengling all the time, since she was meant to serve Luo Fengling.

She knew that Luo Fengling's goal was to enter the Luo Divine Hall. It was located in the Luo clan's royal capital, a place where top geniuses in the Luo clan gathered. If Luo Fengling were to enter the Luo Divine Hall, she would also accompany her. The geniuses there would also bring their attendants. These attendants also had many things to do, so if she was too useless, she would be causing trouble for her Missus in everything she did. It would be better for her not to accompany Luo Fengling then.

With this thought in mind, Tao'er could not help but clench her tiny fist. "Tao'er come on, you can do it. You can't hinder Missus. You can definitely do it."

Unknowingly, she said out the words in her heart verbally.

After saying that, she suddenly came to realize that someone was standing behind her. Turning back, her face blushed.

"Brother... Brother Yi... "

Tao'er stuck out her tongue and she was somewhat perplexed. She had failed in her relic refinement and she had been muttering to herself. All of that was quite disgraceful, so having all of that seen by Yi Yun naturally made her feel distressed.

Chapter 781: Luo Clan Desolate Heaven Technique

"Brother Yi, have you been here for long?" Tao'er asked with a blushed face.

"Uh... I just came." Yi Yun lied as he noticed Tao'er's awkwardness.

"Okay, okay." Tao'er easily believed Yi Yun's words as she obviously heaved a sigh of relief. "Brother Yi, it seems as though you look much better now?"

Tao'er was not able to sense Yi Yun's energy flow, but she had guessed from the color on Yi Yun's face.

Yi Yun had been heavily injured prior to this. All his were organs ruptured, so if it were any ordinary person, they would have been dead. Tao'er did not expect Yi Yun to look so much better so quickly. His recovery speed was truly impressive.

"Yeah, Senior Luo gave me a recovery relic which was quite useful." Yi Yun answered her casually.

Upon hearing this, Tao'er smiled, as though she was happy because of Yi Yun's words. "The Fey pills or relics refined by the Luo clan are extremely famous, especially in the Luo clan's royal capital. The best Desolate Heaven Masters in the Luo clan are there. They seldom provide their services, but if they were to

refine an impressive relic, even the mighty Supremacy figures in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven would travel personally to obtain one from them!"

Tao'er mentioned this pridefully. Although she was human, she was still a member of the Luo clan and she felt pride about the Luo clan's might.

However, there were few humans in the Luo clan. Furthermore, amongst the humans, one was weaker than the other, making them completely incomparable to the Fey race in the Luo clan. Although the upper echelons of the Luo clan had announced that members of the Human and Fey race were equal, it was still extremely difficult to implement it in practice.

There were many places in the Luo clan where the humans were ostracized and bullied. It was understandable because in a warrior's world, the weak were naturally bullied.

And it was because of this reason that Tao'er felt such a natural affinity with Yi Yun, who was also human.

Since everyone was human, they were all in the same boat.

"Oh? The Luo clan has impressive attainments in the Desolate Heaven technique?"

When Yi Yun heard what Tao'er said, he recalled how Luo Huo'er focused on the Desolate Heaven technique back in the Tai Ah

Divine City.

Back then, Luo Huo'er's Desolate Heaven technique was extremely good, but... when she competed against Yi Yun in energy control, she had lost to the Purple Crystal-possessing Yi Yun. It caused Luo Huo'er to go into a fit of rage.

Now that he thought about it, the Desolate Heaven technique Luo Huo'er used in the Tai Ah Divine City was most likely to be different from the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven.

The quality of the desolate bones materials was bad, while the hand seals and Desolate Heaven technique heritage was different.

With these differences, Luo Huo'er had to nearly start from scratch. But even so, she had managed to master the local Desolate Heaven technique quickly.

And it could be said that the Tai Ah Divine City's Desolate Heaven technique was something Luo Huo'er learned when she had nothing better to do while hiding in the lower realm as a fugitive. She could not use the Luo clan's Desolate Heaven technique that she was proficient in as she would not be able to explain its origins. It could also risk exposing her identity.

Her Desolate Heaven technique, which she had learned in her free time, had complied with the lower realm's rules. Yet she was able to defeat and dominate the Tai Ah Divine City's elites in the Desolate Heaven technique. She only failed to match the energy control extraordinaire, Yi Yun.

"No wonder she was so unhappy back when I beat her." Yi Yun muttered and smiled to himself.

Luo Huo'er came from the 12 Empyrean Heavens, and she was a direct descendant of the Luo clan. She was like a proud little cat, feeling superior over the lower realm's Tai Ah Divine City warriors. She believed that the lower realm Desolate Heaven technique that she learned in her spare time was enough to dominate everyone else.

In Luo Huo'er's heart, the people in the lower realm should have surrounded her, praising her for her beauty and peerless talent. Unfortunately, amongst this bunch of bumpkins, Yi Yun, who did not share the same thoughts as her, had appeared. His control of energy had defeated Luo Huo'er, something completely unacceptable for her. It resulted in her flaring up.

Yi Yun could not help but recall how Luo Huo'er had tried to entrap him after she had lost to him in energy control. Just thinking of how she ended up falling for her own trap could not stop the corner of Yi Yun's lips from curling up.

He reflected on how time had truly flown. Who knew that more than ten years later, they would both appear in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven?

"Brother Yi, since your body isn't well yet, drink some medicinal porridge. It's made from spirit grain that I grow myself." Tao'er took out a pot of porridge from her room and said with pride.

In Mt. Fengling, she had a lot of miscellaneous chores to do, so there was no time for her to cultivate. One of her chores included preparing spirit food for Luo Fengling, who was very particular about her daily three meals. Most of the dishes were cooked by Tao'er, so despite having a low cultivation level, she was quite good when it came to cooking.

Tao'er scooped a bowl of medicinal porridge for Yi Yun. Just the fragrance alone was enough to make one drool.

Not only did this bowl of porridge use spirit rice, but it also used a lot of herbs. It was very beneficial to the body when consumed.

After thanking her, Yi Yun drank a mouthful of the porridge. Indeed, it tasted excellent, and the moment the medicinal porridge entered his stomach, it transformed into a warm energy that made Yi Yun feel extremely comfortable.

However, Tao'er did not join him in eating the porridge. She faced her small cauldron and began working on her Desolate Heaven technique.

The originally red hot cauldron had cooled down by now, returning to its original black color. It did not look like a particularly good relic cauldron and it was probably very cheap. As for the materials, she tried to ration whatever she had.

Nurturing a high level Desolate Heaven Master required large amounts of valuable materials for practice. It was a huge expense.

Hence, if one didn't come from a famous institute of learning, it was very difficult to succeed as a Desolate Heaven Master.

Tao'er came from a poor background and not only her, even Luo Fengling was not considered to have come from a good background in the Luo clan before she showed her talent. She had relied on her hard work to come so far. An example of Luo Fengling's diligence was how eager she was to enter reclusive training the moment she returned.

Tao'er understood her own situation very well. She knew that it was impossible for her to be a top Desolate Heaven Master, nor did she have such ambitions. She only wanted to keep up with her Missus. She wanted to be able to help whenever her Missus was refining relics. She would be satisfied if she did not cause trouble for her.

As Yi Yun watched Tao'er refine the relic, he noticed that there were a collection of books nearby. A few books were even flipped open. Taking a look at them, they recorded Desolate Heaven technique hand seals in them.

It was Desolate Heaven technique heritage from the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven.

Of course, the Desolate Heaven technique heritage that Tao'er got to come into contact with were the most basic of techniques, so there was no need to keep them confidential. Hence, the books were just casually placed there, allowing Yi Yun to take a cursory look.

Yi Yun could not help but pick up a book and began flipping through it.

His body had yet to recover, so it was impossible to cultivate. Since he had the free time, he felt that taking a look at the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's Desolate Heaven technique was quite a good choice.

Since the Luo clan's attainment in the Desolate Heaven technique was impressive, then in the Luo clan's royal capital, there would definitely be top Desolate Heaven technique heritage. If he had the chance to learn them, with the Purple Crystal's help, Yi Yun would easily be an excellent Desolate Heaven Master.

As Yi Yun continued to read, he opened up his energy vision on a whim. As he read the book, he would match the information in it to Tao'er's Desolate Heaven technique.

Chapter 782: Guidance

The Desolate Heaven technique that Tao'er studied was extremely superficial and easy to understand.

However, understanding it did not mean being able to perform it. It was like a perfect circle drawn in a book. It may look simple, but replicating it with one's bare hands was difficult. It was a problem resulting in the poor control of one's hand.

Likewise, the difficult part of the Desolate Heaven technique was precisely the control of energy. Although the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's Desolate Heaven technique's heritage was far better than the Tian Yuan world's, the basic steps needed for the Desolate Heaven technique were the same.

Like the Tian Yuan world's Desolate Heaven technique, there were three steps, namely—

The first step, energy extraction. The second step, controlling the energy seal. The third step, forming the relic itself.

The first step was the basics in which the energy from within the Fey bones was extracted bit by bit. Many Fey bones contained great amounts of energy, making them more difficult to control. As a result, it was not easy to handle them as one pleased. If one was not thorough with extracting the energy, not only would it be a waste of materials, but the Fey bone relic would also not be refined properly.

As for the second step's creating and controlling the seals, it was even more complex as there were too many hand seal techniques. There was already no lack of hand seals in the Tian Yuan world, so in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, the number of the Desolate Heaven technique hand seals were as many as the stars in the sky. Different elemental Fey bone energy had corresponding hand seals that best suited the energy in question. If one failed to do it well, one could easily end up dissipating the energy that they had worked hard extracting, resulting in an explosion.

As for the final step, forming the relic. It was relatively easier, but on the condition that the first two steps were done perfectly.

Furthermore, this ease was relative. There were also many techniques when it came to forming the relic, and each technique had different effects.

Since the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's Desolate Heaven technique had its similarities with the Tian Yuan world's Desolate Heaven technique, and how Yi Yun's perception was pretty good, Yi Yun was able to quickly understand the techniques described in the book. As he compared the book's information with Tao'er's performance, Yi Yun quickly realized that Tao'er was barely able to complete each step..

Tao'er's cultivation level was limited, so it was very difficult for her to control the energy flow in the Fey bones. This caused flaws to appear during her relic refinement.

And the more careful she was with the seals, the more Tao'er was unwilling to abandon them. Noticing that the cauldron of

materials were about to be refined into a mess, Yi Yun estimated that an explosion was just a matter of time.

"Tao'er, abandon the three seals you formed, now!"

Yi Yun suddenly spoke out, giving Tao'er a fright. The three seals on her hand had been painstakingly formed by her. Although she did not manage to control it perfectly, it was already a pretty impressive feat for Tao'er. She was about to diligently refine the three seals into the relic, but Yi Yun had told her to abandon them.

How could she be willing to?

Furthermore... in Tao'er's impression, Yi Yun had just come to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven from a lower realm. How could he know anything about the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's Desolate Heaven techniques? That should be impossible...

Realizing that Tao'er was momentarily dumbfounded, Yi Yun repeated, "Follow my instructions and abandon them." Yi Yun's words were very decisive. "The three seals you condensed have a total of seventeen structural defects. If you mix them into the relic, not only will it not increase the efficacy, but it will also cause the energy to turn chaotic!"

Seventeen energy defects?

Tao'er was surprised. Even she did not know how many energy

flaws there were in the seals that she had condensed, but Yi Yun had managed to instantly count all of them? This...

Tao'er found it a bit unbelievable, but she knew that the seals she condensed were very poor in quality. As such, the chances of her refining a successful relic was extremely low. And with Yi Yun informing her of that, Tao'er decided to harden her heart and believe Yi Yun. She might as well follow his instructions as a last resort.

With her hand relaxing, the three energy seals that had just been condensed were abandoned by Tao'er.

"Heaven Eminence seal, abandon!"

"Fire Willow seal, abandon!"

"Sun Moon seal, abandon!"

"Earth Howl seal, abandon!"

"Disperse all the mentioned seals and refine them again!"

At that moment, there were colorful seals flying above Tao'er's cauldron. The marks Yi Yun mentioned had all been painstakingly condensed by Tao'er. But with a single instruction from Yi Yun, she had to disperse them and refine them again from scratch.

"But... "

Tao'er was beginning to hesitate as she felt that her remaining Yuan Qi was likely insufficient for her to condense those seals again.

However, the resoluteness in Yi Yun's instructions made her subconsciously listen to him.

Tao'er gritted her teeth and she destroyed all the seals Yi Yun mentioned.

"Pa! Pa! Pa!"

The energy seals exploded into a beautiful rain of light. Although it was very pretty, Tao'er's tiny face was like a prune as she felt her heart ache for them.

"Form the Heaven Eminence seal again. Extract twice the energy from before!"

Yi Yun began to guide Tao'er, but this time, she had to extract twice the energy from before, right from the onset.

Tao'er swallowed a mouthful of saliva. Twice the energy? She could barely control the normal amount of energy, wouldn't twice the energy end up exploding?

"Follow my instructions. The energy flow on your right index finger, suppress it!"

With the Purple Crystal's energy vision, Yi Yun was able to see every strand of energy that Tao'er was controlling clearly. Yi Yun could tell if there were any defects in each and every seal, and if there were any, where the defects were. He could even predict what the results of the defects were or whether it would cause the relic to explode or not.

As Yi Yun guided Tao'er, he would also immediately point out her errors or inadequacies.

"Stabilize your hand. Increase the energy output. Now's the time. Form the seal!"

Yi Yun's tone was not to be doubted, causing Tao'er to follow his instructions to a T. Finally, when her hands folded, the energy condensed together to form a beautiful blue seal that floated in mid air.

This was a 'Heaven Eminence seal'!

The 'Heaven Eminence seal' was a seal that Tao'er found extremely difficult to condense throughout her Fey bone relic refinement process. It also happened that all the relics that Tao'er needed to refine required this seal, so it vexed her greatly.

But now, with this extremely beautiful 'Heaven Eminence seal'

floating in front of her eyes with blue light shimmering, Tao'er found it unbelievable. Although she was bad at condensing the 'Heaven Eminence seal', she was still able to recognize the quality of the 'Heaven Eminence seal' when she formed it. It was definitely better than any 'Heaven Eminence seal' she had ever condensed before. And even more critically, this 'Heaven Eminence seal' had twice the energy from before, so the efficacy as a result of using this in the relic would naturally be much better!

"This was condensed by me?"

Tao'er muttered to herself as she was momentarily dumbfounded.

"Don't be distracted. Next, Sun Moon seal!"

Yi Yun had singled out seven of Tao'er's seals from before to be redone. The reason was because the quality of the seven seals Tao'er had condensed was too terrible. If they were forcefully used to condense the Fey bone relic, it would cause a chain reaction and end up disintegrating all the materials.

"Oh!"

Having been alerted by Yi Yun, Tao'er had a rude awakening. She hurriedly continued her remaining seals. She knew that she could not be distracted when employing the Desolate Heaven technique. If she were to shatter such a perfect Heaven Eminence seal due to her distraction, she would definitely be too deep for tears.

But why did this Brother Yi understand the Luo clan's Desolate Heaven technique so well that he could immediately point out her flaws?

Chapter 783: Relic Qualities

Tao'er did not know how Yi Yun had managed to do it. Although she was limited in various ways, she knew that being able to accurately pinpoint her every mistake she made during her control of energy was an extremely difficult task.

Only Desolate Heaven technique grandmasters with rich experience, who often interacted with their disciples, would have been able to achieve this feat of guiding their disciples so well.

If it was any ordinary Desolate Heaven Master, or even any young genius from the Luo clan, they would only be good at the Desolate Heaven technique. But they lacked the experience to guide others. They might not be able to find the flaws during the energy controlling process, let alone guide others in real time during an actual execution of the Desolate Heaven technique.

Every advice that Yi Yun gave hit the nail on the head. Tao'er was not a dumb person to begin with, so under his guidance, she began to complete the seals that were considered very difficult for her. When she saw the seals that she previously found extremely difficult condense in front of her, Tao'er became more and more excited, her face glowed red with excitement.

Just a bit more, almost got it!

When all the seals were completed, the seals gathered together in a central core, finally condensing together. With a flash of light that looked like a dream-like color, the seals finally coagulated to

form a relic the size of a longan.

"Boop!"

The relic fell into Tao'er's hand. It still contained the warm flow of energy within it, making it somewhat scalding to the touch.

As Tao'er held this crystalline relic and felt the warmth it exuded, she felt as though she was in a dream.

This was condensed by me?

Tao'er's heart began to thump loudly. Having joined the Luo clan a long time ago, she had some experience about the judgment of a relic's quality. She was sure that not only had this relic been successfully refined, but it was also very well done.

In the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, there was a comprehensive evaluation ranking for relics. The same kind of relic was ranked based on the outcome of the refinement, and it went from poor, ordinary, refined, outstanding, transcendent, to spiritual emergence!

The higher the level of the relic, the harder it was to create a higher quality one. For example, the relics used by mighty Supremacies were already extremely valuable at the ordinary quality. Refined qualities were extremely rare.

But if it were a low level relic such as the one that Tao'er refined,

a typical genius Desolate Heaven Master would be able to produce it at the outstanding quality.

Low level relics could be of the outstanding quality at best, while the qualities, transcendent and spiritual emergence were exclusive to high level relics.

Especially for spiritual emergence quality, it meant that the relic had evolved a spirituality in it to the point of it being able to absorb Heaven Earth Yuan Qi and self-cultivate. This quality was something that low level relics could not possess.

Tao'er judged that the relic she had just refined was somewhere in between the quality of ordinary and refined.

This was a quality that she found unthinkable in the past. After all, she could not even refine a poor quality relic, she would usually end up exploding the cauldron and turning the materials into ash!

For her to be able to produce a relic in one go that even exceeded the ordinary quality?

It was something that Tao'er found unbelievable. As she thought over it, it was indeed possible. Her final seal was done in one fell swoop, and it was because of this that allowed her to have sufficient Yuan Qi to support her to the very end. Furthermore, a few key seals were done with twice the amount of energy, so it was natural that it would have a good quality!

Tao'er could not help but look at Yi Yun. Her eyes were filled with amazement and puzzlement, and even a sense of reverence.

Ever since she began learning the Desolate Heaven technique, all she obtained was frustration and dismay. She did not wish to leave her Missus, but her background caused her to experience struggles on her Desolate Heaven technique journey. But today, under Yi Yun's help, she had managed to take a big step forward.

How could she not feel reverence for Yi Yun after he had given her such a huge opportunity?

"Brother... Brother Yi, how did you do it. Do you know the Luo clan's Desolate Heaven technique?"

In Tao'er's excitement, she could no longer speak properly.

Yi Yun shook his head and said, "Not really, but... aren't your books placed beside you?"

Yi Yun waved the book in his hand. These low level Desolate Heaven technique methods were not confidential, so any Luo clan disciple could freely read through them.

And it was true that Yi Yun had managed to know what seals Tao'er had formed through his reading of the book. Using his energy vision, he was able to make the correct judgment to guide Tao'er.

Back when he just arrived in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, Yi Yun would have been floating in endless space for a very long time, wasting his time, if not for having been saved by Luo Fengling. And during his journey in the spirit cruiser, it was Tao'er who took care of him while his physical condition was terrible.

This gave Yi Yun a very good impression of this hardworking maidservant. Noticing how Tao'er was making many detours in her Desolate Heaven technique, he decided to guide her on a whim.

After hearing what Yi Yun said, Tao'er was completely dumbfounded. She blinked her large eyes, as though the Yi Yun in front of her was like a prehistoric divine beast.

He was able to guide her just from reading the book?

Tao'er's cultivation level was only at the peak of the Purple Blood realm, many realms lower than Yi Yun. Due to the difference in realms, it would naturally result in different perception, insight and learning speed. What took Tao'er months to painstakingly learn, a higher level warrior could learn in days.

But even if the difference in cultivation level was acknowledged, it shouldn't have been to the point of being able to easily guide her after flipping through a Desolate Heaven technique book. Furthermore, his guidance was perfect, allowing her to refine a Fey bone relic that exceeded ordinary in quality.

Tao'er gaped her small mouth, unsure of what to say. She could

not help but take the book from Yi Yun's hands, wondering if it was the same book that she read.

"Brother Yi, you must be a very good Desolate Heaven Master, right?"

Tao'er was in a daze for very long before she asked. She guessed that back when Yi Yun was in the lower realm, he must have been a top Desolate Heaven Master in his world.

Yi Yun smiled and said, "Not really. I mainly spent my time on cultivating. I do want to learn the Desolate Heaven technique, but due to a lack of time, what I have learned is limited."

Yi Yun waved his hand. Ever since he came out of the Cloud Wilderness, he had been engaging in non-stop cultivation. Be it the threat from Shentu Nantian or the appearance of the Black-armored Demon God, they all gave Yi Yun a great sense of pressure.

Under the threat of life and death, how could he have the time to study the Desolate Heaven technique?

Now that he was in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, Yi Yun suddenly felt like he could relax.

Without a threat, he could lead a comfortable life, focusing on his cultivation, pondering over the laws and improve his cultivation realms.

After living a stressed life for so long, such a peaceful life was a kind of enjoyment.

Yi Yun was also thankful that he did not spend too much time on the Desolate Heaven technique. After all, the Tian Yuan world's Desolate Heaven technique and even the ancient techniques, were far inferior to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's. Now that he had come to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, the Desolate Heaven technique he came into contact with actually meant rebuilding what he had learned from the past.

Upon hearing what Yi Yun said, Tao'er was at a loss for words.

He was so good despite only learning it so superficially?

Tao'er muttered to herself and suddenly felt frustrated. The gap between them was too huge.

Yi Yun could tell what was on Tao'er's mind, so he said, "Your cultivation has just begun. I'll need to recuperate in Mt. Fengling anyway, so I can also study some of the Luo clan's Desolate Heaven technique. Since I have nothing to do these days, if there is any need, I can still help you with your energy control problems."

When Yi Yun said this, Tao'er was overjoyed. "Really? Thank you Brother Yi!"

Chapter 784: Injury Recovery

This was the first time that peace and quiet was restored to Yi Yun's life ever since he left the Tai Ah Divine City. Every day he would wake up and sit on Mt. Fengling in the morning where he would watch the rising fog in the mountains and meditate.

At noon, he would return to his cabin, and on a table in the cabin, there would be spiritual food awaiting him, specially cooked by Tao'er.

On Mt. Fengling, Tao'er was only responsible for Luo Fengling's meals, but since Luo Fengling was often in seclusion, it resulted in Tao'er having nothing to do most of the time. Being able to cook about a dozen meals a year was already considered a lot for her.

The reason why Tao'er studied the Desolate Heaven technique was partly because she wanted to accompany Luo Fengling and go far with her in the future, and partly to produce even better spiritual food.

While cooking spiritual food, if one knew the Desolate Heaven technique, they could process the ingredients, releasing all the beneficial Yuan Qi inside the food. It would result in the food being more easily absorbed and purer in energy as well.

Now, because of Yi Yun, Tao'er's talent in cooking could once again shine. Tao'er put in a lot of effort for Yi Yun's meals, because a master like Yi Yun was not easily found even if she tried looking.

Over the days, Yi Yun indulged in feasts. The spiritual food cooked by Tao'er was not only good for replenishing his Yuan Qi, they were extremely delicious as well.

Hence, even though Yi Yun had long reached the state of not needing to eat, he would soothe himself during lunchtime with the spiritual food prepared for him. He spent nearly an hour a day to enjoy the meal slowly.

Now, Yi Yun had mostly recovered from his injuries due to the spiritual and medicinal food, as well as the Purple Crystal's conditioning. Even Yi Yun himself was surprised at the speed at which he recovered.

He originally thought that he would take months to recover. But now, only half a month had passed since he was rescued by Luo Fengling.

And when it came to recuperation, it was always the hardest at the beginning. The closer one was to a full recovery, the faster the healing would be as there were more meridians that had recovered and joined up.

Yi Yun estimated that in a couple of days, he would fully recover from his injuries, reaching his peak state.

After a spiritual food lunch, Yi Yun would browse through the Luo clan's Desolate Heaven technique manuals in the afternoon and give Tao'er pointers. This was extremely helpful for Tao'er as the days went by.

However, the Desolate Heaven technique books that Yi Yun had access to were the basics of basics.

Over the past few days, Yi Yun had completed reading all the Desolate Heaven technique books he had access to. The only books that he was lacking were the ones that contained really high-level and profound methods.

"Brother Yi, those Desolate Heaven technique books are placed in the Fire Cloud State's library. If you become a Earth Fire Hall disciple, you can borrow even more books."

As days went by, Tao'er was more and more impressed by Yi Yun's freakish talent in the Desolate Heaven technique. She also believed that being only be able to read those basic books was extremely unworthy of Yi Yun's talents.

"Oh? Earth Fire Hall..."

Yi Yun faltered slightly. In the Tian Yuan world, he did not have any time to study the Desolate Heaven technique, but now in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, he had plenty of time.

A warrior's life was extremely long while Yi Yun's life had only just begun. The Purple Crystal made learning the Desolate Heaven technique extremely easy, an opportunity people yearned for but had no chance at it. If he did not use it properly, it would be a great waste.

The Luo clan's heritage was noted for its Desolate Heaven technique. Ignoring everything else, just the recovery relic that Luo Fengling gave to Yi Yun was enough to interest Yi Yun greatly.

That relic was naturally not very valuable, but the energy it contained could still heal his wounds by passing through his severed meridians.

What about a recovery relic that was even greater in value? It would be unimaginable how effective it would be for healing injuries.

Tao'er had also mentioned before that true top level relics were even coveted by the 12 Empyrean Heaven's Supremacies and Divine Lords.

If he could refine such relics, then be it for personal usage or to exchange for treasures, it would be extremely useful for his martial path.

Yi Yun did not care too much for the Fire Cloud State's Earth Fire Hall, but it was the beginning of his martial path in the 12 Empyrean Heavens.

Even though Yi Yun believed that he had unlimited potential, he was at present, just a Yuan Opening realm junior from a lower realm. As such, he had to take one step at a time. The Fire Cloud State's Earth Fire Hall was just his first step.

Besides, Yi Yun also planned on going to the Luo clan's royal capital. Becoming a core disciple of the Fire Cloud State was also one of the conditions he needed to fulfill in order to go there.

"How do I become a Earth Fire Hall disciple?" Yi Yun asked.

"Oh this, wow. For others it might be difficult, but it will definitely not be difficult for Brother Yi. Each of the 108 mountains of the Fire Cloud State has a chance to apply for an examination opportunity every year. Our Mt. Fengling has not used the chance this year, so we can just apply for it now."

"When the time comes, someone from headquarters will come here to test all the steward disciples and miscellaneous chores disciples. You just need to meet their requirements. As for the examination, there will be many topics. As long as someone is sufficiently excellent in any one aspect, they will become a Earth Fire Hall disciple."

"As for the Luo clan, it places greatest importance on a person's strength and Desolate Heaven technique talent. Being good at any of those two would make you be valued greatly by the Luo clan. When you take the examination, you just need to pass the Desolate Heaven technique alone. Brother Yi, you will definitely pass it easily."

When Tao'er knew that Yi Yun planned on becoming an Earth Fire Hall disciple, she was very delighted. As a maidservant, she was actually a miscellaneous chores disciple as well and she shared

the same position as Yi Yun. However, as Tao'er had a close relationship with Luo Fengling, so she had an extraordinary status on Mt. Fengling.

For example, the application for the Earth Fire Hall test was typically submitted by the mountain's owner, but Luo Fengling was frequently in seclusion, so the authority to submit the application was delegated to Tao'er.

Tao'er was extremely efficient. By night time, she had submitted the application to the Fire Cloud State's main mountain.

And following that, the Fire Cloud State's main mountain sent a Fire Cloud Decree.

The Fire Cloud Decree was naturally not only for Yi Yun, but for every steward disciple in Mt. Fengling. It also included Tao'er in the scope of the examination.

The decree was delivered by a ten thousand-year-old fire crane. When it flew above Mt. Fengling, it opened its mouth, shooting out the decree scroll. The decree scroll then exploded mid air revealing a series of text.

"In three days, there will be an Earth Fire Hall examination! All Mt. Fengling disciples are free to join!"

Upon seeing this row of text, the Mt. Fengling's miscellaneous chores disciple, especially Dong Hu, Bai Wei and Sun Lie, were

alerted to it, immediately causing excitement in Mt. Fengling.

There were about twenty miscellaneous chores disciples in Mt. Fengling, and most of the miscellaneous chores disciples had spent a long period of time here, so they knew the difficulty of the Earth Fire Hall examination. They knew that they were likely to fail, so they did not feel excited about it.

But Dong Hu, Bai Wei and Sun Lie were new to Mt. Fengling. They believed that being miscellaneous chores disciples in Mt. Fengling was a waste of their talent, believing that they had sufficient talent to become a higher level disciple. They only lacked the chance.

And now, the chance had befallen them. They did not know why there was this opportunity, but they believed that it was time for them to show their prowess, so how could they not be excited?

Chapter 785: Fairy Black Bamboo

Over the past few days, a majority of the miscellaneous chores disciple in Mt. Fengling spent their days as per usual. After all, despite it being an opportunity, the application for such an examination could be done once a year, so it was not considered rare.

As for Yi Yun, he was even calmer. He would follow his morning routine of meditating in the mountains, having a good meal at noon, and then enjoy a leisurely life in the afternoon by reading books and giving Tao'er pointers.

"Brother Yi, the Earth Fire Hall examination is nearly here. All the cultivation grounds of Mt. Fengling have been occupied by the newcomers, Dong Hu, Bai Wei and company. Are you not going to cultivate?" Tao'er could not help but ask.

The main cultivation ground was located where Mt. Fengling's spirit root was, but that was naturally used by Luo Fengling. There were a few remaining cultivation grounds left, but they were snapped up by the other miscellaneous chores disciples.

There was fierce competition amongst the disciples in the Luo clan. Basically, whoever had the ability would be the one to enjoy the resources. As for Yi Yun, he spent his days without competing for the cultivation grounds, he did not even take a look at them.

Yi Yun smiled and said, "My meridians have just healed, so there's no hurry."

The path of martial arts was difficult and long. Many geniuses worked very hard, so although Yi Yun was not as maniacal as Luo Fengling, he was never one to slack on his cultivation.

He only rested for a few days because of the injuries to his meridians, and while doing so, he enjoyed a peaceful life.

Upon hearing Yi Yun's explanation, Tao'er spat out her tongue, "Then, was the application submitted too hastily?"

"Not really, it's timely."

Yi Yun's meridians had just recovered and his body was flowing with Yuan Qi. The feeling of energy filling his entire body felt extremely good.

For warriors, after they were accustomed to powerful strength, they would find it very uncomfortable when they were suddenly weakened.

Three days later, above the Fire Cloud State mountains, there was a loud resounding shrill, as a red beam streaked across the mountains.

Everyone on Mt. Fengling looked up and they saw a red dot the size of a pigeon's egg in the sky. But in a blink of an eye, this red dot expanded rapidly and when it dropped towards Mt. Fengling, the red dot transformed into a 20–30 feet fire crane. Its two talons

were as sharp as blades, so when it landed, it sliced through Mt. Fengling's mountain rock like tofu.

When the crane spread its wings, it was wide enough to cover an elephant completely. Its feathers looked like they were on fire, making it look quite pretty.

Yi Yun knew that the Luo clan's ancestor was a divine beast related to fire and because they had inherited its bloodline, it was very common to see fire-elemental Fey beasts in the Luo clan.

If the fire crane in front of him was placed in the Tian Yuan world, it might be inferior to the Desolate race's Sacred Spirit, but it would definitely be one of the most powerful desolate beasts that ruled the Divine Wilderness.

The Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's mountain rock beneath its claws were much stronger than the mountain rock of the lower realm. Although it was not difficult to split it apart, just the fire crane's falling momentum was enough to slice it apart, showing how sharp the fire crane's claws were.

Standing on the fire crane was a woman with a voluptuous figure. She was dressed in black, and there was a black veil covering her face. She looked cold and distant, making her look at odds with her sultry figure.

On the woman's right breast, there was a black fire emblem. It indicated that she was one of the heads of the Luo clan's Earth Fire Hall.

The woman looked young, but she was actually thousands of years old.

Even without using his energy vision to probe the black-dressed woman's Yuan Qi fluctuations, Yi Yun could still sense that she was extremely powerful.

"Thank you for coming." Tao'er stuttered. She did not know who this woman was or what her status was, but she knew that there would definitely be no harm in bowing.

The black-dressed woman floated down from the fire crane's back and she used a pair of cold eyes to sweep across all the people present. Her voice was extremely cold as well, as she said, "Those participating in Mt. Fengling's examination this year, are they all here?"

"Yes, they are." Tao'er answered respectfully.

And behind Tao'er, there were a few miscellaneous chores disciple that had spent more than ten years on Mt. Fengling who were able to recognize the black-dressed woman.

Although Tao'er represented Luo Fengling on many matters regarding Mt. Fengling, in terms of experience and knowledge, she was inferior to those experienced people that had been around.

"It's Fairy Black Bamboo."

Someone transmitted his voice privately.

Fairy Black Bamboo had achieved the Dao as a black bamboo. She did not share the Luo name, but she enjoyed immense reputation in the Fire Cloud State. She usually disliked dealing with people, so for her to have such an impressive reputation, the only reason, other than her powerful strength, was because of the examinations she presided over. All of them were extremely harsh without any exceptions.

It even led to many disciples suffering serious injuries because of the examinations she presided over.

"Forget it. Since it's Fairy Black Bamboo, then let's not join in the fun..."

There were a few people on Mt. Fengling who wanted to try their luck. They hoped that they could become miscellaneous chores disciples in the Earth Fire Hall, but they were now having second thoughts.

Even if a more generous head from the Earth Fire Hall presided over an examination, their chances were already extremely slim, what more Fairy Black Bamboo. Not only would they fail, they might also be severely injured.

"Alright." The veiled woman lightly scanned everyone including Yi Yun. At that moment, there were people retreating backward with jitters. As for Dong Hu and company, they were desperately

trying to squeeze forward. They pushed the other miscellaneous chores disciples behind, hoping to leave an impression on Fairy Black Bamboo.

Noticing Dong Hu, Bai Wei and Sun Lie's excitement and anticipation, the other miscellaneous chores disciple mostly had a look of pity. People who had just arrived at the Fire Cloud State were usually filled with ambition, thinking that they were amazing. But very soon, they would suffer a setback and learn where they stood in this world.

No one alerted Dong Hu and company. The miscellaneous chores disciples did not have a harmonious relationship, so they only wished to see others suffer.

Yi Yun nonchalantly stood behind Dong Hu and company. As everyone else chose to collectively give up, there were only four people left participating in the examination.

The four people were all newcomers, so the scene immediately turned slightly odd.

Just the four of us?

Dong Hu was stunned momentarily, and he found it slightly weird. However, before he had time to ponder over it, Fairy Black Bamboo asked, "Do you have any questions regarding the examination's rules?"

Naturally, Dong Hu and company did not know the rules, but they did not know where to begin when Fairy Black Bamboo asked them if they had any doubts.

Instead, Bai Wei rolled her eyes as a nefarious thought came to her. She asked, "Fairy, I want to know if puppets are allowed during the examination?"

When she asked this question, Bai Wei gave Yi Yun a glance. There was a hint of mockery in the corner of her eye.

"Puppets are external objects. Unless one is skilled in the Dao of puppets, allowing them to use puppets refined by themselves, puppets cannot be used!"

Fairy Black Bamboo's words were within Bai Wei's expectations. How could an examination allow someone to rely on external powers? Yi Yun's puppet was naturally not refined by Yi Yun.

And of course, that was true. The Fire Cloud State naturally had a way to judge if a puppet was refined by the user himself, and for Yi Yun's Draco First True Gold avatar, it was actually refined by the Azure Yang Lord.

"Then there are no more questions!"

Dong Hu laughed out loud as he rubbed his fists. Previously, the three of them had nursed a grudge after being brutally beaten up by Yi Yun's puppet. Now they had a chance to settle scores.

Chapter 786: Sparring

Actually, when Dong Hu and company noticed the other miscellaneous chores disciples shrinking back in fear, they had also guessed that the Earth Fire Hall examination would be very difficult. However, so what if it was difficult? Wasn't the path of martial arts about facing difficulties?

They were recruited after the Luo clan experienced a great war in a bid to replenish their numbers. In the past tens of thousands of years, the Luo clan did not hold such a mass recruitment of disciples that spanned hundreds of planets. They were the ones who shone out of the hundreds of planets.

Dong Hu, Bai Wei and Sun Lie were eager to try, but at that moment, Yi Yun was observing Fairy Black Bamboo. He found it interesting that Fairy Black Bamboo clearly cultivated in fire-elemental laws, but the feeling she gave, or the aura she had, felt extremely cold like ice. Could fire-elemental laws be cultivated in this manner? It was truly strange.

"Since there are no objections, I shall announce the details of the examination. Firstly, I'll talk about my Earth Fire Hall. There are a total of a thousand people. And the disciples that participate in the examination in the Fire Cloud State come not only from the steward disciples from the 108 mountains, but also from exterior disciples that numbered even more. There would be more than 100,000 in total.

When Fairy Black Bamboo said this, even Dong Hu and company, who were brimming in confidence, felt their necks shrink and

their hearts beat furiously like a drum.

Yes, as steward disciples from the 108 mountains, they were actually considered the lucky ones to be chosen from amongst the exterior disciples. That alone numbered a few thousand.

And even more disciples, who were not qualified to become a steward disciple of the Heaven Fire Hall, were allocated all across the Fire Cloud State. These people made up the majority of the exterior disciples.

Earth Fire Hall only numbered in the dozens, so the competition was intense.

Fairy Black Bamboo carried on, "The Earth Fire Hall's examination has two types. The first is to accompany me to the Earth Fire Hall's Relic Hall and undergo a Desolate Heaven technique assessment! The other is an assessment of strength which can be done here! Any charms, pills or puppets not refined by yourself, as well as external powers, are not to be used. Those, who are inadequate, it is best you quit early. Do not have any hopes of luck for you will be wasting my time."

"Now, which examination would you choose?" Fairy Black Bamboo asked.

"Strength assessment!"

"The second one!"

Dong Hu and company spoke out. The Desolate Heaven technique assessment was extremely difficult, resulting in very few people being able to enter the Earth Fire Hall through the Desolate Heaven technique assessment. Furthermore, they did not know the Desolate Heaven technique either.

After Dong Hu was done speaking, he looked at Yi Yun. A teasing smile hung on his face as he waited for Yi Yun to make his choice.

Fairy Black Bamboo also looked at Yi Yun.

Yi Yun rubbed his chin. The test of the Desolate Heaven technique needed traveling to the Relic Hall? Indeed, the usage of the Desolate Heaven technique needed materials, array platforms, relic cauldrons and various other tools. Having the examination out in the open would affect the performance of some Desolate Heaven technique apprentices.

Yi Yun was indifferent as he did not care about the differences that these external conditions brought.

However, Yi Yun did not like trouble. An examination on the spot was easier, so he said, "I'll also take the strength assessment."

Be it the strength assessment or the Desolate Heaven technique assessment, Yi Yun did not mind any of them.

However, with him saying that, Tao'er was stunned. Brother Yi

chose the strength assessment? Wasn't Brother Yi supposed to participate in the Desolate Heaven technique assessment?

Brother Yi's Desolate Heaven technique would definitely not be a problem, but in terms of strength... Brother Yi just recovered from his injuries, so is it really fine for him to have his strength assessed?

At that moment, Tao'er naturally did not dare say a word. Fairy Black Bamboo was already continuing on. "Alright, if everyone wants a strength assessment, it will save time. Report your bone age, and show off your strength in front of me. It can be nomological insights or sparring against each other. Things like cultivation techniques you cultivate can also be showcased as you please. As long as you attract me in any single aspect, you will have the qualification to carry on."

The Earth Fire Hall did not have any explicit examination format. The examiners were given free reign on the assessments, and for that, the examinations that Fairy Black Bamboo presided over were always simple and brutal.

Yi Yun found it to be a refreshing method of assessment when he heard this. It was considered truly primal. He even believed that there would be a specially built array that they had to pass.

"We can spar against each other?" Dong Hu's eyes lit up. He liked sparring a lot.

He was not proficient showcasing his nomological insights or

cultivation techniques. As a member of the tiger species, he excelled in physical strength. The tiger species themselves acknowledged that they were inferior when it came to laws.

However, sparring was playing to his strengths.

He immediately looked at Yi Yun, his two eyes looked like a hunting dog that had seen its prey. This was a Heaven-given opportunity!

"Fairy, what happens if we injure the other party when sparring?" Dong Hu grabbed his knuckles and asked.

"The sword is blind, it is inevitable if one is injured because of a lack of strength." Fairy Black Bamboo said coldly, but what she said made Dong Hu feel a sense of exuberance. Fairy Black Bamboo had implicitly said that it was fine even if he caused injuries.

In the upcoming assessment, he wanted to sever Yi Yun's meridians and cause Yi Yun's old injuries to relapse, putting him in bed for half a year.

"Brother Hu, you want to fight Junior Brother Yi? I think I should be the one."

Noticing that Dong Hu wanted to fight Yi Yun, Sun Lie became anxious. Yi Yun was a human from the lower realm, and all his meridians were severed half a month ago as though he was about to die. Now, Yi Yun had probably not fully recovered from his

injuries, so how could he give the chance of revenge to Dong Hu?

What if Yi Yun was crippled by Dong Hu, wouldn't he not have the chance to beat Yi Yun up?

"Senior Brother Sun, Senior Brother Hu, both of you are close in strength, so both of you would be excellent sparring partners and you can put up a nice fight. This little sister of yours is weak, so leave Junior Brother Yi to me."

Bai Wei interjected, in a bid to vie for Yi Yun too. This was the first time Yi Yun heard them refer himself as 'Junior Brother Yi'.

The three people competed over Yi Yun mostly due to having a grudge with Yi Yun. This was naturally obvious to the miscellaneous chores disciple and Tao'er.

Many people gave Yi Yun odd looks, unsure how Yi Yun had made the three of them his enemies.

The trio being at odds against Yi Yun was clearly a disadvantage for him. And from the way the trio looked, they would definitely not go easy on Yi Yun.

At that moment, Yi Yun spoke. He did not look at Dong Hu and company but he asked Fairy Black Bamboo, "If it's sparring, how do we win the qualification?"

Fairy Black Bamboo said, "The final person standing will win the

qualification if they end the fight fast enough."

Fairy Black Bamboo answered. It was simple and brutal, but everyone was dumbfounded hearing this. It was not the final person who won, but the final person standing. This meant that the victor had to beat everyone down?

"Got it." Yi Yun said.

Dong Hu and company were also surprised. This meant that the three of them still had to fight one another.

The way the three of them looked at each other also turned strange. They were competitors too! Dong Hu and company had their hidden techniques and now, they were planning on revealing them.

Regardless of that, they had to first get rid of Yi Yun!

"Yi Yun, let's do it!" Dong Hu shouted as he suddenly attacked.

The bones in his body began to crackle as his figure increased in size. The clothes on his upper body had all burst, while his facial muscles turned distorted. His appearance became ferocious as tiger stripes began to appear on his body!

Chapter 787: Snow-Like Flying Sabers

Hu! Hu! Hu!

In addition to his body's transformation, Dong Hu's palms also transformed into tiger claws and they attacked with a rustling wind. Mixed in the wind from his palms was a faint tiger's roar.

Dragons descended from clouds and while tigers leaped from winds. The moment Dong Hu attacked, he had used all his strength. His tiger claws were like a palm leaf fan, that sent out a wind that was extremely overbearing in strength. A simple slap of his could shatter boulders, so hitting a human would definitely shatter a human's bones and sever his meridians.

Many of the Fey race would produced body features of their ancestors in battle. By stimulating the power of the Fey race's bloodline, they could augment their combat strength. Previously, in the battle between Dong Hu and the Draco First True Gold avatar, the Draco First True Gold avatar was too dominating, resulting in Dong Hu being immediately smacked down. He didn't even have the time to stimulate the power in his bloodline.

Without any explanation, Dong Hu had attacked Yi Yun. However, he was pissed when he saw Yi Yun's expression. He wanted to see fear and panic in on Yi Yun's face, but Yi Yun's calm look irritated him greatly.

As Yi Yun looked at Dong Hu's palms that were about to strike him, he wiped the interspatial ring on his right hand. Swish!

Swish! Swish! A few cold beams of light flew out of Yi Yun's interspatial ring.

These few flying sabers immediately met Dong Hu's palms after they appeared.

The flying sabers looked nondescript, but they were extremely fast.

Phew! The cold beams tore through the void and they went straight for Dong Hu's palms.

Dong Hu also noticed the flying sabers. They were considered speed-based weapons and they usually lacked strength. How much power could an insubstantial saber contain?

Dong Hu's tiger claws had extremely strong defense and they were also the weapon of his choice. He planned on smacking the flying sabers into smithereens before shattering Yi Yun's bones with a smack!

However, when Dong Hu hit the flying saber, there was only a dull thud. A tiger claw immediately turned bloody.

This small flying saber was too sharp!

Yi Yun remained expressionless. His Thousand Snow saber array was a top saber array, even in the 12 Empyrean Heavens. Every flying saber came from the same source. His consciousness and

Yuan Qi were all attached to every flying saber, so how could the attacks be weak?

Dong Hu had underestimated him and he had been overconfident.

Dong Hu's expression turned ugly while he tended to his injured tiger claws. The sabers were too sharp. In order to clinch victory, he had to dodge the flying sabers and attack Yi Yun's body!

"Roar!" Dong Hu roared angrily as a phantom tiger a hundred feet in size appeared behind him.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Yi Yun wiped his interspatial ring once again, causing more than a hundred cold beams to appear.

Upon seeing so many cold beams, Dong Hu's pupils immediately constricted.

How can there still be so many!?

At that moment, Yi Yun had stretched out his hand and waved, "Go!"

More than a hundred cold beams attacked Dong Hu, who no longer had time to attack. He could only resist.

However, even as he used all his strength to resist, the flying sabers still left multiple bloody lacerations on his body.

"There are so many flying sabers!" Dong Hu began to feel fear. He found it a struggle to cope with more than a hundred flying sabers.

"However, to control so many flying sabers, it will definitely be a drain on his consciousness and Yuan Qi. This kid probably can't last long!"

As Dong Hu resisted the flying sabers, he comforted himself, hoping to hold out after this wave of attacks.

However, at that moment, Dong Hu realized that there were even more cold beams around Yi Yun's body! They were all flying sabers, and together with the ones that Dong Hu was facing, there was a total of 999 flying sabers.

Nearly a thousand flying sabers formed Yi Yun's Thousand Snow Domain. In an instant, the temperature plunged as the sky seemed to be filled with dancing snowflakes. Dong Hu was completely enveloped by the snowstorm with no strength to resist.

This beautiful scene was like the snowfall in the mountains, but in it contained a fatal killing opportunity.

In the Thousand Snow Domain, every flying saber's trajectory was different, but they perfectly combined into a ceaseless saber

formation array. Even if one side was broken, this hole would be immediately mended.

Dong Hu believed that this saber array would be extremely draining on the consciousness and that Yi Yun could not last long doing so, but he never expected that not only was he able to manage it, but the number of flying sabers was also increasing!

Seeing the endless flying sabers accelerate, Dong Hu immediately felt his scalp go numb. He was initially struggling to resist, but as more and more lacerations appeared on his body, Dong Hu's energy began to wane. His reaction speed also slowed down.

As a result, the dense snowflakes of the Thousand Snow saber array immediately opened up more wounds on his body. The white snow mixed with red blood appeared as Dong Hu struggled in the saber array.

Dong Hu came from the tiger species so his physical strength was far superior to others. However, as his body gradually became dyed with blood, his motions began to retard. The tiger stripes and fur on his body were turning into a mangled mess from the lacerations.

Yi Yun's saber array did not lessen in any way. Instead, the flying snow appeared to become more and more aggressive.

Dong Hu wanted to break through the saber array to attack Yi Yun, but he could not get out of it. It was as though he was trapped in a blizzard. Yi Yun's consciousness was controlling every single

flying saber, so how could he allow Dong Hu to leave it?

A thousand flying sabers suddenly became one as it struck Dong Hu straight in the chest.

"Bam!"

Blood splattered as Dong Hu's right chest was completely penetrated. His body was sent flying by the flying sabers as he made a resigned roar before his massive body collapsed to the ground.

His body was already riddled with hundreds of holes. Even a tiger's body could not withstand such injuries.

After penetrating Dong Hu's chest, the 999 flying sabers did a turn in direction and lodged themselves in a mountain rock.

"Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!"

Blood stained the mountains, while the flying savers lodged themselves in the rock. Around Dong Hu's fallen body were numerous shiny sabers.

This scene sent a shudder down people's spine, especially Tao'er. She subconsciously opened her mouth wide. She never expected that this elder brother, who always looked so mild and polite, would be so fierce and terrifying in battle!

However, there was no doubt that the flying saber array was extremely beautiful despite the fatal killing intent it possessed. It merged skill and power together like a form of art. And Yi Yun, who controlled the saber array did not even take a step from the beginning to the end. It was truly like the saying of devising strategies in a command tent to kill enemies five hundred kilometers away.

This was a vast difference compared to Dong Hu, who used his strength and body to engage in brutal battle.

"This saber array... " Many miscellaneous chores disciple were staggered after seeing this battle. The difference was too great. As a human, Yi Yun was no doubt a top expert!

"Is Dong Hu alright? He wouldn't die, would he... ?"

Some people worried for Dong Hu. Although killing an opponent in a fair assessment would result in a lesser punishment, there would still be one.

"It's fine. Dong Hu doesn't seem to have any crucial points harmed."

Amongst the miscellaneous chores disciple, there were some with good eyesights. The flying sabers appeared to fill the sky, but when they landed on Dong Hu's body, they would avoid his heart, brain, death points and other crucial spots. The 999 flying sabers were controlled with great precision in a terrifying manner!

For the tiger species with immense vitality, as long as they did not receive consecutive strikes on their crucial spots, they would not die even if Yi Yun beat them till they were rid of their skin. Of course, being bedridden was certain.

Chapter 788: There Is No Medicine For Regret

Although Fairy Black Bamboo remained expressionless when she saw what Yi Yun had done, she was very astonished deep down. She knew how immense one's energy control needed to be in order to control the saber array in such a manner. Every single one of the 999 flying sabers were augmented with energy, and it was because of this energy that the flying sabers were controlled so freely.

And to say that the saber array had avoided Dong Hu's critical points was imprecise. To be precise, the saber array had attacked every spot on Dong Hu's body except the critical points!

Dong Hu's injuries were not as simple as superficial wounds. Many of his meridians had been severed!

These severed meridians would not result in any fatalities, but it was extremely difficult to recover from them.

This young man is very interesting!

Fairy Black Bamboo evaluated in her heart. As a member of the Fey race, the Luo clan was not sympathetic to the weak. Other than disallowing deliberately killing fellow disciples, the Luo clan would tacitly allow the competition of resources and cultivation techniques amongst the disciples.

Fairy Black Bamboo was similar too. She was cold, indifferent

and she disregarded life. One could know this just from examining the examinations she presided over. Many disciples would not only fail, but they would also be seriously injured.

And it was now that Fairy Black Bamboo began to pay notice to Yi Yun.

From the moment that Yi Yun had made his move to defeating Dong Hu, only several seconds had passed.

At that moment, he stretched out his hand for a move.

"Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!"

The 999 flying sabers flew out of the mountain rock and returned to Yi Yun's side while dancing randomly.

Following that, Yi Yun's gaze landed on Sun Lie and Bai Wei.

He remembered Fairy Black Bamboo's words. To win the qualification, he had to be the last one standing.

Dong Hu was down, so these two would naturally have to go down!

Upon coming into contact with Yi Yun's gaze, Sun Lie and Bai Wei immediately felt their hearts sink while their faces turned pale.

The moment the Thousand Snow saber array appeared, they had been staring with widened eyes. Upon seeing Dong Hu fall, they knew that Yi Yun was definitely not a lamb waiting to be slaughtered.

Now, the way that Yi Yun stared at them made them feel as though they were the lambs that were unable to put up a fight.

"Wait... Wait!"

Bai Wei hurriedly asked for a time out as she looked at Fairy Black Bamboo, hoping for her to stop the examination. The situation was apparent now. Yi Yun's strength clearly far exceeded the three of them.

However, Fairy Black Bamboo did not say a word as she completely ignored Bai Wei's gaze. It meant — the examination continues!

Before the examination began, Fairy Black Bamboo had said that those that lacked the ability were to quit early so as to not waste her time. Upon deciding to take the examination, they had to be prepared to be seriously injured!

Those miscellaneous chores disciple who knew of Fairy Black Bamboo's infamy had withdrawn early on obediently, while the trio were filled with ambition because they were new. They thought highly of themselves and they eagerly participated in the examination thinking it was an opportunity, so how could they

quit now?

Since they had made the choice, there was no way that they could ask for it to be stopped midway. Hence, Fairy Black Bamboo completely ignored Bai Wei's gaze.

"There's no other way out!"

Bai Wei clenched her teeth and stood together with Sun Lie.

"The rules did not say we can't fight together. Let's attack at the same time. One person will pin down the saber array while another will attack his body!" Sun Lie hurriedly transmitted his voice.

After having seen Dong Hu's outcome, the duo were already lacking confidence. This human was ruthless. It was unknown how long it would take to recover from such lacerating wounds.

"Alright! You restrain the saber array and I'll attack his body!" As Bai Wei said this, she directly attacked.

The Thousand Snow saber array was too terrifying, so Bai Wei admitted that she was definitely no match. As for Yi Yun's body, she believed that it was still injured and he had yet to recover. As a human, his body shouldn't be too strong, right?

Especially with Yi Yun appearing like a warrior that was adept at mental manipulation, the weakness of this kind of warrior was

probably his body.

At that moment of time, Bai Wei could no longer care if her judgment was accurate or not. Her only choice was to attack Yi Yun's body. It was the only chance for victory!

Seeing Bai Wei rush out, Sun Lie's expression changed. That woman!

He did not dare withstand the Thousand Snow saber array, but since Bai Wei had already attacked, he could only bite the bullet. If he did not, it was equivalent to giving Yi Yun a chance to beat them all down.

Sun Lie gritted his teeth as he charged at Yi Yun's Thousand Snow saber array.

"Ao woo!"

Sun Lie let out a long howl that didn't seem human. A layer of black fur appeared on his body as his back began to bend, as though his spine was a bow.

His four limbs landed on the ground as fangs appeared from his mouth. His eyes turned green and in a blink of an eye, he had turned into a werewolf.

Sun Lie did not have any hope at tearing the saber array apart. He just wished to last a little longer. When Bai Wei defeated Yi

Yun, there would be no one controlling the saber array, so it would fail without needing him to attack.

Seeing Sun Lie head towards the saber array and Bai Wei charging at him, Yi Yun naturally guessed at their intentions. However, he did not summon the Thousand Snow saber array to protect himself. Instead, he waited for Bai Wei's arrival.

"Yi Yun! I'll be returning that slap to you!" Bai Wei deeply remembered the humiliation of being slapped by a human in the first time in her life, and for that, she wanted to return it to Yi Yun a thousand times over.

Numerous flower petals appeared from her body. They looked extremely pretty, but their edges were as sharp as blades. Not only did she want to return a slap to Yi Yun, but she also wanted to disfigure Yi Yun.

Seeing the sky-filled petals whistling at him, a beam appeared in Yi Yun's eyes as he slowly raised his hand and tapped gently while facing the flower petals.

Doop!

As though it was the sound of a water droplet dripping, a blast of air spread out. The flower petals that filled the sky were immediately disturbed by the blast. This scene looked like there was an invisible water surface filling the sky, with those flower petals seemingly land on the water surface. Following that, they bobbed as a result of the water ripples.

While bobbing up and down, the flower petals that filled the sky quickly withered at a visible speed!

Withering concept!

Even without relying on the Death Soulwood, Yi Yun's demonstration of his Withering concept was enough to deal with Bai Wei.

The moment the Withering domain appeared, an aura of death was emanated. The sharp and matchless flower petals were unable to withstand the force of the death.

No matter how many new flower petals Bai Wei sent out, the moment they entered the Withering concept's domain, they rapidly withered. In front of Yi Yun, it was as though they instantly experienced a life of drying up and withering before being blown by the wind into the mud and rocks on Mt. Fengling, eventually turning to dust.

Upon seeing this scene, Bai Wei turned aghast. What was going on?

If it was about Yi Yun fighting Dong Hu from before, she might have felt fear when he used the saber array to defeat Dong Hu because it was a move that she could understand. It was just flying sabers and mental control.

But now, a simple tap of Yi Yun's finger, with him not appearing to use much energy, he had immediately dissipated her flower swords. Before she struck, her momentum had been dissipated!

"It's time for you to fall as well!"

Yi Yun took a step and he instantly appeared in front of Bai Wei. A palm that was augmented by the Withering concept hit Bai Wei's abdomen!

"Peng!"

Bai Wei's body quaked as instantly, she felt an energy filled with silent death rush into her dantian. It was consuming her Yuan Qi, youth and even her life force!

This was an immensely terrifying power that made people despair. After being struck by Yi Yun's palm, she felt as though she had lost all meaning to life.

Chapter 789: Gaining Recognition

Bai Wei slammed to the ground. The single hit from Yi Yun's palm looked extremely light. Bai Wei did not fly too far away, but what followed was a shocking scene.

People saw strands of white hair on Bai Wei's head. There were even wrinkles that began to appear on Bai Wei's face.

This is...

Everyone stared with widened eyes as they felt a chill shudder down their backs!

Previously, they were already astonished to see the Thousand Snow saber array lacerating Dong Hu till he had no undamaged spot on his skin, but they did not have this shuddering fear. It was as though Bai Wei's life had been stolen away by Yi Yun's single strike!

The Withering concept used by Yi Yun could indeed devour the vitality of the victim, and it would leave only half of their life spans.

However, against Bai Wei, whose strength was massively inferior, just a simple Withering strike was enough to cripple of Bai Wei's potential. That would also breach the rules of the organization.

The Luo clan encouraged competition amongst disciples, but it did not encourage maliciously crippling or killing fellow disciples. Hence, Yi Yun had shown mercy with this strike.

But even so, it caused Bai Wei's vitality to suffer. It required a long period of nursing to recover and to slowly remove the wrinkles on her face.

However, Bai Wei was unaware of this, she was even unaware of what had happened to her body. Only when she saw the other miscellaneous chores disciples looking at her in disbelief did she realize that something had happened to her body.

"Your face... "

Tao'er covered her mouth and could not bear but say. The moment this was said, Bai Wei immediately touched her face. For warriors, there was no need for mirrors, a scan of their perception was sufficient to inform them of their body changes.

"Ah!"

Bai Wei let out a sharp scream. As a woman, despite being member of the Fey race, she still cared for her beauty deeply.

Furthermore, youth implied potential. It implied how much one could achieve in the future. If she was old, what future did she have?

Bai Wei was completely distraught from shock. Her heart was on the brink of collapse, unsure if she could recover or not.

Upon seeing this scene, Sun Lie's body was shaking all over.

He wanted to plead with Yi Yun, and he even thought of just lying on the ground without getting up. That would make Yi Yun literally the last person standing.

But at that moment, Sun Lie was in the middle of the saber array. Just a momentary lapse of concentration caused more than a dozen flying sabers to stab into his body!

Sun Lie's defenses were much weaker than Dong Hu. He relied on a wolf's speed and agility, but with the flying sabers hitting him, his motions immediately turned retarded. Following that, a large swath of flying sabers hit Sun Lie!

"Bam! Bam! Bam!"

A powerful impact caused Sun Lie to fly up before he slammed heavily into the ground with blood splattering everywhere.

At that moment, the only person left standing was naturally only Yi Yun!

Instantly, the entire venue turned silent.

The saber array had eliminated two people, while one palm strike was enough to push Bai Wei to the brink of mental collapse. Not only had Yi Yun won, he had won at a sufficiently fast speed as requested by Fairy Black Bamboo!

Furthermore, Yi Yun was ruthless!

When the other miscellaneous chores disciples saw how Yi Yun was being targeted by the trio, they sensed that there was a feud between them.

With the premise of a feud, it was necessary to be ruthless.

In addition, Yi Yun was ruthless in his attacks, but he did not violate any of the Luo clan rules. It was something that gave people the creeps.

This person was not somewhat to be trifled with!

In the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, be it competition or murder, they were more intense than the Tian Yuan world. Compared to humans, the Fey race was even more savage. In order to rob or kill, humans had to find a reasonable explanation to do so, but the Fey race was more direct. They robbed and killed as they wished.

In such a situation, if one was submissive and engaged in acts of kindness, it was more likely for them to be bullied. They might even die without knowing why. Only those who were vicious and

decisive could lead a better life. They were even respected or revered.

As a human, Yi Yun would be discriminated in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, but because of today's defeating of three people, and in such a brutal manner, no one dared to despise his identity as a human.

The strong were respected no matter where it was.

"This human will be entering the Earth Fire Hall?"

People discussed in whispers. With the strength that Yi Yun had shown, it was definitely sufficient for him to enter the Earth Fire Hall. Be it the saber array or the odd law, just any one of them was sufficient to qualify him.

Furthermore, Yi Yun did not appear to have used his true strength against Dong Hu and company. It was hard to tell how much hidden strength he still had.

This made many Mt. Fengling miscellaneous chores disciples look at Yi Yun with eyes of jealousy and enviousness. Yi Yun was destined to have a bright future, an entity with a completely different fate from them. So what if they were members of the Fey race while Yi Yun was a human? Strength was everything.

Yi Yun looked at Fairy Black Bamboo and waited for her reply.

Previously, Fairy Black Bamboo had said that by quickly defeating the other three, the person would win the qualification to carry on.

The words "carry on" implied that Fairy Black Bamboo might still have prepared another round of assessment.

"What was the law you used at the end?" Fairy Black Bamboo suddenly asked.

"Withering!" Yi Yun answered tersely.

It was nothing to tell others what sort of law it was. The only thing that needed to be concealed was the moves from the nomological transformations and the energy trajectories of the law.

Upon hearing Yi Yun's answer, the surrounding miscellaneous chores disciples were somewhat stunned.

Law of Withering? A simple palm strike caused the flower petals to wither to dust...

It sounded incredible. The Fey race disciples present had inferior nomological comprehension compared to humans. It was natural for them to be astonished when they suddenly heard of such a rare but profound law.

Ignoring the Mt. Fengling miscellaneous chores disciples, even

Fairy Black Bamboo, who had lived for thousands of years, had yet to see the law that Yi Yun displayed.

The nomological Great Dao were numerous in number. This law was learned from the Dao Tree's leaf. It was a Dao Tree that formed at the beginning of Chaos, when the Universe was still in its infancy. The laws of the Dao Tree was an embodiment of the Universe's truth. And the Withering concept that Yi Yun gained insight into was deduced from that moment of the Dao Leaf dropping from the Dao Tree.

"Withering? Interesting."

Fairy Black Bamboo nodded her head slightly. Her nodding was an extremely rare act of admiration.

"Alright, you have passed the examination. From now on, you are an Earth Fire Hall disciple!"

A single sentence from Fairy Black Bamboo was enough to determine Yi Yun's status.

He passed?

Yi Yun faltered slightly, but he was not surprised. This was because the energy control and nomological concepts he revealed was sufficient. There was no need to participate in any further assessments. As for Fairy Black Bamboo, who was accustomed to saving time, she decided to skip this procedure.

"Follow me. I'll take you to the Earth Fire Hall to obtain your identity token."

As Fairy Black Bamboo said, she floated away.

Yi Yun was not excited after becoming an Earth Fire Hall disciple. It was something that was within expectations.

Yi Yun glanced at Tao'er and said, "I'll be heading to the Earth Fire Hall first. Once I've settled in, I'll come back to Mt. Fengling."

Chapter 790: Fire Cloud State Main Mountain

Luo Fengling's Mt. Fengling was a distance away from the Fire Cloud State's main mountain and this distance was not just filled with wilderness. Along the way, Yi Yun saw a few countries along with various mountain ranges and rivers, as he followed Fairy Black Bamboo.

Yi Yun's eyesight was excellent, so even though he was flying high in the sky, he could clearly see how people led their lives in these countries.

He saw bustling cities with street hawkers lining the sides of crowded streets. Of course, there were martial houses and bodyguard escort services established in them as well. From the looks of it, they did not look much different from the mortal world in the Tian Yuan world.

The only difference was the numerous Fey race members in the cities that had yet to complete their human manifestations. These members of the Fey race had tails or fur on their bodies. Some even had human faces but Fey bodies.

"The Fey race has mortals too?"

Yi Yun asked Fairy Black Bamboo as he looked at the Fey race, who clearly were average in strength. His impression of the Fey race was similar to that of spirits found in legendary novels. Members of the Fey race who lacked strength could manifest

themselves as humans?

"Yes." Fairy Black Bamboo was still flying ahead of Yi Yun. Despite the strong winds blowing, it did not lift her veil at all. "First generation Fey race members are animals or plants who achieve their Dao to become Fey after absorbing the world's essence, so they are naturally powerful. However, their offspring might not inherit their strength. Many Fey race bloodlines would become diluted over time. Eventually, it will make them ordinary and mortal. Such bloodlines would result in the birth of several Fey race mortals. Their strength is probably around the strength of humans at the body tempering stage.

"Although the Fey race values bloodlines, and a Fey race with a powerful bloodline will be stronger, there are always exceptions to anything. Some Fey race with normal bloodlines might, for various reasons or special opportunities, slowly strengthen themselves. They might even end up being stronger than Fey race with powerful bloodlines.

As she thought highly of Yi Yun, Fairy Black Bamboo patiently explained to Yi Yun to clear his doubts.

"So that's how it is."

Yi Yun nodded. A powerful Fey race having offspring with normal bloodlines was nothing out of the ordinary.

However, just like how people of ordinary birth were able to become a peerless Great Emperor, normal Fey race could also

become mighty.

"It looks like although the 12 Empyrean Heavens has many mighty figures, there is no lack of mortals as well. Not everyone is strong."

As Yi Yun pondered over it, they arrived at Fire Cloud State's main mountain.

Seeing Fire Cloud State's main mountain, Yi Yun was still somewhat shocked despite having been mentally prepared.

This mountain was not like any ordinary mountain which towered high into the sky. It was not considered tall, just about 100,000 feet tall. However, the land it covered was vast. It looked like it was a country itself.

On the mountain peak, there were long stretches of palaces as well as large spirit produce farms and herbal gardens. At that moment, the flowers were in full bloom, making it look like a colorful sea of flowers.

The melted snow on the mountain rushed down the mountain peak; it was not a tiny water stream, but a roaring river. The mountain was so massive that the melted snow could form massive rivers!

By the mountainside, the massive river was truncated, forming hundreds of waterfalls that had 10,000 feet drops. They roared

down like charging white dragons, striking the rock beneath with tumultuous rumbles!

"This is Fire Cloud State's main mountain? It's huge!"

The number of palaces that Yi Yun saw was nearly uncountable. Furthermore, in between the palaces stood numerous towering ancient trees. They looked spectacular and from the scale of the palaces, it was no problem for 100 million people to live in them!

Yi Yun knew that the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's rock was much stronger than the lower realm. Hence, in order to construct such a palace complex, it would require immense riches. Only a warrior's world was able to make constructions of such terrifying scale.

"There are so many palaces, can they all be inhabited?" Yi Yun could not help but ask. He knew that the number of mortal Fey race in the Fire Cloud State probably numbered above 10 billion, but the real Luo clan disciples were few in number. It seemed unlikely that all these palaces could be inhabited.

Fairy Black Bamboo said lightly, "The palaces are divided into many types. Other than the palaces of the Elders and deacons, the palaces below are where the Earth Fire Hall disciples stay. Every Earth Fire Hall disciple would be given their own palace complex.

"In the Fire Cloud State, there is no lack of mortal Fey that organize their own countries. However, the palaces that the Fey emperors of the mortal Fey countries live in can't even compare to

a Earth Fire Hall disciple's palatial residence." Fairy Black Bamboo said with a calm voice, but what she said shocked Yi Yun.

It was equivalent to saying that a palace that every Earth Fire Hall disciple was assigned was bigger and more luxurious than a mortal's palace!

Of course, the luxury did not refer to material objects like gold and silver, but mostly arrays for cultivation. All sorts of treasures, vessels, and the palace's construction material like timber and stone were all refined from valuable materials.

In the Fire Cloud State, every Heaven Fire Hall personal disciple was given a mountain, so although the Earth Fire Hall disciples were slightly inferior, they were still given palaces!

There were more than a thousand Earth Fire Hall disciples, which made it equivalent to more than 1000 palaces that were gathered together!

Adding the palaces owned by the Elders, deacons and the law-enforcers, they formed the Fire Cloud State main mountain's complex!

Upon noticing Yi Yun's expression, Fairy Black Bamboo said, "Do you think there are too many palaces? Actually, that's not true. The Luo clan has existed for nearly 100 million years. It has waxed and waned over this period, but it still managed to survive through the times. Although the Fire Cloud State's history is shorter, it also has 50 million years. Even if it takes 10,000 years to build a palace,

there would be an accumulation of 5000 palaces. So constructing such a palace complex is very easy."

When Fairy Black Bamboo said this, Yi Yun drew a gasp. Yes, with a hundred million years or fifty million years of history, it was something easily mentionable. But to truly experience it, the length of time was almost impossible to imagine.

Over such a long period of time, a faction's foundation and accumulated strength would reach a terrifying stage.

This palace complex was just a microcosm. The cost to constructing it was inevitably high or it would not have been able to withstand the tens of millions of years of elements. With so many palaces and so few disciples, allocating one palace to each Earth Fire Hall disciple was not considered an extravagant matter. If the palace was not used, it would only sit idle after all.

It was no wonder the miscellaneous chores disciples like Dong Hu, Bai Wei and Sun Lie were so eager to become Earth Fire Hall disciples.

They came from small tribal clans, and the moment they became Earth Fire Hall disciples, it could be said to be reaching the heavens in a single bound!

After all, it was the Fire Cloud State, the Luo clan's Fire Cloud State!

Ignoring the Fire Cloud State's Elders, just the Earth Fire Hall disciples already enjoyed a status much higher than a mortal Fey country's emperor. This could be judged from the amount of resources consumed by the Earth Fire Hall disciples' residence.

From mortals to warriors, it was like heaven and earth. This chasm-like gap was something that could not be closed just because of having the title of emperor! Just think about the difference in lifespans that differed by thousands of times, what more the difference in strength.

Chapter 791: Spirit Of The Earth Fire

When Yi Yun stood in front of the opulent palace complex that was assigned to him, he felt as though he had transformed into a princely aristocrat.

Be it in the Tian Yuan world or the Divine Wilderness in the past, although Yi Yun enjoyed a very high status, his standard of living was extremely simple, nothing like the luxurious life that was awaiting him.

Yi Yun looked up at the plaque hanging above the palace doors. On it, were three words written in large font — "Hua Yun Palace". What a coincidence that his palace's name also had the word "Yun".

On Fire Cloud State main mountain, there were 2000 palaces prepared for the Earth Fire Hall disciples, nearly twice the number of disciples. As one of the 2000 palaces, Hua Yun Palace had been left vacant for very long.

At that moment, two rows of servants stood in front of Yi Yun. They were a mix of young men and women.

They were responsible for the daily maintenance and cleaning of Hua Yun Palace as well as serving Yi Yun's daily needs.

Compared to the Heaven Fire Hall disciples, the number of servants the Earth Fire Hall disciples had were not fewer in number. The only difference was the servants of Hua Yun Palace

had a lower cultivation level. There were many servants in front of Yi Yun, but they were all at the Mortal Blood realm which made them equivalent to mortals.

"In the future, this Hua Yun Palace will be your place of residence. This is your disciple token and the Earth Fire Hall's information booklet."

As Fairy Black Bamboo spoke, she waved her hand, sending a stream of light onto Yi Yun's hand. It was an interspatial ring.

Anything handed to Earth Fire Hall disciples were stored in interspatial rings.

"Do you have any other questions?" Fairy Black Bamboo asked.

Yi Yun hesitated slightly as he considered his choice of words. Finally, he said, "Senior, this disciple wants to know, what is the fastest way of entering the Luo clan's royal capital?"

Having existed for 100 million years, the Luo clan's foundations were nearly unimaginable. Just a single Fire Cloud State had immense resources, it was sufficient to deeply shock Yi Yun when he saw the immensity of the Fire Cloud State main mountain.

However, a state of the Luo clan was definitely inferior to the royal capital!

The Luo clan's royal capital was indeed a place so vast with

brilliant prospects that it allowed much to be accomplished.

"Oh? You want to enter the Luo clan's royal capital?" Upon hearing Yi Yun's question, a glint flashed in Fairy Black Bamboo's eyes. She understood the overtones in Yi Yun's question, so she asked, "Why? Do you think that the Fire Cloud State is too small for your growth?"

When Fairy Black Bamboo said this, her eyes turned sharp, causing Yi Yun to falter slightly. With a smile, he said, "That is not what this disciple meant."

It was not true that Yi Yun believed that the Fire Cloud State was insufficient for his growth. In fact, with the Fire Cloud State's heritage, it was more than enough for a Yuan Opening realm warrior like him.

However, the higher one went in life, the less one would detest the largeness of the stage they were standing on. If he could go to the Luo clan's royal capital, Yi Yun would definitely not give up the opportunity. There were naturally better opportunities there compared to the Fire Cloud State.

"I know what you are thinking. It is good to have such ambition, but do not aim for more than you can handle. You only beat three new miscellaneous chores disciples at Mt. Fengling. Do you think that with that, you are qualified to enter the Luo clan's royal capital? You should know that the owner of Mt. Fengling, where you came from, Luo Fengling is also striving hard to enter the Luo clan's royal capital. Furthermore, she is one of the best amongst the Heaven Fire Hall disciples. There are 196 states in the Luo clan,

with numerous people like Luo Fengling. All of them share the same goal, cultivating hard without even a breather in a bid to enter the royal capital. Do you think you can beat all of them?"

Fairy Black Bamboo did not mince her words, living up to her harsh and demanding reputation. Many miscellaneous chores disciples had failed the examinations that she presided over. Besides ending up severely injured, they were also dealt a heavy blow to their confidence.

Fairy Black Bamboo was such a person. Young people, who did not know where they stood after having a bit of ability, would usually suffer a huge setback after taking her examinations.

Yi Yun did not respond to Fairy Black Bamboo's sharp retort with any arrogant discourse. He only said, "What Senior said is true. This junior has no intentions of belittling the Fire Cloud State, but this junior believes that Fire Cloud State disciples who do not aim to enter the Luo clan's royal capital would be stuck in the Fire Cloud State forever. I believe that even the Fire Cloud State does not want to nurture such disciples, am I right?"

Upon hearing Yi Yun's words, Fairy Black Bamboo's eyebrows pricked up. "You sure are confident. You are right, the Fire Cloud State wishes to nurture people that can leave the Fire Cloud State, becoming figures who have nature at their beck and call in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. By saying this, do you think you are capable of doing that?"

Every word from Fairy Black Bamboo was aggressive, but Yi Yun did not lose his stand because of her. He said, "The Ten Thousand

Fey Empyrean Heaven is filled with the strong, so to have nature at one's beck and call is naturally not simple. This junior does not know what his strength is worth in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, but everything needs to be vied for. What does Senior think?"

Yi Yun was steady with his words, with each one of them filled with confidence without any arrogance. Finally, Fairy Black Bamboo stopped aggressively questioning Yi Yun.

She shook her head and said lightly, "The royal capital is like a deep pool of water. The moment you enter the royal capital, you will inevitably set foot into its deep depths. Do not think that just the possession of some talent will allow you to flourish and prosper. The moment a big wave comes, your cultivation level is like a tiny boat in the waves, highly probable of capsizing in the big wave."

Fairy Black Bamboo suddenly said something deep and meaningful, stunning Yi Yun slightly.

The royal capital was like a deep pool of water?

From the sound of it, it did not only seem to be referring to the myriad of geniuses and intense competition in the royal capital. She was implying something deeper.

Since Fairy Black Bamboo did not intend to elaborate on it, Yi Yun did not probe any further. He secretly kept it in mind.

At that moment, Fairy Black Bamboo said again, "Read the Earth Fire Hall's booklet. If you obtain the recognition of the Spirit of the Earth Fire, I can arrange for you to enter the royal capital, but it will depend on your own skills as to whether you are able to."

"According to the Earth Fire Hall's rules, by passing my examination, you are considered to be an in-name disciple of mine. In twenty days, the Spirit of the Earth Fire will be at its strongest state. You just need to look for me when the time comes!"

"Spirit of the Earth Fire?"

Yi Yun hesitated for a moment before saying, "Yes, Senior, this junior shall remember."

After Fairy Black Bamboo was done speaking, she floated away.

She left Yi Yun alone holding the interspatial ring gently in his hand.

The servants were still standing by the side, awaiting Yi Yun's instructions.

Yi Yun took a glance at them. These servants were mostly chosen from mortal Fey. The males were barrel-chested and muscular, while the females were either pure and pleasant-looking or had enchanting and sensual faces.

The number of servants that resided in Fire Cloud State main

mountain probably numbered in the hundreds of thousands.

For mortal Fey, being able to enter the Fire Cloud State main mountain to serve the god-like strong was naturally a heartfelt desire and it was also an opportunity for them. Hence, the servants chosen by the Fire Cloud State were the most outstanding mortal Fey in terms of appearance and build. Those that failed in the looks department were barred from entry.

Yi Yun waved his hand and dismissed them, "Take your leave."

"Yes." The group of servants retreated with their backs bowed. This made Yi Yun chuckle to himself. This sure felt like leading a royal life.

Chapter 792: World Stone

In the inner sanctums of Hua Yun Palace, Yi Yun sat at an old-fashioned Chinese square table that could sit eight people. He was looking through the items in the interspatial ring.

The front of the token he was given was engraved with the words 'Fire Cloud Earth Fire Token' and on the back was the word 'Luo' written in ancient 12 Empyrean Heavens script.

There was a simple set of clothes, a uniform that all Luo clan Earth Fire Hall disciples wore.

There was nothing special about these items, but there was a round stone that attracted Yi Yun's attention.

The stone was crystalline and it exuded a strange energy fluctuation. Just holding it in his hand made his meridians seem to pulse.

World Stone?

Yi Yun knew about this stone. Back in Heaven Martial City, the siblings, Ah Niu and Ah Yu, had taken a World Stone to the Li Fire Sect in the hopes of selling it. They were nearly scammed by the Li Fire Sect before Yi Yun bought the World Stone from them, resulting in a conflict with the Li Fire Sect.

The World Stone was an ore that was created at the beginning of

the Universe. It could also be formed at the formation of a world.

The Universe was in a state of Chaos to begin with, and in essence, Chaos was energy. As the energy transformed into Yin and Yang, it also split Heaven and Earth apart, resulting in Wind, Rain, Thunder and Lightning, eventually giving rise to all living creatures.

However, not all Chaos energy could transform into Yin and Yang or the five elements. Some energy would condense together, forming Chaos Stones.

Chaos Stones were priceless treasures. This was because it recorded the beginnings of the Universe, and the trajectories of Origins energy made it contain the most profound laws.

Weaker than Chaos energy was World energy. It was Chaos energy, so despite them deviating from the Origins, they were still valuable.

World energy evolved into the 12 Empyrean Heavens, turning into the Three Thousand Worlds.

Similarly, not all World energy could evolve into everything in a world. There would also be some energy that eventually condensed into World Stones.

The value of World Stones were much inferior to Chaos Stones, but they could still be used as a precious treasure for cultivation.

In the large Universe where the 12 Empyrean Heavens formed, there were many worlds. Each world's birth would leave World Stones behind.

And even now, in the infinite Universe, there were new worlds evolving or emerging.

Similarly, there were old worlds collapsing or being destroyed, turning into endless energy.

So the production of World Stones could be said to be endless.

In the 12 Empyrean Heavens, World Stones were valuable mining resources that were fought over by major factions. The stones that were mined could be used as currency, allowing one to purchase priceless treasures.

For example, the valuable relics refined by the Luo clan royal capital's Desolate Heaven masters would eventually be auctioned off in exchange for World Stones.

The Fire Cloud State provided each disciple with a World Stone in the form of a salary. In accordance with the Luo clan's rules, every Earth Fire Hall was given one World Stone a year.

"This World Stone is better in quality than the one I obtained in the Tian Yuan world. Back in the Tian Yuan world, World Stones were extremely rare treasures. Most people could not even

recognize it. Even the shopkeeper of the Li Fire Sect shop failed to recognize it."

"However, in the 12 Earth Fire Hall, World Stones are plentiful. As the Large Worlds experience the long passage of time, they undergo life and death. Every birth of a new world would result in the formation of World Stones. It would become a large mineral deposit that can be mined. The numbers wouldn't be small, so every Earth Fire Hall disciple can be given one a year."

With a thousand Earth Fire Hall disciples, that meant a thousand World Stones in a year. Along with the Heaven Fire Hall disciples and the various Elders, the number of World Stones consumed a year would at least number ten thousand.

So many World Stones were just part of the normal operating expenses of one of the Luo clan's states, the Fire Cloud State. If this was the lower realm, it was simply unimaginable.

As for the World Stones, that was just a portion of the resources that the Luo clan consumed.

With such resources and conditions, along with heritage that was hundreds of times better, it was no wonder the mighty figures produced in the 12 Empyrean Heavens far exceeded those of the lower realms.

With this thought in mind, Yi Yun put the World Stone away. He began to read through the booklet which introduced the Earth Fire Hall's rules and the perks of being a Earth Fire Hall disciple.

One of the perks included the most important thing — Spirit of the Earth Fire.

In fact, the reason why the Earth Fire Hall was given its name had much to do with the Spirit of the Earth Fire beneath the Earth Fire Hall. The Spirit of the Earth Fire was actually a Earth Fire Spirit. This Fire Spirit had existed for hundreds of millions of years, and had been quietly burning in the Earth Fire Hall's main mountain.

"Spirit of the Earth Fire..."

The Spirit of the Earth Fire had two months a year when it burned the most intensely. Whenever that happened, many Earth Fire Hall disciples would mine its fire, using the Spirit of the Earth Fire to refine their bodies, meridians and acquire insight into fire-elemental laws.

The Fey race was naturally inferior to humans in nomological insight, but some powerful Fey with noble blood had a natural affinity with particular laws. And the Luo clan's bloodline happened to be associated with fire-elemental laws.

Now, there were still a few days left before the Spirit of the Earth Fire burned at its strongest, so Yi Yun ignored all of this. He took the World Stone out and placed it in front of him to absorb it.

The World Stone contained the purest world energy, so with the Purple Crystal in Yi Yun's body, it allowed him to absorb the world

energy at a speed many times faster than typical warriors.

Wisps of energy were absorbed by Yi Yun, slowly expanding Yi Yun's Yuan Foundation and nourishing the Dao Seed as well as the divine tree planted in it.

An unknown period of time passed as all the energy contained within the entire World Stone was absorbed cleanly by Yi Yun. Not a single ounce of energy was wasted. The energy had nourished Yi Yun's body and was now flowing in his meridians.

"Young Master."

A voice was heard from outside the door, making Yi Yun open his eyes.

Although he had been immersed in cultivation, he had split off a bit of his consciousness to monitor the outside world.

As his consciousness was projected outside the door, Yi Yun sensed an aura of a person at the Mortal Blood realm.

"Come in," Yi Yun said.

The door was pushed open as a beautiful girl dressed in green walked in. This girl looked no different to a human, but the only thing that betrayed her race was a furry tail on her back that wriggled around.

Yi Yun's memory was extremely good, so he had some impression of this girl. Her name was Hu'er, one of his servants.

"Young Master, in ten days time the most intense burning period of the Earth Fire Hall's Spirit of the Earth Fire will end. In accordance with Young Master's wishes, Hu'er is here to inform you." Hu'er's voice was sleek and soft. Although she was still young, the natural charm of the Fox race was already in an inchoate state. If this was a mortal world, it was sufficient to make kings of countries fall head over heels for her. They could even forgo their country for this beauty. This girl was still a fox pup, but if she had sufficient strength, even powerful warriors would be overwhelmed.

However, this level of charm did not affect Yi Yun in any way.

"I got it." Before Yi Yun absorbed the World Stone, he had transmitted his voice to these servants to pay attention to matters regarding the Spirit of the Earth Fire.

Chapter 793: Fire Spirit Palace

Yi Yun was very interested in the Spirit of the Earth Fire. Previously, in the lower realm's Fallen Star Gate, he had absorbed a pure Yang spirit. Back then, the pure Yang spirit was being devoured by an injured Golden Crow species. Yi Yun managed to kill the Golden Crow species and used the Purple Crystal to absorb the pure Yang spirit. Yi Yun's pure Yang body had much to do with the pure Yang spirit.

Now in the Fire Cloud State, there was this Spirit of the Earth Fire which aroused Yi Yun's curiosity. He wanted to know the differences between the Spirit of the Earth Fire and the pure Yang spirit.

"I'll be going now." Yi Yun stood up. With the World Stone's energy completely absorbed, even Yi Yun's Dao Tree had grown taller. It was even more lush with leaves.

From the late-stages of the Yuan Opening realm, he was already approaching perfection.

The girl, Hu'er, looked at her new master in astonishment. She had met him twice in total. The first time she saw him, she found him extremely powerful and like a sharp blade. Now weeks later, her master had grown even stronger. The aura he exuded was as deep as the ocean, making it seem extremely amazing.

The Earth Fire Hall was located at the peak of the main mountain, so from afar, the grandiose building appeared to stand

in mid air because of the mist that shrouded it.

The Earth Fire Hall's area was hundreds of times bigger than Yi Yun's Hua Yun Palace, and likewise, it was many times bigger than a city in the mortal world.

"The Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven sure is filled with amazing places." Yi Yun could not help but sigh. Having first come to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, just the Fire Cloud State alone had widened Yi Yun's horizons.

By then, Hu'er had already prepared a mount for Yi Yun.

After Yi Yun came to the Earth Fire Hall, a fire-elemental bird was assigned as his mount. It was an Inferno Gold Condor, whose plumage was completely golden in color. Its sharp talons looked like burning flames. When it stood up, it was about the height of a person and when it spread its wings, its wingspan was about ten feet wide.

This Inferno Gold Condor was a common bird seen in the Fire Cloud State, but it was relatively new to Yi Yun.

As he stepped onto the Inferno Gold Condor, it flew straight up into the clouds, passing over palace after palace. From afar, Yi Yun looked at the main hall of the Earth Fire Hall.

Soon, with a condor's screech, the Inferno Gold Condor landed in a wide square. Here, the square floor was filled with tiles that were

engraved with flame emblems. The Inferno Gold Condor, which could crush boulders with a swipe of its claws, landed heavily on the square, but it did not leave the slightest mark.

After Yi Yun jumped off the Inferno Gold Condor, it gave out a long screech and flew up. In a blink of an eye, it disappeared into the clouds.

"This is the Earth Fire Hall... " Yi Yun looked at the palace in front of him.

Just the square alone was staggering. Its edges seemed to connect to billowing clouds.

The square was bustling with people. From time to time, birds would land with their masters. Yi Yun learned from the booklet from before that other than the Spirit of the Earth Fire, the Earth Fire Hall also held numerous martial arts manuals. There were also armories and elixir storehouses in the Earth Fire Hall as well.

Being able to freely access the Earth Fire Hall was a great perk for the Earth Fire Hall disciples. This also showed how immense the resources that the warriors in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven had were.

Furthermore, this was only limited to the Earth Fire Hall disciples. If it was the Luo clan's royalty, it was unknown how much top resources they enjoyed.

Yi Yun headed to the Earth Fire Hall's entrance. He had been in the main mountain for almost two months, but this was the first time he came to the Earth Fire Hall. As he proceeded, he sized up the place and observed his surroundings.

Before coming, Hu'er informed Yi Yun that the Spirit of the Earth Fire was located in the middle of the Earth Fire Hall. So as Yi Yun observed, he walked straight towards the Earth Fire Hall's center.

"That junior brother in front, please hold on. May I know if you are Junior Brother Yi Yun?"

Yi Yun immediately stopped when he heard the sudden voice call out to him.

He looked over and he saw two unfamiliar faces who had called out to him.

The man and woman duo did not look too old. The man was below the age of thirty and he looked burly in his animal hide clothing. The girl looked like she was 16–17 years old. She was dressed in short pink robes, with white boots on her feet. Her hair was tied up into a bun, while her watery eyes flickered. She looked petite and cute.

However, Yi Yun had gone into seclusion the moment he came to Earth Fire Hall, so he did not know the duo.

"Master Black Bamboo told us that we have a new junior brother.

We have seen images of you." The girl's voice was very light and pleasing to the ears, as though it was the beautiful sound of a hundred larks. She sized up Yi Yun with a look of curiosity without concealing her taboo act. A girl like her was unworldly and pure, so she did not have the concept of shyness.

"We are also Master Black Bamboo's in-name disciples. My name is Man Dao and she is Yun Qiao'er," the man said.

"Oh, so it's Senior Brother Man Dao and Senior Sister Yun, nice to meet you," Yi Yun politely greeted back.

Upon hearing herself being called Senior Sister, Yun Qiao'er immediately turned excited. As she was young and was junior in ranking, being suddenly addressed as Senior Sister by someone who entered the tutelage later was something fresh to her. Her tiny face immediately turned excited and flushed red. Instantly, she became fond of Yi Yun.

"From the looks of your direction, you are also heading towards the Fire Spirit Palace. How many times have you been there?" Yun Qiao'er asked.

The place where the Spirit of the Earth Fire was stored was known as the Fire Spirit Palace.

"This is my first time here," Yi Yun said.

"Oh? This is your first time? We have already come here thrice."

Yun Qiao'er spoke in a lively manner. "The Spirit of the Earth Fire only burns at its peak for two months a year. We have to take advantage of this time to mine the fire to refine our bodies and gain nomological insight. How can coming here once be enough?"

Yi Yun smiled slightly. "I was busy prior to this."

"But there are only ten days left. What a pity..." Yun Qiao'er was still finding it a shame for Yi Yun.

Man Dao said by the side, "Alright, Junior Brother Yi has his own considerations. Junior Brother Yi, since this is your first time here, you can follow us. The Earth Fire Hall is massive, so it's easy to get lost."

"That's good." Yi Yun did not object.

Between the duo, Man Dao was a man of few words, while Yun Qiao'er kept chattering nonstop. From her, Yi Yun learned quite a lot about the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven as well as matters regarding the Earth Fire Hall.

The duo found interest in Yi Yun because they were surprised about how Yi Yun became a Earth Fire Hall disciple so quickly after coming from a lower realm. This was even revealed in a slip-up by Yun Qiao'er.

People from the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven had the impression that people from the lower realms were savages, so it

was impressive if a 'savage' could attain such achievements.

Yi Yun constantly smiled while listening. Having just come to the Earth Fire Hall, he was unfamiliar with the place and people. Hence, it was still quite interesting to have the duo explain things to him.

"The Spirit of the Earth Fire is extremely abstruse. It is said that during the birth of the world where the Fire Cloud State resides, the lands naturally produced a first wisp of fire. It was a manifestation of the most chaotic fire-elemental laws. However, the exact profoundness of it cannot be described by words. You will need to witness it for yourself, Junior Brother Yi." As Yun Qiao'er said, she revealed a cute smile. "That's the Fire Spirit Palace in front!"

Yi Yun looked forward and he saw a magnificent door erected. There was a plaque that had the words 'Fire Spirit Palace' engraved on it. The three words were like leaping flames. Just taking an additional glance at it made one's eyes seem to burn.

"—Luo Tianjun."

The mark indicated that the three words were inscribed by Luo Tianjun. The three words he wrote contained an intense nomological and Yuan Qi fluctuation. It also made one find it hard to peel their eyes away from it.

"Luo Tianjun. I wonder who he is in the Luo clan..."

Yi Yun muttered to himself and he was secretly amazed. Just the three words left behind contained a profound principle. This person, Luo Tianjun, was truly terrifying.

"Proceed with the registration over there and when you obtain an identity token, you can enter," Yun Qiao'er said while pointing at a giant Spirit Mastiff lying by the door.

The Spirit Mastiff was covered in silver fur and it was massive. It lay there motionless, so if Yun Qiao'er did not point it out, Yi Yun would not have sensed that it was a living thing.

Before they made their way to the front of the Spirit Mastiff, there were already a few people in the midst of registration.

The person in front was dressed in spirit silk clothes. A white fur cloak that looked oily smooth rested on his shoulders, making him look rather resplendent. He went towards the Spirit Mastiff and politely said, "Lord Mu Ao, I am Yang Zishan from Ling Xiao Palace and I am here to register."

Behind Yang Zishan, there were a few people who were similarly dressed. All of them were graceful in bearing, like scions in the mortal world.

Upon seeing these people, the chatty Yun Qiao'er immediately fell silent. Man Dao also slowed down his pace as his expression turned awkward.

The duo appeared to deliberately stand a distance away before their registration, as though they were waiting for Yang Zishan and company to be done with their registration.

Yi Yun could tell that Yun Qiao'er and Man Dao seemed to be afraid of Yang Zishan.

At that moment, Yang Zishan slowly turned his head behind and after seeing Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er, he revealed a smile that did not look like a smile. He said, "Isn't that Man Dao... How is it? Have you recovered from the injuries sustained during your gambling fight with me? You are coming to the Fire Spirit Palace to mine for fire so soon?"

Yang Zishan did not give Man Dao any face.

Upon hearing Yang Zishan's words, Man Dao's expression turned ashen.

"Senior Brother Man Dao, do not fall for his tricks. If you were to fight him in a gamble while in a fit of rage, you will still lose." Yun Qiao'er hurriedly tugged at Man Dao, whose face had flushed red.

Seeing Man Dao being stopped by Yun Qiao'er, Yang Zishan immediately revealed a cold sneer. At that moment, he turned his eyes to Yi Yun who was standing beside Yun Qiao'er. He asked curiously, "This is the first time we have met. Who are you?"

The Earth Fire Hall had a thousand disciples, but with a warrior's

memory, they could naturally recognize everyone. Hence, it was very striking to see a fresh face in Yi Yun.

"Junior Brother Yi, you can ignore him." Yun Qiao'er hurriedly told Yi Yun.

"Oh? That means you are also a disciple of Fairy Black Bamboo?" Yang Zishan sized up Yi Yun and said, "I am a disciple of Elder Heaven Scorpio. Nice to meet you."

Although Yang Zishan sounded polite, his eyes had a hint of aggression.

Yi Yun lightly clasped his fists and said, "Nice to meet you."

"Junior Brother Yi, Elder Heaven Scorpio does not have a good relationship with our master, so you must be careful of Yang Zishan. He has been in the Earth Fire Hall for a long period of time. His cultivation level has already reached the late-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm and he is much more powerful than us!" At that moment, Man Dao's Yuan Qi transmission rang in Yi Yun's ears.

Chapter 794: News Of Luo Huo'er

"Oh? The late-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm?"

A strange glint flashed in Yi Yun's eyes. A person at the late-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm was an entire realm above him!

If this was the Tian Yuan world, an opponent one entire realm above him was nothing. For example, the Sovereign of the Eventide, Yi Yun could have easily killed him without using his avatar or the Demon God puppet.

But here in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, what would be the outcome if he fought a person at the late-stages of the Heaven Ascension realm, one full realm above him?

Yi Yun had no idea. Although he was confident in his strength, he was not one to put on a supercilious act. The strength of the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven's geniuses was still an unknown to him. It was impossible to know without any probing attempts.

At that moment, Yang Zishan had already entered the Fire Spirit Palace, and it was Yi Yun and company's turn to register.

Seeing Yang Zishan leave, Man Dao said in a straightforward manner, "Junior Brother Yi, sorry about that. I made a fool of myself in front of you."

It was naturally an inglorious matter having lost a gambling fight with Yang Zishan. Of course, this had to do with Man Dao's cultivation level being lower than Yang Zishan's.

Man Dao was a person with a fiery temper to begin with. When he previously had a conflict with Yang Zishan, he was provoked, and having lost his reason, he made a bet that cost him three World Stones.

This made Man Dao feel the pinch in his heart for a long period of time.

"Victory and defeat are both common in battle. Losing once is nothing. However, Senior Brother Man Dao, you mentioned that our master, Fairy Black Bamboo, and Elder Heaven Scorpio are at odds with each other?"

"Yes," Man Dao said with a nod. "Our master is only a few thousand years old. She became an Earth Fire Hall Elder in the past one hundred years, allowing her to preside over the Earth Fire Hall's examinations. Our master's examinations are strict and tough, so the disciples that come out of it naturally aren't bad. The only thing is that not much time has passed since she began taking in disciples, so not only are there few disciples in number, but the amount of time for them to cultivate is also not much either. So in the Earth Fire Hall, we are considerably weak."

"In fact, this has all to do with factionalism..."

"Factionalism?" Yi Yun was surprised.

"That's right. Actually, it has nothing to do with trivial figures like us. It has to do with the power-struggle amongst the Luo clan's royal family. You probably didn't know, but in the past hundred years, the Luo clan fought a huge war. The stage of war even went all the way to the royal capital and the Luo clan was nearly wiped out. Although the Luo clan eventually won, His Majesty, the Luo Emperor suffered serious injuries in the war, so there are plans for succession."

"The few royal offspring that were designated for succession were evacuated during the war, but they were summoned back when the war was near its end. And the two most eligible people to inherit the throne are Prince Crimson Firmament and Princess Purple Spirit. They have each established their own factions."

"Our master is subordinate to Prince Pingnan, and Prince Pingnan is a close associate of Princess Purple Spirit. And since Elder Heaven Scorpio is a subordinate to Prince Crimson Firmament, they are naturally at odds."

A power-struggle between the royal offspring for the succession to the Luo empyrean throne?

Yi Yun was surprised to hear this as he asked, "Senior Brother Man Dao, you mentioned that the royal offspring, who were designated for succession, had been evacuated during the war. How many people were evacuated during the war?"

"How many could they evacuate? Just two." Man Dao answered

matter-of-factly. "Choosing a route of retreat isn't easy. Furthermore, evacuating the successors to ensure the continuation of the bloodline is reasonable. However, if the entire royal family was evacuated, then how can they count on the Luo clan's army to continue fighting the war?"

What Man Dao said was very reasonable.

Typically during the fall of a dynasty in the mortal world, only the princes were evacuated under the escort of loyal subjects. Many emperors would remain in the royal capital to be martyred.

If the emperor along with the entire royal family were to escape, how could they expect their subordinates to fight for them?

"In that case, could Princess Purple Spirit be Luo Huo'er?"

No wonder Fairy Black Bamboo had said that the royal capital was like a deep pool of water. After entering the royal capital, he would be swept up in the storm, and with his own cultivation level, it was easy for him to capsize.

So it had to do with the power struggles over the royal throne!

The throne of the Luo clan was extremely revered. It meant being a true overlord; what's more, an overlord of the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven. It was completely incomparable to the lower realms!

Ignoring the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, even for a family clan in the Tian Yuan world, the succession of power was usually preceded by bloody storm-like tests. The throne of the Luo clan could only be more so.

As low-level disciples, they were automatically placed in a faction according to their masters' allegiance. This was similar to mortal countries in which an examination candidate would automatically become a protégé of the examiner.

"Then what is the current situation regarding the struggle over the royal throne? Who has the upper hand?" Yi Yun asked using a voice transmission.

He wanted to know what situation Luo Huo'er was facing during this power-struggle.

Man Dao laughed and said, "I have no idea either. It's a matter regarding the royal offspring, something we aren't qualified to concern ourselves with. It's better if we enter Fire Spirit Palace."

Yi Yun gave up, seeing that he could not get anymore new information. It sure was a coincidence. After coming to the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, he had taken Fairy Black Bamboo's examination, resulting in him becoming related to Luo Huo'er once again.

However, Luo Huo'er was now a successor to the Luo clan's royal throne, while he was just a new disciple in the Earth Fire Hall. One of them was in the Luo clan royal capital, while the other was in

the Earth Fire Hall's Fire Spirit Palace. The distance that separated them was huge.

"Lord Mu Ao." Yun Qiao'er shouted with a clear voice while kneeling down.

Yi Yun turned his gaze towards the Spirit Mastiff and he could not help but feel curious.

This Spirit Mastiff did not seem like a living thing. He could not sense any breathing from its body, but its long silver fur and massive body made people feel a sense of trepidation.

Yang Zishan and Yun Qiao'er had both addressed this Spirit Mastiff as 'Lord', but it was unknown if this Spirit Mastiff was a desolate beast or a Fey race.

The moment Yun Qiao'er finished her sentence, Yi Yun felt a cold aura sweep across his body. In a trance, he felt as though he saw the Spirit Mastiff open its eyes that revealed a pair of pupils. Not only did they appear as though they had experienced the eternal passage of time, but they were also looking at him. However, on closer inspection, the Spirit Mastiff was still motionless. Its eyelids did not even move, let alone open its eyes.

This cold feeling also disappeared when he snapped out of the trance, but Yi Yun still felt like there was an eye staring at him from above.

He could only vaguely sense the penetrating gaze, but he could also sense that it was observing him.

"Alright, the registration is done. Let us go in." Yun Qiao'er and company were clearly experiencing the same feelings as Yi Yun. However, since they had been to the palace thrice already, they were already used to it. Yun Qiao'er looked forward to the mining of the fire, so she eagerly went ahead of them.

"Junior Brother Yi Yun, you have to be careful!" Yun Qiao'er's pleasant lark-like voice came from the front.

By the time Yi Yun passed through the Fire Spirit Palace's door, he understood why Yun Qiao'er warned him to be careful.

From the outside, the Fire Spirit Palace looked no different from any other palace. However, upon passing through the door, there was only a ladder that reached down far beyond what the eyes could see. The two sides of the ladder had two bean-sized flames that stretched deep down into the deepest depths of darkness.

Yun Qiao'er's figure flashed in front before she quickly disappeared in the darkness.

"The Spirit of the Earth Fire is at the bottom of the main peak." Man Dao said while he was standing the side.

Chapter 795: Mining Fire

On the way down the ladder, Yi Yun could still sense the persistence of the watching eye, but he simply ignored it. As he looked at the mountain rock that lined both sides of ladder, he noticed that the rock was dark red in color, as though it had been baked red by flames over eons. The texture felt like glass, and it was warm to the touch.

Furthermore, there were several ancient arcane symbols engraved on the mountain rock. These symbols, like the mountain rock, seemed to have existed from its initial birth. Just touching it allowed one to sense a primitive aura from eons ago.

If there was sufficient time, just cogitating these symbols would result in many benefits.

"These are array formations," said Yun Qiao'er, who had slowed down her speed to wait for them. She had noticed Yi Yun stroking the runic symbols along the way.

"Are these used to suppress the Spirit of the Earth Fire? Or are these energy-gathering arrays?" When Yi Yun heard that they were array formations, he only thought of two possibilities. Array formations engraved in the Fire Spirit Palace were possibly either used to gather Heaven Earth Yuan Qi or used to confine the fire-elemental energy to prevent the energy from dissipating.

Yun Qiao'er shook her head and said, "No, it's neither."

"Then what is it used for?" Yi Yun was somewhat intrigued.

"We don't know either. Too much time has passed, so maybe it is sealing something," Yun Qiao'er said.

Yi Yun looked down into the darkness. What was sealed beneath the deep depths at the bottom?

It was unimaginable what could have been sealed since time immemorial or the person who had sealed it...

For ordinary warriors, just descending this ladder was extremely difficult. However, for Yuan Opening realm warriors and those above, this ladder was nothing.

When they reached the end of the ladder, their surroundings were suddenly revealed to their eyes. It was a vast hall, and the roof was a few hundred feet away from the bottom. And in the hall, there was a magma pond.

The magma pond was extremely wide. Red-hot magma was bubbling on the surface and occasionally leaping high into the air. Even at a distance from the magma pond, a rolling heat wave surged at them. Warriors, who lacked the requisite cultivation levels, would be burnt to a crisp just by standing here.

It was even likely for Yuan Opening realm warriors to get poisoned by the toxic flames if they spent too much time here.

Yun Qiao'er and Man Dao had just begun mining the sacred fire to temper their bodies and gain insights into fire-elemental laws, so their tolerance towards the toxic fire was not considered strong. Just standing there for a moment caused Yun Qiao'er's face to glow red. As for Man Dao, his forehead was covered with a fine layer of sweat.

"Junior Brother Yi Yun, in order to resist the toxic fire here, you need to constantly circulate your Yuan Qi, so it is extremely draining. Typically, people can't last for long so they will have to leave. This is your first time here, so you might not be accustomed to it. Let's hurry up and..." As Yun Qiao'er spoke, she heard Yi Yun take a deep breath.

She turned her head, only to be astonished to find that not only was Yi Yun withstanding the toxic fire, there was not even a single droplet of sweat on his face as well.

Yi Yun had a pure Yang body to begin with. Pure Yang could be said to be the flames that resided in the stars, it was a level higher than fire-elemental laws.

Just a pure Yang body was nothing much in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven, but Yi Yun had the Purple Crystal. With the Purple Crystal naturally absorbing the toxic fire, it would convert the toxic fumes into pure energy that flowed through Yi Yun's body. And in certain ways, by standing here, instead of feeling discomfort, Yi Yun actually felt mentally and physically refreshed.

"I cultivate in pure Yang laws." Yi Yun rubbed his chin and

explained when he saw Yun Qiao'er and Man Dao look at him.

When Yun Qiao'er and Man Dao heard this, they were even more baffled. If pure Yang laws could easily resolve toxic fire, then what sort of pure Yang laws were they? Wasn't Yi Yun from a savage-like lower realm?

Despite being puzzled, they did not ask Yi Yun the mysteries of what he cultivated. After all, it involved his secrets.

"Junior Brother Yi Yun, that in front is the Spirit of the Earth Fire and it can only be described as extraordinary. The toxic fire produced by the magma here can't even compare to 10–20% of the Spirit of the Earth Fire."

Tracing Man Dao's gaze, Yi Yun looked at the white flower in the middle of the magma pond. Of course, it was not a flower, it was a dancing flame.

There was a white flame that burned in the magma, and it was none other than the Spirit of the Earth Fire!

The Spirit of the Earth Fire was purer than the pure Yang spirit that Yi Yun had absorbed in the lower realm by more than a thousand times or even ten thousand times!

Although it was just a plume of fire, the energy contained within was enough to raze the Tian Yuan world to the ground.

"The Spirit of the Earth Fire has existed since the birth of this land. Unless the land is destroyed, it will never extinguish." Man Dao followed up.

The Spirit of the Earth Fire was a manifestation of the Heaven and Earth fire-elemental laws and the fusion of fire-elemental laws. The Spirit of the Earth Fire's existence was extremely special, so it was no wonder Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er were surprised by Yi Yun's lack of fear towards the toxic fire.

Yang Zishan and company, who had arrived before them, had already occupied a corner to mine the fire.

Yang Zishan used both his hands to form a seal. Then, using his Yuan Qi, he split off a bean-sized fire spark from the Spirit of the Earth Fire, before bringing it in front of him.

It could be seen that just this tiny fire spark was producing heat waves in front of him. If not for using Yuan Qi to isolate the heat wave, his fur cloak would definitely have been burnt to a crisp.

Yang Zishan looked at the fire spark with a serious expression. He used Yuan Qi to carefully envelop the fire spark before opening his mouth.

Sou! The fire spark that was enveloped by Yuan Qi immediately flew into his mouth. Following that, Yang Zishan immediately sat down to meditate. Large amounts of hot vapor emitted from the top of his head. As he tightly closed his eyes, Yang Zishan's body produced intense Yuan Qi fluctuations. Clearly, he was in the

midst of absorbing the fire spark and gaining insight from it.

Yang Zishan was powerful, but he was also dedicated in his cultivation. Although he had noticed Yi Yun and company arrive, he did not distract himself by looking them in the eye.

Seeing Yang Zishan successfully mine the fire, Man Dao grunted unpleasantly before saying, "Let us begin as well. Junior Brother Yi, look at how it is done by us. Do not attempt it too easily. The Spirit of the Earth Fire is extremely dangerous."

Yi Yun and the duo each took a spot. There were dozens of Earth Fire Hall disciples standing around the magma pond mining the fire. As Yi Yun observed them, he realized that the fire sparks they mined were even smaller. After they absorbed it, they would usually grimace in pain. In comparison, Yang Zishan was much more at ease.

Although Man Dao was displeased with Yang Zishan, the fire spark he mined from the Spirit of the Earth Fire was just the size of a sesame seed. And just accomplishing this covered his forehead with sweat. Slowly, he pulled the fire spark in front of him.

The burning heat wave was something that he could barely withstand.

Yun Qiao'er also sat on the ground as she began to concentrate on the fire mining.

After looking around him, Yi Yun realized through his observations that mining fire was indeed very difficult.

One needed to use Yuan Qi to separate a portion from the Spirit of the Earth Fire. If too much was isolated, the warrior might not be able to control it, causing the fire spark to explode. The toxic fire might end up causing a backlash, resulting in outcomes that ranged from feeling discomfort to being severely injured.

Hence, all the warriors were extremely careful when they mined the fire. Even Yang Zishan did not dare to mine much fire. As for Yun Qiao'er and Man Dao, the amount they mined was even less.

Chapter 796: Fire-Spirit Transmutation

In the successful mining of fire, one's cultivation level and strength were non-trivial factors. However, the greatest factor was determined by one's understanding of fire-elemental laws.

The deeper one's understanding in fire-elemental laws was, the easier it was to mine the fire.

And the easier it was to mine the fire, the more fire-elemental energy could be obtained. This would then allow a person's understanding towards fire-elemental laws to deepen and turn more profound, as well as steadily strengthen one's cultivation level!

Hence, the Earth Fire Hall disciples' fire mining of the Spirit of the Earth Fire became something extremely important. The strong would become stronger, while the weak would become weaker.

In fact, not only Earth Fire Hall disciples came here, even Heaven Fire Hall disciples would occasionally make the trip here to mine for fire.

At that moment, amongst all the disciples mining fire, Yang Zishan was the one that had the deepest understanding of fire-elemental laws. The fire spark he mined was the biggest and he was also the fastest to absorb it amongst everyone present.

That bit of fire spark had sunk into his dantian and it had been mostly absorbed by him.

At that moment, Yang Zishan suddenly opened his eyes and he looked at Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er. Man Dao was at a critical stage of his fire-mining process, so he was sweating profusely and persisting with great effort.

Although he could barely persist on, Man Dao steadily refined the Earth fire, eliminating the chaotic energies from it, so as to make it easy for absorption.

If this went on, Man Dao would succeed in his fire mining in about 15 minutes.

Beside Man Dao, Yun Qiao'er's speed was slightly slower. The young lady's cultivation level was lower than Man Dao's to begin with, so it was a struggle for her as she barely held on. Her face was drenched in sweat.

Seeing the barely persisting Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er, a teasing smile suffused from the corners of Yang Zishan's lips. It was as though he was waiting for something.

At that moment, the few Earth Fire Hall disciples beside Yang Zishan were also done with their fire-mining. They had become Earth Fire Hall disciples for quite some time now, so although they were considered to be lackeys of Yang Zishan, they were not much weaker than Man Dao in terms of strength. Anyone who could enter the Earth Fire Hall was no ordinary person.

"Senior Brother Zishan, why have you stopped? With Senior

Brother Zishan's strength, mining another eight or ten times wouldn't even be a problem! Hahaha!" An Earth Fire Hall disciple that followed Yang Zishan around said to him with a smile.

The number of times one could mine fire was a close reflection of one's strength. At Man Dao's strength, he could do it three or four times at best, while Yun Qiao'er could only manage fewer. Two or three times would be her limit.

As for Yang Zishan, mining seven or eight times was indeed not a problem.

"Ha, I'll continue mining for you to see. Speaking about it, I happened to learn a new technique in the past few days. I made a tiny improvement in fire-elemental laws, so let me show it to all of you."

"Alright, please broaden my horizons!" The Earth Fire Hall disciples said in unison. Many of them were Elder Heaven Scorpio's disciples, a result of his long tenure at Earth Fire Hall.

Yang Zishan chuckled and suddenly looked at Man Dao. Targeting the tiny bit of fire spark in front of Man Dao, he shouted, "I'll let all of you see my new technique. Come, fire!"

Yang Zishan grabbed out at the air towards the fire spark in front of Man Dao!

The flickering fire spark, which was originally in front of Man

Dao, suddenly began to vibrate intensely after Yang Zishan made a telekinetic grab at it!

The fire spark turned erratic as though it was being strongly attracted by a force. It began flying towards Yang Zishan.

"What?"

Man Dao, who was in the midst of desperately refining the Earth fire, suddenly opened his eyes. His forehead was covered in bean-sized sweat droplets. He watched the Earth fire that he was nearly done refining being snatched away by Yang Zishan.

"Yang Zishan, you!"

Man Dao stared at Yang Zishan with a furious gaze. Refining a fire spark consumed a great deal of Yuan Qi. Yet, it had been snatched away by Yang Zishan just as it was almost refined! So how could Man Dao not be enraged?

He could only mine three or four times per trip to the Fire Spirit Palace because he would end up drained of all his Yuan Qi by the end of it. Now, the fire spark had been snatched by Yang Zishan after he had finished consuming the Yuan Qi needed for one fire-mining attempt. It was equivalent to wasting one chance of his, so how could he take this lying down!?

But at the same moment his anger flared, Man Dao was also shocked. The Earth fire that he was almost done refining was

equivalent to having a mark imprinted by him. It would have made it much easier for him to control the fire spark than Yang Zishan, but even so, it had still been snatched away by Yang Zishan.

This meant that Yang Zishan's control over Earth fire far surpassed his.

"Trying to snatch my Earth fire, dream on!"

Man Dao was a hot tempered person, so he could not tolerate such acts. He grabbed at the Earth fire that had yet to float far away. It was situated closer to Man Dao, and along with him having refined it previously, his grab should in principle allow him to easily bring it back.

However, at that moment, a layer of red mist emitted from Yang Zishan's palm. It was like rolling red smoke that enveloped the fire spark, segregating Man Dao's nomological force from the Earth fire.

Following that, the Earth fire in Man Dao's hands seemed to gain an intelligence. It started flying towards Yang Zishan on its own accord, as though it had its own consciousness and knew how to make a choice.

"Fire-Spirit Transmutation!"

Standing not far from Yang Zishan, an Earth Fire Hall disciple's eyes lit up when he saw this scene.

Many disciples who were planning on continuing mining for fire stopped at that moment to watch the struggle.

Fire-Spirit Transmutation was to endow flames with a little spirituality, allowing the fire to seem to possess life. This was an extremely difficult to master fire-elemental law. From the looks of it, Yang Zishan's mentioning of his tiny improvement in fire-elemental laws referred to Fire-Spirit Transmutation!

This wasn't a 'tiny improvement', it was basically a qualitative leap in fire control!

Once the flame possessed some spiritually, then be it controlling the flame for an attack or the manipulation of the flame, there would be nothing in comparison!

Fire-Spirit Transmutation... The bastard, Yang Zishan, sure had the skills!

Man Dao clenched his teeth. This form of nomological fire control far exceeded his, so it was no wonder that Yang Zishan dared to snatch his fire.

Having a flame that he had mostly refined snatched away made Man Dao aggrieved, but what could he do? Refining Earth fire in the Fire Spirit Palace was meritocratic. It was not against the rules to snatch the flames of others, and you could only blame yourself for being weak if it happened to you.

However, under normal circumstances, nobody would deliberately snatch the flames of others. This was something that did not benefit oneself, but Yang Zishan and Man Dao were at odds with each other, or to be precise, Elder Heaven Scorpio and Fairy Black Bamboo were at odds with each other. The factional struggles were passed down from Elders to disciples!

"Haha, Man Dao, you sure are down on your luck to meet me today. Don't think of mining any bit of fire sparks. If you are indignant about it, have a gambling fight with me!"

While competing with Man Dao over the control of the flame, Yang Zishan was still able to distract him by speaking. As for Man Dao, he was sweating bullets, so it was immediately clear who had the upper hand.

At that moment, Yang Zishan suddenly looked at Yun Qiao'er. The Earth fire in front of her was about 60–70% done, and she could barely persist.

Yang Zishan grinned and shouted, "Fire, come!"

He used his other hand and grabbed at the air, causing the Earth fire in front of Yun Qiao'er to immediately move. The second Earth fire also began floating towards Yang Zishan.

Chapter 797: Fire, come

"Ah!" Yun Qiao'er exclaimed as she widened her black eyes. She watched helplessly as she lost control of the Earth fire that she had painstakingly refined. It was already flying towards Yang Zishan.

"My Earth fire!"

Yun Qiao'er turned anxious as she hurriedly circulated her Yuan Qi in a bid to summon the Earth fire back. But she was much weaker than Man Dao, so how could she compete with Yang Zishan?

"You... You..." Yun Qiao'er nearly became a weeping beauty. She had just joined the Earth Fire Hall, only a few days earlier than Yi Yun, so she had never experienced such bullying before. The intense competition between Earth Fire Hall disciples far exceeded Yun Qiao'er's expectations.

"Yang Zishan! Do you still consider yourself a man after bullying a young lady?" Man Dao angrily cursed Yang Zishan, having realized that he could neither control his flame nor help Yun Qiao'er.

Yang Zishan guffawed and said, "Man Dao, why are you saying such retarded words? In a warrior's world, there is only weak and strong. When has there been a consideration between men and women? If you are weak, shut up and take a good beating. Saying such words that are no different than a shrew shouting abuse on the streets will only make people look down on you."

Once Yang Zishan said this, the surrounding Earth Fire Hall disciples began to laugh heartily.

The factional battle in the Luo clan had always been intense. Although the Luo clan knew of the situation, they ignored it and allowed it to proceed. After all, only competition gave birth to the strong.

"Come over!"

Yang Zishan tapped at the Earth fire that Yun Qiao'er refined, causing the second Earth fire to also seem to have a mind of its own.

The two Earth fire sparks were already completely under Yang Zishan's control.

He joined his hands together, merging the fire sparks together. It went from two fire sparks to a small flame.

This small flame slowly floated towards Yang Zishan. It was already completely out of Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er's control.

"Senior Brother Man Dao, I... "

Yun Qiao'er was close to tears. She was naturally aggrieved having been bullied in such a manner. This was a flame that she

had painstakingly refined. There was only a short period of time that the Spirit of the Earth Fire burned at its strongest every year. Missing it would greatly affect her cultivation progress.

Man Dao nearly crushed his teeth from gritting them. He hated himself for being useless. He had always treated this newly arrived junior sister as a true younger sister. He had taken care of her, hoping that she would not be bullied in the Earth Fire Hall, but now, he had implicated her.

At that moment, the small Earth fire flame was already in Yang Zishan's hands.

After snatching Yun Qiao'er's flame, Yang Zishan looked at Yi Yun. He said with a teasing tone, as though he was a cat playing with a mouse, "The newly arrived Junior Brother Yi, aren't you going to mine for fire? Why don't you try mining a plume once?"

Yang Zishan's mockery caused all the Earth Fire Hall disciples around him to burst out into laughter. His intentions were clear — with him here today, none of Fairy Black Bamboo's disciples were to mine for fire. If Yi Yun were to mine for fire, it would naturally be snatched away.

"Hey new kid, mine one."

"Come on, do your best at mining. Don't stand on ceremony!"

Yang Zishan's junior brothers began booing as they poked fun at

Yi Yun. From their point of view, Yi Yun was likely worse than Yun Qiao'er, so he was naturally nothing to speak of in front of Yang Zishan.

Upon seeing this situation, Yi Yun only smiled. He did not begin to mine the fire, but he said instead, "I'll just take a look first. There's no hurry."

"What?"

Hearing Yi Yun speak such self-mocking words as though he was humiliating himself, Yang Zishan's junior brothers all laughed hysterically.

This new kid sure was a wonder. It was inconceivable for him to say such words considering the circumstances. He even said that there was 'no hurry'?

Man Dao's face was already red. To be bullied this badly, he really wanted to charge up and engage in a huge battle.

However, he knew that the three of them put together were no match for Yang Zishan alone.

After grasping 'Fire-Spirit Transmutation' laws, Yang Zishan enjoyed a qualitative leap over his control over Earth fire. A sneer suffused on his lips as he looked at Man Dao who was full of killing intent.

"You want to fight? You can choose to have a gambling fight with me. I'll give you a handicap of a hand!"

Yang Zishan knew that even though Man Dao was a hot-tempered and simple-minded person, Man Dao would not be stupid enough to bet with him again after losing a gambling fight with him previously. After all, the stakes were not small, something Man Dao could not afford to lose.

Hence, he deliberately provoked Man Dao by giving a hand's handicap!

With this said, the surrounding Earth Fire Hall disciples around Yang Zishan immediately began to boo.

"This trash. Even if Senior Brother Zishan gives him a handicap of a hand, he would definitely not dare to accept it."

"With just this bit of guts, if I had any say, he should just honestly go home and be a farmer!"

The bunch of Earth Fire Hall disciples began to sneer sarcastically. Man Dao clenched his fists tightly, causing the veins on his fists to bulge. At that moment, he was like a simmering volcano!

He was feeling hate, but he could still endure it!

He knew very well that after Yang Zishan gained insights into

Fire-Spirit Transmutation, his strength had improved greatly.

In the previous gamble fight, Man Dao became deeply aware of the differences in their strength. He had not made any significant improvements recently, so if he were to truly battle Yang Zishan, he would still lose despite a handicap!

If he lost another match, not only would he lose all his possessions, he would also be ridiculed by Elder Heaven Scorpio's disciples. He would be mocked for his stupidity and how he overestimated his strength. If that happened, his confidence would be destroyed.

He had to bear the humiliation he received today. He could not suffer in the future because of a fit of anger.

As Man Dao was being ridiculed while Yun Qiao'er looked pitiful, Yang Zishan was mostly done refining the Earth fire in his hands.

Yang Zishan was a person who liked to make his power be felt. In front of his junior brothers, and in front of his enemies, he showed off with boundless enthusiasm. Hence, he spared no effort to use 'Fire-Spirit Transmutation' laws. Although it was draining on his Yuan Qi, it also allowed him to refine the Earth fire at a faster speed.

In less than a minute, Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er's Earth fire was about 80% refined by him.

Of course, Yang Zishan did not do it with great ease. 'Fire-Spirit Transmutation' was extremely draining on the body, but thankfully, as long as he refined this Earth fire, the energy within it would replenish his stamina, allowing him to continue mining for fire.

Noticing how things were pretty much over and that staying behind was only inviting humiliation on themselves, Man Dao gritted his teeth and said, "Let us go! Junior Brother Yi, I'm sorry. I wanted to bring you here to mine for fire and show you how it's done but we ended up meeting my enemy. Not only did I not teach you how to mine for fire, but you also can't mine it now."

Man Dao sighed. Even a girl like Yun Qiao'er was not spared by Yang Zishan, what more Yi Yun? As disciples of Fairy Black Bamboo, there was no hope for Yi Yun to mine for the fire under Yang Zishan's watchful eyes.

He planned on protecting Yi Yun and Yun Qiao'er, but with the way things had played out, he was truly a failure.

However, Yi Yun shook his head and he did not wish to leave. Instead, he said, "Senior Brother Man Dao, Yang Zishan's Earth fire is almost done refining."

Oh?

After a momentary shock, Man Dao turned to look at Yang Zishan. In order to play up his ability, Yang Zishan had worked hard at using 'Fire-Spirit Transmutation' laws, doubling the speed

at which he refined the Earth fire, so it was nearly 90% done.

Yang Zishan was about to swallow the Earth fire into his stomach!

Man Dao did not know why Yi Yun said such a hanging sentence. Was he waiting for Yang Zishan to finish refining the Earth fire? What else could they do other than watch Yang Zishan show off?

In the moment that Man Dao was pondering over Yi Yun's words, Yang Zishan was done refining the Earth fire.

With a laugh, he opened his mouth and he was about to swallow the Earth fire. He did not even bother wiping the sweat from his forehead.

The Earth fire was already in the bag.

At that moment, a wicked smile suffused on Yi Yun's lips. He had waited so long, all for this moment.

He looked straight at the Earth fire that was about to be swallowed by Yang Zishan. With a thought, he interfaced his spiritual energy with the Purple Crystal and targeted the plume of Earth fire.

Weng!

The Earth fire suddenly quivered. Having been attracted by the Purple Crystal's power, it came to a halt immediately.

At that moment, Yang Zishan's mouth had just closed, but because of the Earth fire stopping, it caused him to only swallow empty air.

"What?"

Yang Zishan was stunned as he did not know what had happened to the Earth fire. As for the other Earth Fire Hall disciples around him, they were also stunned momentarily. What was the profound reason behind Yang Zishan's failure at swallowing the fire?

At that moment, Yi Yun stretched out his hand and gently waved at the Earth fire.

"Fire, come!"

"Whew!"

With a howl, the flame in front of Yang Zishan tore through the void. It flew hastily towards Yi Yun, like a rabbit that had escaped from its cage.

Yang Zishan stared with widened eyes. What was going on?

Chapter 798: Taste Of One's Own Medicine

The Earth fire flew at an astonishing speed away from Yang Zishan as he instantly lost control over it. The turn of events alarmed Yang Zishan. He came to the Spirit Fire Hall for fire-mining every year in his long tenure at Earth Fire Hall, and he had done so numerous times, but he had never encountered such a situation!

Regardless of how much he powered his spiritual energy, he could not stop the Earth fire from escaping his grasp. Only after several seconds did the plume of Earth fire gradually come to a stop.

And when the Earth fire stopped, it caused Yang Zishan's face to sink completely.

He saw a youth garbed in clothes that only newly recruited Earth Fire Hall disciples would wear. The youth had nonchalantly stretched out his palm, while the plume of Earth fire stably stopped above it, burning in absolute silence.

"Senior Brother Zishan, this... "

The other Earth Fire Hall disciples were stunned. At that moment, they were able to tell that the flight of the Earth fire was obviously not done deliberately by Yang Zishan, it had been stolen by the new disciple from the Black Bamboo faction!

They had been cheering for Yang Zishan over his ostentatious

moves, but they never expected that in a blink of an eye, before he was done flaunting his skills, he had a taste of his own medicine!

"Senior Brother Zishan must have been careless. As the Earth fire was done refining, he relaxed and lowered his spiritual control, allowing the rascal to take advantage."

As a veteran in the Earth Fire Hall, Yang Zishan's talent was top class in the entire Earth Fire Hall. If not, those people would not have chosen to be his lackeys.

Yang Zishan was outstanding, and he had even grasped "Fire-Spirit Transmutation" laws. But this made it even harder for them to believe that a veteran like Yang Zishan would lose to a newcomer. Furthermore, the other person appeared to be... human!?

"Your name is Yi Yun?" Yang Zishan stared at Yi Yun. He had previously heard Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er mention Yi Yun's name, and he originally believed that Yi Yun was Man Dao's lackey, so he did not even look at Yi Yun straight. He never expected to fail miserably at an easy task of absorbing the Earth fire at that instantaneous moment.

It was true that his spiritual control was at its most relaxed state the moment he was done refining the Earth fire, but even so, this kid should not have the ability to snatch the Earth fire that was already in his hands.

"Why ask when you already know?" Yi Yun gently stretched out

his index finger as the tiny flame began to burn silently above his finger tip, like any ordinary flame.

At that moment, Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er, who were standing beside Yi Yun, were staring with widened eyes. Just like the other Earth Fire Hall disciples, they were watching the tiny plume of fire burning above Yi Yun's finger tip with looks of disbelief.

Was this really a flame separated from the Spirit of the Earth Fire? Why did it appear so obedient?

Furthermore, it was obvious that Junior Brother Yi Yun came from the lower realm, so how could he have mastered such profound laws?

Although they had no clue as to what was going on, Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er felt their pent-up anger be released when they saw Yang Zishan's expression. Yang Zishan definitely never expected a newly recruited disciple to be able to snatch his Earth fire.

Man Dao laughed out loudly. "Yang Zishan, didn't you previously say that newly-recruited Junior Brother Yi should 'try mining a plume once'? This is the first time our newly-recruited Junior Brother Yi has come to the Fire Spirit Palace and it is also his first time mining for fire!"

Man Dao kept repeating 'newly-recruited Junior Brother Yi', and he deliberately emphasized 'newly-recruited' as an attempt to figuratively smack Yang Zishan in the face.

Weren't you being awesome? But didn't you end up getting cleaned up by a newly-recruited disciple?

Yun Qiao'er was also one who did not spare her words when reason was on her side. Having been bullied to near tears, how could she pass the opportunity to ridicule?

"Ze Ze Ze, didn't all of you just tell Junior Brother Yi to 'not stand on ceremony'? Now Junior Brother has done according to your wishes and really didn't stand on ceremony. Shouldn't all of you be happy? Speaking of which, why are all your faces looking so bad now? Are you sick?"

Yun Qiao'er's words were harsh to the ear, stabbing at Yang Zishan where it hurt him the most. Yang Zishan's face turned ashen.

"Fine! Fine! It's indeed true that newborn calves are not afraid of tigers, to be able to rob me of my flame at the instant that I finished refining my Earth fire, that sure is some talent!"

Yang Zishan was a person who liked to make his power felt. Having suddenly been smacked in the face by Yi Yun just as he was flaunting his powers was something he found intolerable.

He came from a prominent family and he had outstanding talent. Even in the Earth Fire Hall, he was the center of attention. All of this was something that he enjoyed greatly, but now, he had suffered in the hands of a disciple who had just come into contact with Earth fire. At that moment in time, Yang Zishan felt a

hundred times more humiliated than what Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er had done felt moments ago.

"Senior Brother Zishan, show him something good!"

"That guy only caught you by surprise, he has no abilities!"

Yang Zishan's lackeys immediately roared out.

Yang Zishan's expression turned grim. He knew deep down that Yi Yun was not one to be trifled with, but he already had a tiger by the tail, so he had to persist on. He planned on using all his strength and push all his insights in fire-elemental laws to the extreme!

"Ha!" Yang Zishan roared out loudly as all the joints in his body produced snapping sounds. Small scales suddenly began appearing on his face, and his pupils turned spindle-shaped.

Snake!

Yang Zishan's ancestor was a python that had achieved its Dao. Furthermore, he had ancestors with fire python bloodlines, so Yang Zishan had a natural affinity with fire-elemental laws.

"He is transforming just like that?" Man Dao was stunned. Yang Zishan was really going all out!

For Yang Zishan to transform in order to snatch Earth fire from Yi Yun, it clearly showed how powerful a rival Yi Yun really was. He could only snatch the Earth fire from Yi Yun by giving his all. He could only be appeased by doing so, or this matter would become a disgrace the rest of his life.

"Ah—"

A hissing sound that did not sound human at all came from Yang Zishan's thoracic cavity. His body was burning in flames as he aimed at the flame above Yi Yun's finger and suddenly tapped.

Fire-Spirit Transmutation!

A violent and dominating Yuan Qi surged into the Earth fire floating above Yi Yun's palm.

"Hu! Hu! Hu!"

The flame began to dance erratically as though it had been given a spirit by Yang Zishan.

Around Yang Zishan, many disciples had their eyes lit up.

It was still Fire-Spirit Transmutation! By giving the flame some spirituality, it would naturally bias itself to the person who had given it a spirit, Yang Zishan!

As for Yi Yun, since he was young disciple that recently arrived, how could he possess fire-elemental laws as profound as Fire-Spirit Transmutation?

"Fire, come!" Yang Zishan roared as he forcefully grabbed at the fire plume in Yi Yun's hand.

The flame began to dance violently as though it was about to fly out of Yi Yun's grasp.

Yi Yun looked at the dancing flame as a tiny sneer suffused on his lips.

Fire-Spirit Transmutation that gives the flame a spirit?

If you could truly bestow life to the flame, allowing this flame to turn into Fey, then the Purple Crystal would be powerless against it since the Purple Crystal could not control energy that possessed life.

However, bestowing life was equivalent to creating an intelligent creature, so how could it be that simple? Even peerless mighty figures lacked this ability. Only the Universe, with its infinite energy could produce life over hundreds of millions of years.

Now, it was just a trace of spirituality that was forcefully augmented by Yang Zishan. It was equivalent to Yang Zishan's will, so for this Yi Yun did not care for it at all.

Spiritual energy burst forth from the Purple Crystal!

"Extinguish!"

The hand that Yi Yun held the Earth fire suddenly gripped into a fist!

Boom!

With an explosion, Yang Zishan's consciousness that was contained within the flame was destroyed with Yi Yun's grip.

Having his split-off consciousness wiped out, Yang Zishan grunted as his face suddenly turned pale.

At that moment, Yi Yun spread his hand again out as the Earth fire plume burned silently as usual above Yi Yun's palm.

In Yang Zishan's eyes, the flames danced, as though they were mocking him. This made his expression turn extremely ugly.

And beside Yang Zishan, the Earth Fire Hall disciples that had cheered Yang Zishan on were like roosters grabbed by the neck. They were lost for words.

How did he do it?

Yang Zishan had transformed and used Fire-Spirit Transmutation laws. It looked extremely powerful, while Yi Yun did not seem to unleash any powerful laws, so how did he destroy Yang Zishan's Fire-Spirit Transmutation?

"That guy is a freak!" An Earth Fire Hall disciple murmured. Despite being reluctant, he had to admit the facts. Yi Yun had just entered the Earth Fire Hall and he was already this powerful during his first fire-mining. The Earth Fire Hall disciples had all experienced their first fire-mining. Back then, they had to be extremely careful and they had made repeated attempts. Some even failed several times before succeeding.

But for Yi Yun, not only was he mining for fire as though he was picking cotton, he had even directly snatched a plume of Earth fire from Yang Zishan. It was inconceivable.

Chapter 799: Fire-Elemental Laws

At that moment, Yang Zishan's face sank so low that it looked like a falling water droplet. Having transformed and having used 'Fire-Spirit Transmutation' was already pushing his limits. It consumed a great deal of his Yuan Qi and with his consciousness and will that he attached to the Earth fire being wiped away, not only did Yang Zishan feel an energy deficit, but he also felt a dull pain in his mind.

As for Yi Yun, he appeared extremely relaxed... Yang Zishan hatefully looked at the fire plume in Yi Yun's hand and he knew that he had embarrassed himself greatly today. If he continued to stay here, there was no way that he could win any face back and he would even have to continue enduring Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er's ridicule.

Yang Zishan gritted his teeth and said softly, "We won't be fire-mining today. Let us go!"

Having said that, Yang Zishan flicked his sleeves and left.

The disciples of Elder Heaven Scorpio looked at each other. They had to leave before they even began mining for fire?

However, the moment they saw Yi Yun looking at them with a faint smile that did not look like a smile, they felt their hearts jump from the wicked look he had.

"Let's go. Even if we manage to mine any fire, it will be snatched

by him. Senior Brother Zishan can't even protect his Earth fire after using Fire-Spirit Transmutation, so it will be pointless even if we tried."

"Waiting here stupidly will just be an embarrassment. Who knew that this newly recruited disciple would be this powerful. Since we are inferior, sigh... "

These disciples shook their heads and sighed before they left.

Although they could not mine for fire today, there were still ten days left and Yi Yun could not be constantly here. Everyone would spend at least a few days to consolidate the results of their fire-mining, so they could always come again.

Fairy Black Bamboo had only become an Earth Fire Hall Elder relatively recently, so she did not have many disciples under her. As for Elder Heaven Scorpio, he was one of the Elders with the largest faction and he had numerous disciples under him.

The competition between warriors in the Ten Thousand Fey Empyrean Heaven was intense. Everything depended on strength. As Fairy Black Bamboo's disciples were few in number, they were often marginalized and oppressed. Although Man Dao had joined the Earth Fire Hall for quite a period of time, this was the first day he managed to vent his anger and be elated.

Seeing Yang Zishan and company leave in a hurry, Man Dao laughed loudly from behind, "Scramming so quickly? What happened to all the majesty from before!?"

Yun Qiao'er also laughed and said, "With my Junior Brother Yi Yun here, it's best you don't come to Fire Spirit Palace, or you will only make a fool of yourself!"

Yi Yun watched as Elder Heaven Scorpio's disciples left. Before Yang Zishan took his leave, his snakelike eyes looked at him with a vicious gaze, as though he had been stared at by a poisonous snake.

Yi Yun knew Yang Zishan hated him completely, but he did not mind. His goal was the Luo clan royal capital. Even the Heaven Fire Hall was not his goal, so an Earth Fire Hall disciple was naturally not worth his attention.

In a blink of an eye, Fire Spirit Palace was half-empty. The remaining Earth Fire Hall disciples did not have Elder Heaven Scorpio as their master so although they did not leave, they were somewhat flustered as they looked at Yi Yun.

No one knew if Yi Yun would snatch their Earth fire from them. This was not something that could be faulted on in the Earth Fire Hall. Whoever had the strength would naturally use their strength to bully others.

Yi Yun glanced at the dancing fire plume in his palm. In the pale redness, there was the slightest bit of whiteness in it. Even though it was enveloped in Yuan Qi, looking at it still allowed him to sense a tremendous amount of energy contained within the tiny fire plume.

It was unknown what would happen if he absorbed such a pure fire-elemental energy.

Yi Yun casually sat down beside the magma pond and faced the bubbling red magma and the hot gases that surged at him. Despite the hot gases being able to bake a warrior to death, Yi Yun appeared indifferent and at ease.

He opened his mouth and the fire plume immediately appeared like it had life in it. It immediately beelined into Yi Yun's mouth.

Seeing Yi Yun begin to absorb his Earth fire without giving them a second look, the other worried Earth Fire Hall disciples finally relaxed. From the looks of it, Yi Yun was not a perverse tyrant.

They could continue mining for fire, but even though Yi Yun paid no attention to them, they still tacitly distanced themselves from him by retreating to another corner of the magma pond.

"We can continue fire-mining." Man Dao said to Yun Qiao'er.

They quietly sat somewhere relatively far from Yi Yun, both as a way to stand guard for him as well as leave him a quiet space.

Boom!

The moment the Earth fire was absorbed into his abdomen and him closing his eyes, Yi Yun immediately felt a raging heat explode in his body. It was as though his dantian was consumed in burning

flames.

If he was a person who was being exposed to fire-elemental laws the first time, absorbing such an Earth fire plume was no different to throwing himself into a fire for grilling. Furthermore, it was a grilling that began from the organs, so it was obvious how excruciating painful it would be.

This was a flame formed at the birth of a new world. It contained a trace of the world's will when it was first born. And it was this will that made the Earth fire become so ferocious. When warriors absorbed the Earth fire, not only would they experience a burning sensation from the Earth fire's energy, but their minds would also experience the impact of the world's will.

In this state of suffering, one had to remain calm and concentrated. One had to guide the Earth fire to refine one's body and also meditate over this trace of will and the fire-elemental laws. The absorbing of Earth fire was much more difficult than fire-mining.

As for Yi Yun, not only did he have a pure Yang body, but he also had the Purple Crystal. When this heat blasted throughout his body, it made him feel extremely comfortable!

The Earth fire's heat surged out madly from his dantian, spreading to every corner of his body. The vicious fire toxins were directly absorbed by the Purple Crystal, leaving behind the purest fire-elemental nomological energy.

Yi Yun's meridians were repeatedly being tempered as though they were being struck by a hammer. Although he had recovered from his serious injuries from before, he still had hidden injuries left behind in his meridians. It needed gradual nourishments to be healed completely, but now, under the impact of the Earth fire, all the hidden injuries in his meridians were healed.

At that moment, his meridians were like glass that had been tempered clean of its impurities. The hidden injuries disappeared as his meridians turned crystalline. Furthermore, they became increasingly tough.

A fire-elemental will that appeared at the birth of a world embedded itself in Yi Yun's mind. Instantly, he felt as though he was immersed in a gaseous mass that was extremely cold. Darkness surrounded him.

His internals were extremely hot, but his external body was extremely cold.

This extreme contrast was difficult to bear.

And at that moment, it was as though his dantian could no longer withstand such a flame. The gaseous mass suddenly contracted before exploding!

Extreme heat was born from extreme cold, and it filled everything with a fire cloud after the explosion!

Yi Yun sensed a white light flash before his eyes as he immediately opened his eyes.

"That was... "

It was likely a scene from the first birth of the Fire Cloud State. The Spirit of the Earth Fire was that ray of extreme heat that was born in the extreme cold right from the beginning.

Extreme Yin gives birth to Yang, extreme Yang gives birth to Yin...

Yi Yun recalled the scene from before and he immediately thought of Fairy Black Bamboo.

Fairy Black Bamboo clearly cultivated fire-elemental laws, but her aura was icy-cold.

Yi Yun had a pure Yang body, so he was extreme Yang, but when he duo cultivated with Lin Xintong in the Great Empress Heart Sutra, what Lin Xintong gave him was extreme Yin energy. By mixing and blending between pure Yin and Yang, they complemented each other.

Yi Yun felt that the scene he just saw seemed to introduce another side of fire-elemental laws to him.

He was surprised to learn that absorbing a tiny fire plume had not only mended his meridians, but it had also given him new

insights into fire-elemental laws, astonishing Yi Yun. The Spirit of the Earth Fire was indeed extraordinary.

Chapter 800: Yuan Opening Perfection

With his pure Yang body and Purple Crystal, Yi Yun absorbed the tiny fire plume at an extremely rapid pace.

It could even be said that the bit of fire that Yang Zishan had refined was not even enough for his absorption.

After Yi Yun devoured all the energy in the Earth fire, he felt unsatisfied. Immediately, he cast his eyes on the white flame burning silently in the middle of the magma pond.

Spirit of the Earth Fire! Before this, Yi Yun had seen how the others had mined for fire, so now, it was time for him to mine it.

Yi Yun reached out his hand and made a grab. His Yuan Qi formed a claw mid air as it extracted a small fire plume. Typically when Yuan Qi approached the Spirit of the Earth Fire, it would experience a terrifying energy repulsion, but with the Purple Crystal, Yi Yun was able to control his Yuan Qi claw with extreme precision.

Yi Yun's mining of fire could only be described as easy. The Earth fire he mined was much bigger than the one Yang Zishan mined from before. Others would usually only mine a tiny fire spark, but what Yi Yun mined was a fire plume the size of a pinky.

Actually, Yi Yun's limit was far more than that, but one had to slowly chew during a meal. There was no need for him to swallow too much, as it would be more difficult to refine and absorb.

However, just this tiny bit of fire rendered many people speechless when they saw it.

He could really devour such a powerful plume of Earth fire?

Before they had the time to think any further, Yi Yun opened his mouth and swallowed the Earth fire.

Without taking a break, Yi Yun immediately embarked on absorbing his second Earth fire after his first.

Upon seeing this, many people gulped. He swallowed it just like that? That appeared too simple, so simple as though he was just eating a peanut. It was no wonder that he could snatch the Earth fire from Yang Zishan. From the looks of it, this youth's affinity with fire-elemental laws far exceeded others.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Yi Yun felt as though there was magma bubbling in his body. The bubbling heat waves blasted every corner of his body, allowing his bones and meridians to be repeatedly tempered.

Boiling steam poured out of every pore on Yi Yun's body as it enveloped him.

If a warrior without sufficient strength stood beside Yi Yun, he

would have been instantly vaporized by the steam. His flesh and bones would be reduced to flying ashes.

In the rolling red mist, Yi Yun had his eyes tightly closed. His skin exuded a redness while his meridians and blood vessels were clearly visible. Furthermore, one could clearly see the pulsing flow in Yi Yun's vessels.

During a tempering process, a blacksmith would strike at piece of a metal hundreds of times, sending sparks everywhere. And through that, a magnificent sword would slowly emerge from a red-hot piece of metal.

Now, Yi Yun was such a metal that was being tempered. His meridians were becoming tougher and as the impurities in his blood and body were expelled with the mist, Yi Yun felt his Yuan Qi becoming even purer.

Exhale, inhale. The surrounding Yuan Qi was flowing into Yi Yun's body without end before it carried on being refined by the Earth fire.

The Purple Crystal was also helping Yi Yun in his absorption. An ordinary warrior could only absorb about 50% of the Earth fire's energy, but Yi Yun could even convert the fire toxins into energy, absorbing them all.

Not a single bit of this tiny cluster of flames was wasted by Yi Yun.

Yi Yun's breathing became slower and slower, and every breath he took was like a whale sucking in air. He could take in a tremendous amount of Yuan Qi.

His bones also turned transparent like glass, as they revealed a translucent crystalline texture.

The surrounding Yuan Qi was absorbed by Yi Yun, leaving a vacuum behind. Even the fire toxins in the magma pond were being absorbed by Yi Yun.

Boom! Inside Yi Yun's body, it was as though there was a raging river that was rumbling like thunder.

Both Man Dao and Yun Qiao'er heard the noise.

They opened their eyes and they traced where the sound came from and finally saw a red mist lingering around Yi Yun's body. Furthermore, the mist were constantly spinning like a cyclone. As for Yi Yun, he was located in the eye of the storm.

The cyclone became more and more intense that even the Yuan Qi from the other corners of the Fire Spirit Palace was absorbed by Yi Yun.

Those Earth Fire Hall disciples that had distanced themselves immediately opened their eyes in astonishment, despite being in the midst of absorbing the Earth fire. They then looked at Yi Yun with expressions of extreme shock.

What was he doing?

The cyclone quickly reached dozens of feet high. If a cyclone was on a water surface, it could suck up large amounts of water to form a pillar, and it was known as a water spout.

And now, with the cyclone above the magma pond, it was sucking up large amounts of magma, forming a thick magma pillar. It looked completely shocking!

At that moment, Yun Qiao'er gasped quietly, "The Spirit of the Earth Fire!"

Everyone saw it. The rapidly spinning mist was slowly approaching the Spirit of the Earth Fire and fire sparks from the Spirit of the Earth Fire were constantly being absorbed into the mist.

Yi Yun's body was like a bottomless pit. It constantly absorbed as though it was a melting pot that could absorb even more Earth fire.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The other Earth Fire Hall disciples also heard the rumbling noises coming from Yi Yun's body.

Suddenly, with a loud screech, the rolling clouds dispersed as a

shimmering gold figure flew out. It spread out its wings, as though it was blocking out the sky.

It was a three-legged Golden Crow!

And below the Golden Crow, a Nine Neonate flew up from below. Its nine heads appeared from time to time in the red mist in an extremely astounding manner!

The two Aspect Totems were also being tempered!

The appearance of the Aspect Totems was fleeting, and suddenly, all the red mist disappeared.

Yi Yun stood up with a satisfied look. Unlike before, his skin was much more supple. His entire being gave a feeling of harmony and perfection.

Man Dao was the first to react as he looked at Yi Yun with astonishment. "Junior Brother Yi Yun, you are already at the Yuan Opening perfection. You are almost entering the Heaven Ascension realm!"

Yun Qiao'er opened her tiny mouth as she was both shocked and envious. "Junior Brother Yi Yun, you just absorbed an Earth fire once and you have improved so much!"

At the Yuan Opening realm, every increment was not simple. Previously, they could sense Yi Yun's cultivation level and

although it was at the late-stages of the Yuan Opening realm, which was closing on perfection, it still required a long period of cultivation to make that final step.

But now, Yi Yun had only mined for fire once in Fire Spirit Palace, and he achieved perfection during the process of absorbing Earth fire.

And from the phenomenon that appeared before, Yi Yun's Yuan Opening perfection was atypical. It was a true perfection without a single flaw. This made people feel a sense of flawlessness and perfection in him.

"This is really... " Man Dao's expression was as though he could not embody his feelings in a sentence. He had come to the Fire Spirit Palace numerous times, and although his strength was gradually rising, he had never experienced what Yi Yun had done — rising to the next realm in one go just using Earth fire.

"Sigh, it's really exasperating to compare with others!" Man Dao said as he shook his head. He was a sincere and honest man by nature, but he had a lot of pride in him. However, in front of Yi Yun, he was in full admiration.

"Junior Brother Yi Yun... I'm already embarrassed calling you junior brother!" Yun Qiao'er looked at Yi Yun with sparkles in her eyes.

"It was nothing much. I was already not far from the Yuan Opening perfection realm previously. And apparently, I'm quite

adept at absorbing Earth fire, so I managed to break through in one fell swoop."

Yi Yun checked his body. The meridians that had been severed due to the spatial storms had not only fully recovered, but they had also turned as clear as crystal.

Yi Yun did not know how strong he had become and he was actually yearning to fight someone in real battle to test his true strength.